

**An Empirical Historicism**

# **Full Moon at Miran Shah-2012**

**Among the North Waziristan Militia in search of History**

**Major, retired, Aamir Cheema (Glasgow)**

## Preface

It was in April 2012 that I received a call from my old friend Colonel Khalid Shahbaz , his calls are not unexpected because for last over two decades I am receiving his calls almost daily, nothing official just discussing cricket, history, books and sports. For a change he informed me that one of his regiment officer is commanding Tochi Scouts in North Waziristan Agency and is looking for someone to write the history of his corps; am I willing?. Without giving any second thought I agreed. In 2010 Fall, I had been enrolled as a Ph.D Scholar in National Defence University at Islamabad in International Affairs, my research area being the Gilgit Rebellion of November 1947 under Major Brown of Gilgit Scouts. After a year of classwork and simultaneous studies on Gilgit Rebellion, I was rather intrigued as why the entire operation was code named as Operation Datta Khel by Major Brown and I came to know that Datta Khel is a small town in North Waziristan. Thus my interest in accepting the offer to write the history of Tochi Scouts was based upon this motive to see closely Datta Khel .

I had never landed in MiranShah or for that matter in North Waziristan Agency in my 25 years of military career, had flown over it couple of times. Read about it, fascinated and dreamed of travelling through it. In 1996 bought a Russian jeep and a Kalashnikov for the purpose, one landed me in trouble with my wife and another with my commanding officer. Thus when I was offered a chance to write the history of Tochi Scouts I was thrilled.

I contacted Colonel Wajahat on telephone (there was only army landline) to get an idea how to reach MiranShah and it became apparent that there is no safe way to reach. No bus, train or private

car. When I was a subaltern then a Hiace wagon had regular service between Sargodha and Miranshah but now time has elapsed and there was no way other than to reach Bannu where Tochi Scouts had a rear headquarters or Serai. From Bannu there is a regular traffic plying to and fro Miranshah and even beyond but for military there is a convoy which moves only once a week amidst curfew. I was bent upon adventure yet I never even for once contemplated going in a civilian transport; such is the terror. Amidst this procrastination I arrived in Rawalpindi on 5<sup>th</sup> May 2012 and next day I had an offer from another old friend Colonel Sardar Sajjad to drive with him to Peshawar; I agreed. We reached Peshawar at 2300 hours on 6<sup>th</sup> May with a plan to catch an army aviation helicopter flying to MiranShah. Unknown to both of us a far reaching event had taken place at Miranshah on the same day. I stayed for next six months at MiranShah and this is what this book is all about.

I travelled around with Scouts to Razmak, Boya, GhulamKhan, Bangidar, Massuzai to name few otherwise I went deep into archives, observed the scouts, felt the war going on , when almost daily there was a duel of fire between the Scouts and Taliban. The ever present noise of Drone flying overhead keeps reminding of the time when all around it seems to be beginning of Bronze Era. I wrote two accounts, one official and other unofficial ; I have now infused both of them because one is only one side of picture. It reflects the history of North Waziristan itself and more pertinent to present day observers of international affairs, history and political science and all these invariably revolves around military system. What about individual and personal feelings going on and around the insurgency and terrorism. How does group behaves, how they celebrate events and so on.

**7 May 2012. Peshawar-Miranshah.**  
**1530 hours local.**

Day was fine, only last night Colonel Sardar got the news that there is one helicopter which has to leave for Miranshah in the morning, Colonel Sardar was commanding and controlling the aviation assests and their movement thus all such orders pass through him. He thus allowed me to travel in this sortie and very kindly dropped me next to the helicopter. My mental worry was how Major General Ali Abbas the General Officer Commanding who is also travelling in the same helicopter will react to my presence. He is my coursemate and a good friend but that was when we were off same rank and who knows what happens now. This is a very unique kind of inner anxiety which none other can feel it. He came and shook hands with other than noticed me and gave a smile and said few good words and everything became normal and we boarded the helicopter. The intelligence and staff officers who were so far treating me with a great suspicion now also gave a friendly smile.

I came to know that after almost a month of peace today the rebels struck hard at the army convoy killing over dozen and wounding another forty apart from taking away few prisoners.

MI-17 took off from Peshawar, I had flown few hundred hours on the type thus sitting again inside after four years was a thrill, the familiar smell or aroma of aviation fuel, the typical engine noise and the vibration. You cannot have a conversation inside unless it is very important or interesting for the reason that noise level is high. I got myself seated on the plank, we were over twenty souls inside including few soldiers, the general, and his staff officers.and political agent who like General was also on leave and now going

back in emergency. The flight path took us first to Thal on Kurram, a running rotor drop of a passenger and

Flight was refreshing as I having access to the oval window remained glued to the outside scenery. We flew over River Kurram, the line of mountains running west, this is what is famously known as Durand Line, earth basically a mountain terrain with flat grounds dotted with green patches and small habitats. There was a rain previous night thus observation very clear and sky blue. We flew towards Bannu and then following the road we reached Miranshah. There was an excitement within me, something which all scholars do feel when you are aware that you are about to enter into a new history. A vast runway surrounded by low lying hillocks and memory of 2007 flashed in me. I was compiling history of Army Aviation and was well versed with the incidents, events taking place here. MI-17 was put into glide path and the familiar vibrations then a momentary hover and I wondered just for a moment whether it is the captain or the co-pilot making the approach and then MI-17 touched and a silent heave of sigh. No matter how many hours you have flown, yet every sortie till it has not switched off and you are out of helicopter remains a tense event.

As I stepped out weather being fine, sky clear, bright sunny day. However there was grimness in the air, Major General Ali quickly walked away and got into his jeep and drove away. I walked and first had a chat with pilots then sat for few minutes in the crew room before a runner announced that vehicle from Tochi Scouts is here. I got into it and at that time there was noise of firing going on as a para team is practising is carrying out fire at ranges. I inquired from the driver and he replied that it is live fire, fort is under attack. I just kept quiet and as I was not accustomed to this scenario thus my heart beat

felt bit unusual . We drove for few minutes and entered through a big red iron gate, sentry inquired and then opened it and a straight road for a kilometre and we reached the office area. I was taken to the adjutant office **Major Zaheer**. He was courteous to receive me, pressed a bell and ordered runner to get some tea and meanwhile attended the office phone and also passed instructions to the standing junior commissioned officer (JCO) . As I sipped tea I came to know that one soldier who was hit by the bullets has died. I also through the discussion going on came to know that all soldiers have reached back safely. While I was sitting Captain Hammad came and after a handshake narrated to Major Zaheer all that has taken place . There was attack at Amin and now he has led back the troops safely . To me it was not very clear but one thing was very much clear that this place is a dangerous place .

In the afternoon I had a walk in the mess and found a library although it is not that rich in terms of books yet it is in these far flung remote areas especially among Scouts libraries that one comes across some rich manuscripts and same was the case here. I also went to Museum and one has to appreciate the spirit because it is one of the best kept museum in Pakistan especially when one keeps in mind the environment, needless to say the female mannequins wearing local dress depicting the cultural heritage of the area are the only female sex symbols in the area and I have to admit that it does create sensations. The long walk on the main mall is mind refreshing the variety of roses planted here and all in their bloom is a treat for the eyes and soul and the traditional warning boards planted in the furrows warning the soldiers not to step on these rose buds have typical Scouts sense of humour embalmed in it.

Dinner in the mess all alone, the dining hall is square and big but not huge with Corps and national flags on front wall a piano in

working condition two glass cupboards with mess silver and half a dozen heads of Urial and deer mounted on the dinning hall walls along with equal number of antique and not so antique weapons mainly machine guns forms part of dinning hall décor. Mess has innumerable rooms or at least it seems like this all having varying décor but weapons and silver remains the central theme. It is after a long time that one comes across a mess so rich in military décor. A scrap book presented in 1937 by two Scouts officers have wealth of old pictures my eyes caught the picture of an Auster aircraft at Miranshah strip in 1946 there is a letter of the pilot as well who visited the place in 1988 for nostalgic reasons.

2130 hours. Outside the thunder of clouds and that of explosives are intermingling, all day there has been constant firing between the Taliban's and the Tochi Scouts. The fort is strong and almost a whole wing is entrusted with its inner cordon protection yet the Taliban's kept on firing from the mud built houses that forms the Miranshah bazar. A rocket exploded within the fort area while I was having a cup of tea with the quartermaster in his office but it seems routine affair, soon he told me after listening to the telephone call that sepoy Sahibzad Bhotani has died in this explosion and then in the same tone in which he ordered cigarettes for me he also called the subedar of Bhotani Qaum. I was just wondering whether I should walk back to the mess amidst this fire or just keep on sitting in this office. Thought of Lawrence and was convinced that he must have got the same reception in 1921.

Another whistling sound of a rocket and a counter fire from the scouts but life within the mess is as normal as one can imagine. When I came from the strip on a jeep in this fort I heard the noise of gun fire and thought that scouts are carrying out range practice but

my driver corrected me by stating it is actual fire. I have no hesitation in admitting that in my whole twenty years of military service I have not seen so much hostile fire which I encountered today and it is still going on. At night I had the nightmare of hallucinating a Waziri entering my suite armed with a dagger,

The seventeen years long war on terror is still alive and potent as highlighted by recent spate of attacks across Pakistan. The war started with a single aim of capturing Osama bin Laden and his associates , logically should have been concluded with the killing of Osama in 2011. On the contrary, from the onset , the campaign for manhunt transitioned into a clash with the tribes of north western frontier, and it kept on escalating and engulfed the entire country with Federally Administered Tribal Areas being reckoned as the hub and core of militancy. From 2005, the military took over the political and administrative control of the FATA , poured more manpower and firepower, the resultant victory achieved was in the non tribal areas like Swat. The major operation in FATA was launched in North Waziristan Agency {NWA} in 2014 as Operation Zarb –i-Azb which culminated in 2016. Thus officially peace was pronounced in the FATA however the present wave of terror committed away from FATA is directly and indirectly linked by public, media and academia with frontier tribes and also involved Afghanistan and India.

International affairs changes either with an accident or incident , as in 1914 , a shot at Sarajevo initiated the first great war, similarly in September 2001, events in America engulfed the entire world. On the other hand, the world political system is as such where after every four-five years the elections across major powers most notably in USA have direct bearing on world affairs. The present American President Donald Trump {Republican} has added new dimension to



the affairs happening in Pakistan and especially on the north western frontiers. His brazen and undiplomatic straight forward approach on wide ranging issues like immigration and terror has added new fear and anxiety among the small nations including Pakistan. The acts of terror taking place in Afghanistan are directly and indirectly linked with tribes living astride the Durand Line; also the similar acts taking place in India are also blamed upon Pakistan and linked to tribes.

The most common perception that has emerged domestically in last two decades, is to associate the terror with lack of economics and education in the tribal areas. An unlimited number of newspaper articles and television talk shows not to overlook the seminars have highlighted the same theme along with lack of constitutional reforms. On international front, the country and specifically military is blamed for associating the Taliban and facilitating the certain factions most notably Haqqani for acts of terror in Afghanistan.

Militia {Pakistan Frontier Corps} have been manning the tribal areas and the Durand Line since 1900 in varying nomenclature. From the inception of War on Terror, the militia became an integral and often a mistrusted ally, it carried out independent operations and opened up areas astride the Durand Line yet it was never considered as a trusted outfit. Incidentally Militia is not provided an constitutional umbrella under 1973 Constitution and neither in any subsequent amendments; even the term militia is used only once and that too in a suspicious manner.

**9/11** and its fallout the **War on Terror** was imposed on Pakistan, an unelected government in international morality does not have the right to bring such a drastic policy shift. However in light of realism, Pakistan and President Musharraf had little choice other than to

cooperate with the USA. Initially the perception about the war on terror was that it is going to be a short lived campaign, analogy was drawn with the Russian engagement with tribes, it was brushed side with the notion that , that war was won with the support of Pakistan and its army and not by tribes alone. mission was to capture Osama Bin Laden dead or alive just like Fakir of Ipi ..

The campaign took off with intelligence based operations in South Waziristan and North Waziristan political agencies in which special service group troops along with American advisors and trainers took part. It was the militia {Tochi Scouts} which played a decisive role in opening of the taboo tribal areas . Tochi Scouts were able to advance westward in the Tochi Valley and reached the edge of frontier without suffering any casualty. It was not due to weapon or firepower superiority rather the knowledge of the area, relations with tribes, flexibility in approach and making use of the inter tribal warfare and feuds which make this a reality. In Tochi Scouts as in other militias, the scout remains within the political agency and in Tochi Scouts for well over quarter a century. Thus he knows the area and the people, above all the Riway {traditions and customs} of the tribe. Militia and tribes share common traditions, thus they had developed a bond among themselves, both attending each other functions, playing matches ranging from football to shooting. At times the tribal maliks were invited by the commandant to put on ranks to soldiers and officers in Tochi Scouts. Political Agent is another key member in the affairs of the political agency, he is appointed by President of Pakistan and act as his representative, the militias in each political agency is under command to him in terms of finances and operations. Prior to 9/11, any disturbance in any political agency was always attributed to the sour relations between the commandant and the political agent; tribes were seldom blamed for disturbance.

In North Waziristan Agency, which later became the most dangerous place on earth, the violence took birth due to non adherence to the riwaj. In July 2005, army had taken over the operational control of the agency and simultaneously search operations were carried out. On 17<sup>th</sup> July 2005 during one such operation , no less than seventeen human lives were lost due to misunderstanding among the army soldiers and the residents.

## Historicism

*Polybius of Megalopolis* a second century BC, Greek historian, wrote *The Histories*<sup>i</sup>, In 3<sup>rd</sup> Century BC Rome was ruled by Emperors, it was in 509 BC that it was transformed into Republic, between 280-275 BC, she seen off the threat of Greek. First Punic War 264-241 BC was against Carthage, Second Punic War 218-201BC, in which Hannibal won at Cannae {216BC} but later lost at Zama {201BC}. Polybius set off to explain how Rome conquered and unified the world 220-167BC; Polybius believed that one of the vital qualification for writing history was practical political and military experience, he himself was son of a Greek general.<sup>ii</sup> There is no better correction of human behaviour than knowledge of past events, after all , is there anyone on earth who is so narrow minded or uninquisitiveness that could fail to want to know how and thanks to what kind of political system almost the entire known world was conquered and brought under a single empire of the Romans, in less than fifty –four years .<sup>iii</sup>

James Breasted,. *The Conquest of Civilisation*. Edited by Edith Ware. NewYork: Literary Guild of America,1938..Breasted wrote and noted that the history of the ancient world was largely made up of the struggle between the Southern Sematic line and the Northern Indo-European Line, in the end, Indo European gain victory<sup>iv</sup>

History is never constructed from narratives but from documents<sup>v</sup>, it is one view and other is that history can be constructed rather it is present irrespective of the documents. By history I mean research conducted scientifically.<sup>vi</sup>What is History? It can be a history as what has actually happened in the past, or history as our inevitably imperfect understanding of what happened in past or history as the continuing attempt by professional historians to extend our knowledge and improve our understanding of what happened in the past.<sup>vii</sup>**Carr Edward.** *What is History ?* New York: Alfred Knopf, 1964.writes, before you study History study the historian and before you study historian study his historical and social environments. {P.54}<sup>viii</sup>

Raflaub, Kurt. and Nathan Rosenstein. Ed. *War and society in the ancient and Medieval World, Asia, the Mediterranean, Europe and Mesopotamia* . London: Centre for The Hellenic Studies, trustees for Harvard University,1999.

Wrote ‘in 1500-500 B.C.E called the spring and Aukimen period ‘warfare was an integral and essential part of the religious systems, it could be claimed that the state and social order were entirely dependence for their existence on warfare and sacrifice.<sup>ix</sup> They further write ‘ that villages definitely began to be protected by deep ditches from about 4000B.C.E {p.49}. War has been known in japan since about 300BC; The Chronicles of japan, a court history was compiled in 720 AD. {p.49}. The most enduring relation were regional and factional unfortunately , our sources do not give us precise number for the armies of Philip or Alexander in relation to the total population {p.174}

Maier, Berhard. *The Celts a History from the Earliest times to the Present*, trans Kevin Windle, Edinburgh: Edinburgh University,2000.

The term Celts stands for a variety of central European peoples with whom the Greeks and Romans came into contact from 6<sup>th</sup> Century B.C, These are commonly known today as Germanic...all statements about their culture and religion are stereo typed, Celts are also for linguistic facts 'Celtic' was the designation for a group of related languages evolved from a common ancestor...thus they form western most branch of Indo –European family.<sup>x</sup>

Ross, Anne. *Everyday life of the Pagan Celts*. London: Putnam,1956. On Celts further writes , in pagan Celtic societies, war was regarded as the norm and highly desirable; and fighting and success in a single combat were right and proper for the young warrior and hero effect...by alarm, any fancied insult resulted in an instant seizing of weapons.<sup>xi</sup>

Hutton Webster *Ancient Civilisation*, Chicago, Heath,1931. Notes that India was better known than China...one of the most fertile territories on the globe {p.29} The Punjab was settled by Indo-European people sometimes after 2000B.C; they also spread over the valley of the Ganges and so brought all Northern India under their control<sup>xii</sup>

Hutton was a Ph.d professor in University of Nebraska in *Readings in Ancient History* Boston, Heath,1913. He notes that Alexander the Great was also surprised that Porus did not cowed in spirit but advanced to meet him as one brave man would meet another brave man. {p.147}<sup>xiii</sup>.

## **H.G.Wells**

in his *A short History of the World*, notes that 'historians are for the most part very scholarly men, now a days, they go in a fear

rather of small errors than of disconnectedness, they dread the certain ridicule of a wrong date mark than the disputable attribution of a wrong value {p.3}<sup>xiv</sup>.

**Kelley, Donald.** *Faces of History, Historical inquiry from Herodotus to Herder*. London: Yale university Press, 1998. History as a concept and term is a European perspective, a Greek creation {p.3} Like Epic poets the historians have been fascinated by the questions of origins, of first causes, which usually meant the founding of particular natural traditions....not from the start of dynasty but from the creation of the universe. {p.8} The first law of history according to Cicero is to tell the truth and mix in nothing that was false {p.9}, like philosophy history concerned itself with questions of cause and effects, {p.10} History is often regarded as form of memory, History has a pattern that could be explained {p.21}.

Herodotus was born in 484-428 BC , than Thucydides {460BC} , he wrote a history of Peloponnesian war, he served as general in the wars, later dismissed , he died in the hand of an assassin.. Polybius {200BC} he wrote two centuries after Herodotus and Thucydides, he wrote about the rise of Rome, he was also a general in the army and exiled to Rome. His history starts with 220BC, the various wars in Greece, Asia, Italy and Africa , he invented the term **pragmatic history**. Lelio Torelli was the first to associate history with the notion of method, another thinker Francis Baudoun of France noted that like law, history is a form of wisdom , Baudoun prized eye witness testimony , failing this he turned to monuments and records {p.194}. Jean Bodin was of the opinion that History is above all sciences, according to Bodin, history comprises of human natural and divine, he codified history , a bibliography of 282 items {p.198} , men who compares modern historians with the ancients

and ancients with each other and adds physical considerations also, will make the most certain judgement about history, {p.198}.

Kahler, Erich. *The Meaning of History*. New York: George Brazitter, 1964. Where there is no happening there is no history... thus the more flow of events become meaningful the more it becomes history {p.23} Historia is a Greek word meaning Physical Research {p.25}

**Lester Stephen** . *Probing the past a guide to the study of and teaching history*. {Boston: Allyn & Bacon. 1974}, History is also a story, history is past but we cannot reconstruct past in totality, we are more interested in those acts of pasts which have importance today as well,<sup>xv</sup>

**Jhonson Arnold**. *The Historian and historical Evidence*. New York: Charles Scribner 1926 .

The main debate is whether history to be considered as an science or as a art, German philosopher Leopold Von Ranke wrote *Wie Es Eigentlich ge we sen* ‘ as it actually happened’ . {Ibid, p.9} the scientific method is in which the historians proceed through a steps, First he a perceives a problem , something unknown about the past, an unsatisfactory explanation. In the second step , historian reads and forms about an idea or hypothesis and in third step, historian collects facts and data to verify his hypothesis and finally he draws his conclusion {p.22}. thus history does not exist apart from facts, thus Historical fact is a fact about the past , it may be true or false, thus take the example of Alexander the Great being wounded in 326 B.C, now it cannot be proved, because it cannot be repeated, therefore statement of one person becomes all important , in one sense there are no facts in history ‘fact’ is inferred from certain

tangible tracts {p.24}.Hypothesis and Theory. Historical inquiry does not strictly bind itself to the scientific model of investigation, historian is in most instances searching for the unique and particular case, not for the general and universally applicable principle or law. {p.31}.His goal is less to verify or refute a hypothesis and more to reconstruct the past as accurately as possible {p.32}. Historical facts are not manna, facts are worthless unless someone does something with them and the job of historic is to make them tell the truth as fully as possible , historian based his work upon facts but he also recognizes the problems attached to them . theory is used interchangeably with hypothesis, however a theory is much broader and more encompassing than a hypothesis. In science , theory is supported by general laws, however in history, there are no general laws. An example of historical hypothesis is that of Waith Prescott Webb hypothesis ‘ that conflict with the plain Indians resulted from cross movement, that is , the Indians moved northward-southward, while American settlers moved westward. Arnold Toynbee’s theory of civilisation ‘ which broadly consist of numerous hypothesis and generalisation<sup>xvi</sup> {p.33}

Historical frame of Reference , historian select and arranges facts in some kind of pattern, he interprets them and he draws generalisation from them, all these actions require him to order knowledge and this ordering of knowledge , we shall call his ‘frame of reference’. Basic element of historians frame of reference is is his underlying philosophy, assumptions and beliefs which he holds about his nature of man and the universe, his metaphysical , epistemological and axiological positions.

Gottschalk Louis *Understanding History* NewYork: Alfred Knopf,1969. Writes Historian cannot avoid and therefore it is better that he should be openly committed to some philosophy and some code of ethics<sup>xvii</sup>.



Historian is a living thing, he is a political animal, he believes either in democracy or in dictatorship. *Frontier thesis*<sup>xviii</sup> Fredrick turner Jackson 's Frontier Thesis, in it Turner argued that peculiar frontier condition in USA contributes significantly to the formation of the national character and the spirits of American , he had studied biology, physics and chemistry and as such he employed and modified the Germ theory to support his thesis {p.44}. The facts without interpretation do not constitute history {p.62}. A historical generalisation is a statement or a term which has been informed inductively from a number of particular cases instances or events, historical generalisation suggests some regularity or pattern of events, ideas and human actions which is of historical significance. *Frontier thesis*<sup>xix</sup> {p.66}

Synthetic generalisation , it requires the historian to ferret out some uniformities from a mass of a material on a broad topic such as war or revolution, predictive generalisation is almost like a law.

Historiography at its highest level of originality may attempt an enquiry which former generators called philosophy of history in an application at a lower level it is deep structured inquiry until around 1700 , the idea of a period of history designating a stretch of time with an internal unity and more importantly the notion of 'source' understood as composing one of the elements out of which a historical text might flow, just as river originates in its source, William Robertson seems to have been the first to use the word in that sense in 1777, he was principal of Edinburgh University<sup>xx</sup> . Karl Marx has written in the opening sentence of his Communist Manifesto 'The history of all hitherto existing society is the history of class struggle' where as Emile Durkheim {1858-1917} intermingle the history and sociology 'How' becomes important .Wilhelm Dillthey produced a

critique of scientific methods in humanities, he was consumed that history moves in a pattern, according to laws<sup>xxi</sup>.

On what should we base our narrative if not on living knowledge... this is equally true of modern history, where the nature of the subject makes it inevitable that much will remain hidden for a long time and where an author will have no means other than his suspicion with which to discover {or perhaps conceal} events which he will nonetheless present as recognised truth, facts which later come to light reveal the attempted reconstruction as erroneous, the chief requirement for an historical work remains always that it be true; that events actually happened as they are described, the scholarly service performed by the work is by far the most important.<sup>xxii</sup>

Gardiner, Patrick. Ed. *Theories of History*. Illinois: Free Press, 1959. The term philosophy of History has been applied somewhat indiscriminately to all speculative schemes {p.7}. Giambattista Vico {1668-1774} born in Naples, wrote *New science* {1725}, in which he propounded the 'Cyclic theory of History' in which human nations pass through inevitably certain distinguishable stages of development, he believed that unlike world of natural object about which the God alone knows, the world of nations or human history has in fact been created by men and is therefore something which men can hope to know, {p.10}

**Karen Katajin** highlights the **History and Repetition**<sup>xxiii</sup>, from ancient times it has been said that history repeats itself, in truth people study history precisely because it is not a one-time phenomenon but rather maintains the possibility of recurrence. Does the repetition of history actually exist? Such questions have never been properly considered for even if they intuitively acknowledge the repetition of

history scholars aspiring to be scientific refrain from taking on the issue for the fear of rendering their work unscientific. I believe in the existence of historical repetition, as well as in the possibility of engaging such a repetition scientifically, of course what is repeated is not the event itself but rather the structure. ‘Kondratieff Wave’, a sixty year business cycle, a theory of long wave authored by N.D. Kondratieff {1892-1938}. Repetition in history does not signify the recurrence of the same event, for repetition is possible only in terms of form {structure} and not event {content}.

### **Karl Marx**

stated while writing about the events of French coup of 1851, ‘Hegel remarks somewhere that all facts and personages of great importance in world history occur as it were twice. He forgot to add; the first time as tragedy second as farce’, Marx referred to the repetition of history of 1789 and later that of 1848, in the both cases, a revolution that overthrew the monarchy and aimed to establish a republic, resulted ultimately in imperial rule . *Men make their own history, but they do not make it as they please; they do not make it under self-selected circumstances, but under circumstances existing already, given and transmitted from the past. The tradition of all the generations of the dead weighs like a nightmare on the brain of the living. And just when they seem involved in revolutionizing themselves and things, in creating something that has never before existed, it is precisely in such periods of revolutionary crisis that they anxiously conjure up the spirits.*<sup>xxiv</sup>

**Karl Jaspers**<sup>xxv</sup> states that Man’s history has largely disappeared from memory, only through investigation and research does it become accessible, foremost in 19<sup>th</sup> Century world history was seen

as the history of West, where as in 20<sup>th</sup> century gives equal rights to all men where there are men there is history, In Western world, the philosophy of history was founded in the Christian faith, ranging from St Augustine to Hegel, All history goes towards and comes from Christ as quoted by Hegel.

**William Edward Harpole Lecky**, wrote *Thoughts in history* there are many different kind of history, which should be written in many different ways, a diplomatic, a military or a parliamentary history...the supreme virtue of the historian is truthfulness.<sup>xxvi</sup>.

**Alan Munslow** writes<sup>xxvii</sup>, histories live the past and history exists in a synonymous relationship, based on fine related assumptions, historians statements are defensible empirically and to discover the meaning of the facts then to infer the causal relationship, this takes the form of hypothesis, to advance historical explanations, a truthful narrative and define history.

**Lynn Hunt**, in, *Writing History in the Global Era* states that in 1852/53, requirement for admission to the Harvard University required knowledge of algebra, geometry, Cesare's commentaries, select orations from Cicero.<sup>xxviii</sup> The Marxist view all history is driven by changes in the economic mode of production that shape conflicts between classes,<sup>xxix</sup>. Few paradigms in historical research are Marxist, Modernization which includes Durkheim and Weber, the Annales School and finally the Identity Politics especially inn USA. The Annales School emerged in France in 1930-40, focussing on pre industrial societies, the main founder was Marck Bloch, Lucier Febvre and Ferdinand Braudel. They aimed at directing history away from merely battles, treaties towards the social life, society, social groups and on collective narrative {p-16}. Annales School of

historians believe that environment climatic and demography shapes human activity in a fundamental way. Since these factors change slowly over long periods of time neither revolution nor any other kind of short term political change concern them {p-17}.

Culturalist theorist insists that culture has its own meanings own autonomous logic, language and cultural expressions that shape the social world. The term used to describe them are 'cultural studies' 'past structuralism' 'past modernism' 'past colonialism' 'linguistic turn' 'cultural turn'..they all are like cousins and inter related terms.. area studies did not demand a specific theoretical commitment and could foster an interest in the particularities of different cultures {p-28}. First Coffee House opened in at Oxford in 1650 by a Jew and by 1700 there were over 500 coffee houses in London alone. The term 'class' first appeared in 1790 in England, High Class, Middle Class and middling class, the term working class first appeared in 1815 {p-87}. Sociology first appeared in English in 1842, it was used by Auguste Comte a Frenchman in 1830, given the variety of questions that call for a historical approach, no one paradigm is going to rule the roost {p-121}. The 1776 Declaration of Independence 'When in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal status to which the Laws of nature and Nature's God entitled them, a decent respect to the opinion of mankind.

**Lord Acton**<sup>xxx</sup>, *Essays in the Liberal Interpretation of History*, writes a review on the thesis of Mr Buckle's *History of Civilisation in England* which was first posted in *Rambler* in 1858 and reprinted in London. McMillan 1907. History is a generalised assessment of the personal actions of men united in bodies for any public

purpose and science is the combination of a great mass of similar facts into the unity of a generalisation , a principle , or a certainty by the recurrence of like events under given conditions , now can there be a science of history. Lord Acton is famous for his saying *Power tends to corrupt, and absolute power corrupts absolutely. Great men are almost always bad men.*”The man argument Lord Acton has forwarded is, that can we predict the actions of such men which Buckle has argued, that it can be. Acton went on to states that ,;there is no regularity in the throws of the dice taken ten and ten together, but in a ten thousand throws, we can predict with great confidence how many times sixes will be drawn, there is no possible certainty that any given individual will commit murder , but take a population of one hundred thousand and in agiven time someone or the other is sure to be found committing murder, when we say Law , we always think of some force or command...but Mr buckle by law , only means ‘numerical average’.{P-13}.

**C.V.Wedgewood.** in *The sense of past, thirteen studies in the theory and practice of history*,<sup>xxxi</sup>highlights the older historians concentrated more on nomenclature than on analysis , on ‘How’ the rather than ‘Why’ of history. The desire for withdrawal is often a powerful motive in driving the student towards the study of history. Marc Bloch in his *The Historian craft* wrote a resistance and published posthumously, That historian can only , in the last analysis , reconstruct the past by borrowing from and applying his own daily experience of life {P-26}. The romantic approach to history, is in which a historian bred in the national loyalty as almost a natural law, find it extremely difficult to grasp the meaning of the different loyalties, no less strong, which have constructed and disciplined the political lenses of men in the past{p-35}.

## Marc Bloch

*The Historian Craft*<sup>xxxii</sup> states western man has always been historically minded, Christianity is the religion of the historians {p-4}, other religious systems have been able to form their beliefs and their rites on mythology nearly outside human time. The word History is very old, so old that men have sometimes grown weary of it {P-20}. History is the science of the past {p-22}, Historian is like a police magistrate who strives to reconstruct a crime he has not seen {p-48} An experience almost as old as the mankind has taught us that more than one manuscript has justified its date or origin, that all the accounts are not true {P-79}. On historical analysis, Bloch writes and quotes Ranke 'historian' has no other aim than to describe things as they happened'. Herodotus said 'to narrate what was'. The scholar records, better stills he invites the experience which may perhaps upset his most cherished theories {p138}. For the first tool needed by an analyst is an appropriate language, a language capable of describing the precise outlines of the facts {p157}. Historian speaks only with words, hence with those of his country. Regarding Historical causation, Bloch writes 'in vain positivism claimed to eliminate the idea of cause from science...every physicist, every biologist thinks in terms of 'why' and 'because' ...here Bloch gives the example of a man falling from precipice {p-190}. For historical reasoning, the most specific, the one which somehow represents the differentially element in the compound of generative inference is accorded the name of cause {p-192}. Laws of trajectory are as valid as for defeat as for victory; they explain both, they are useless as a proper explanation for either, for a doctor, the cause of an epidemic is the multiplication of a microbe and its conditions the dirt...for sociologist, it would be poverty, {p-193}.

**Herbert Fisher** *Studies in history and politics*<sup>xxxiii</sup> on the importance of history, irrespective of whom has written, in his support of logic he highlights the history written by Ammanius Marcellinius the Roman Soldier, he approached history from a soldier's angle...he is indeed our principal authority on art of war in 4<sup>th</sup> century AD.' {p-13}.

**Hans Kohn** *Reflections on Modern History, The historian and human responsibility*,<sup>xxxiv</sup> History has a two fold meaning, first of all it is a sequence of events...our word story is connected with the word History original meaning of the Greek word Historia, not so much the narrative of the events but their interpretations {preface}. The historian is a man who tries to find out what has happened in the course of time and to correlate the events within the limits of available material on the one hand, his intelligence, imaginations, ethical understanding, on the other, into a meaningful sequence. Perhaps the ancient Hebrews were the first people strongly conscious of their history, the past history of their tribe is to them always vividly present and continuous {P-4}. History is a process influenced by forces beyond man's grasp.

Hegel George Wilhelm Friedrich.

*The Philosophy of History* translated Sibree, J.. New York, The Colonial Press, 1899. First Edition 1841.

Hegel defines three kind of histories the Original History, Reflective History and Philosophical History<sup>xxxv</sup>. In the first kind he mentions about Herodotus, Xenophon and Thucydides, they simply transferred what was passing in world around them {Ibid}. In reflective history, whose mode of representation is not really confined by the limits of the time to which it relates {p.4} this si



what is known as Universal history. every writer of history proposes to himself an original method {ibid}.in this category he puts Livy, Diodorus, Siculus, Johannes Von Muller. In this category is Pragmatical History , when we have to deal with the past and occupy ourselves with a remote world. {ibid, p.5}another form of reflective history is Critical history , it is history of history a criticism of historical narrative and an investigation of their truth and credibility.

On Philosophy of History, Hegel dwells ‘thoughtful consideration of it {history’ {p.8} thought is indeed essential to humanity, it is this what distinguish us from brutes... philosophy brings with it to the contemplation of history, is the simple conception of Reason....that the history of the world presents us with a rational process., this conviction and intuition is a hypothesis in the domain of history as such, nature is an embodiment of reason, that it is unchangeably subordinate to universal laws...but to depict history is to depict the passion of mankind, the genius, the active powers, that play their part on the great stage.[ibid,p.13]....among the Ashantees the king inherits all the property left by his subjects at their death. ... among the negroes moral sentiments are quite weak or more strictly speaking non existent.[p.96]. tradition alleges that in former times a state composed of women made itself famous by its conquests, it was a state whose head was a woman. She is said to have pounded her own son in a mortar , to have besmeared herself with the blood .....she is said to have driven away or put to death all the males and commanded the death of all male children....an English traveller states that when war is determined on in Ashantee [p.100]

On India Hegel is off the mark with vague statements like India like China is a phenomenon antique as well as modern[p.139]... everything therefore –sun, moon, stars, the Ganges, the Indus beasts,

flowers-everything is a god to it...the parrot , the cow the ape are likewise incarnations of god.[p.141].

**Dilthey Wilhelm**, *Pattern and Meaning in History thoughts on history and society*, ed, H.P.Rickman. New York: Harper Torch,1961.... **Dilthey 1833-1911 german.**

History is one of the forms of disciplined research by means of which the human mind satisfies its curiosity and orientates it self in world. [p.12] dilthey's most original contribution to history , is his conception of understanding and interpretation , through which meaning is recaptured. [p.33]

### **Immanuel Kant {1724-1804}**

'*On History*<sup>xxxvi</sup>' edited by Lewis White Beck, translated by Lewis White Beck and Robert Anchor and Emil L,Fackenheim {NewYork: Bobbs Merril,1963}.

Kant wrote critique of pure reason and also the critique of practical reason, his first writing was in 1784, his two essays 'what is enlightenment' and 'idea of a universal history from a cosmopolitan point of view'. What is enlightenment is the name of the essay and he went on to describe 'enlightenment is man's reliance from his self-incurred tutelage, which is man's inability to make use of his understanding without direction from another. Self incurred is this tutelage when its causes lies not in lack of reason but in lack of resolution and courage to use it without direction from another. Sapere Aude{dare to know} , ***have courage to use your own reason***, this is the motto of enlightenment. This term was much used by President Musharraf in Pakistan during his tenure to highlight the intellectual state in country which was under the control of the religious leaders and scholars.

*‘In Idea for a Universal History from a cosmopolitan point of view’* Kant highlights that what concepts one may hold from a metaphysical point of view, concerning the freedom of will, certainly its appearances which are human actions, like every other natural event are determined by universal laws , However obscure their causes , history , which is concerned with narrating these appearances permits us to hope that if we attend to the play of freedom of the human will in the large, we may be able to discover a regular movement in it {p-11}. Since the free will of man has obvious influence upon marriages, birth, deaths , they seem to be subject to no rule by which the number of them could be reckoned in advance, yet the annual table of them in major countries prove that they occur according to laws as stable as those of the unstable weather, which in the large we cannot determine but which in the large maintains the growth of the plants... in keeping with this purpose it might be possible to have a history with a definite natural plan for creatures who have no plan of their own. {p-12}.

Kant’s eight thesis are , first one state states ‘ all natural capacities of a creature are destined to evolve completely to their natural end.. If we give up this fundamental principle we no longer have a lawful but an aimless course of nature and blind chance takes the place of the guiding thread of reason. Second thesis ‘Inman, as the only rational creature on earth. Those natural capacities are directed to the use of his reason, are to be fully developed only in the race and not in the individual’.

The third thesis ‘nature has willed that man should by himself produces everything that goes beyond the mechanical ordering of his animal existence and that he should partake of no other happiness or perfection than that which he himself independently of instincts has created by his reason’.

The fifth thesis highlights that The greatest problem for the human race , to the solution of which nature derives man, is the achievement of a universal civic society which administers law among men'. The highest purpose of nature which is the development of all capacities which can be achieved by mankind is attainable only in society and more specifically in the society with the greatest freedom, such a society is the one,, in which there is mutual opposition among members, together with the most exact definition of freedom and fixing of its limits so that it may be consistent with the freedom of others {p-16}. These thought sand the ideas are almost in practice in the tribal areas of Pakistan, where the tribal society has given freedom to each member yet there is a limit to which the society has put a limitation so that the others can live in harmony with each other.

In the sixth thesis Kant goes on in a logical manner to point that 'this problem is the most difficult and the last to be solved by mankind' Man is an animal which if it lives among others of its kind requires a master, for he certainly abuses his freedom with respect to the other men, he wishes to have a law which should restrict the freedom of others but where possible to exempt himself, the highest master should be just in himself yet a man.

Seventh thesis , 'The problem of establishing a perfect civic constitution is dependent upon the problem of a lawful external relations among states and cannot be solved without a solution to the latter problem' all wars are accordingly so many attempts to establish new relations among states and through the destruction or at least dismemberment of all of them to create new political bodies, purposeless savagery held back the development of the capacities of our race....same is done by the barbaric freedom of established states {pp.19-20}

Eight thesis deals with , ‘ The history of mankind, can be seen in the large as the realisation of nature’s secrets plan to bring forth a perfectly constituted state as the only condition in which the capacities of mankind can be fully developed and also bring forth that external relations among states which is perfectly adequate to this end.

*Conjectural Beginning of Human History* is another essay of Kant. Nomadic people recognising God alone as their lord a, city dwellers and farmers on the other hand have a human master in the form of government {p-65}

*Perpetual Peace* is another of Kant’s essay which highlights the kind of relationship which should exists among states for a long lasting peace, it is idealistic in nature. No treaty of peace shall be held valid in which there is tacitly reserved matter for a future war, otherwise a treaty would only be a truce, suspension of hostilities but not peace. No independent states large or small shall come under the dominion of another state by inheritance , exchange, purchase or donation , a state is not a ground , a piece of property , it is a society of men whom no one else has any right to command or disperse except the state itself. Standing armies shall in time be totally abolished for they incessantly menace other states by their readiness to appear at all times prepared for war, they incite them to compete each other in the number of armed men and there is no limit to this, {p87}, however periodic and voluntarily military exercises of citizens who thee by secure themselves and their country against foreign aggression are entirely different. To this he added three definitive articles

Constitution of every country state should be republican, this constitution is drawn by or established by firstly by principles of the freedom of the members of a society , secondly by principles of

dependence of all upon a single common legislature and thirdly by the law of their equality P-95}. Second definitive articles ‘The law of nations shall be founded on a federation of free states’ states do not plead their case before a tribunal, War alone is their way of bringing suit. {p-98}. The third article states that ‘Law of world citizenship shall be limited to conditions of universal hospitality’ hospitality means the right of a stranger not to be treated as an enemy when he arrives in the land of another, one may refuse to receive him when this can be done, without causing his destruction: but so long as he peacefully occupies his place, one may not treat him with hostility. {p102}.

### **Karl Raimund Popper**

*The Poverty of Historicism*<sup>xxxvii</sup> {London:Routledge & Kegan, 1957}. The fundamental debate which Popper stated, is that there can be no laws prediction of human of the course of human history by scientific or any other rational method. The paper was first read in January 1936 and Popper dedicated his book ‘to the countless men and women of all creed or nation or races who felt victims to the fascist and communist belief in inexorable laws of historical destiny’. Popper argues in his book in a logical manner first putting the logic and doctrine and arguments of those historians who believe that history can also have laws like the physics and later in the book Popper gives the other side arguments, that there can be no laws applicable in history as in physics.

The main theme is that whether the laws of physics are applicable in theoretical social sciences, Whereas Galileo and Newton made Physics a success, Pasteur work in Biology, nothing concrete comes out in Social science les economics, there are two main school of

thoughts in terms of methods in social science ‘pro-Naturalistic’ or ‘Positivist’ who favours the application of physical laws and ‘Anti Naturalistic’ or ‘negatives’ as the opposing social school. The attitude any researcher adopts largely depends upon his views about methods of Physics {Popper in introduction}.

Popper coins the term Historicism, as approach to the social science which assumes that Historical Prediction is their principal aim and this can be attained by discovering the rhythm, and pattern, laws, or trends that underline the evolution of society. Anti-Naturalistic Doctrine of Historicism, they believe or claim that some of the characteristics of Physics methods cannot be applied to the social sciences, Physical laws or the laws of nature are valid anywhere and always, on the other hand sociological laws or laws of social life, differ in different places of and periods {p-5}.

Physics depends upon generalisation, on the general uniformity of nature, upon the observation or assumption: that in similar conditions or circumstances similar things will happen, this principle is taken valid throughout space and time in the case of physics. Another key factor of physics is the experiment which implies artificial control, an artificial isolation and thereby ensures the reproduction of similar conditions, where circumstances are similar, similar things will happen {p-8}.

History may repeats itself but never on the same level, especially if the evets concerned are of historical importance and if they exert a lasting influence on society {p.10}. It is conceivable that by analysing social life we may be able to discover and to understand intuitively how and why any particular event came about: that we may clearly understand its causes and effects...yet we may nevertheless find that

we are unable to formulate any general laws, which would serve as descriptive in general terms , of such causal links {ibid}.

In exactitude of prediction, Popper highlights that for example, if it is predicted that shares will rise for three days and fall on fourth, than people will sell it on third day and thee by decreasing the prices of the shares on the third day thus falsifying the prediction. {p.13}

the analysis and explanations of various differences between the various sociological doctrines and schools. **Holism**, Social science deals with living like biology , thus it should be treated on biological science, the living are different from atomistic; thus Holistic manner {p.17}. a group founded by A & B will be different in characteristics from a group consisting of same number but formed by C and B, a group has a history of its own and that its structure depends to a great extent on its history and that its structure depends to a great extent on its history , it is even conceivable that a group may keep much of its original character even all if all of its original members are replaced by other<sup>xxxviii</sup> {p.17}. All social groups have their own traditions , their own institutions their own rites . Historicism claims that we must study the history of the groups, its traditions and institutions, if, we wish to understand and perhaps to foresee, its future development {p.18}. Biological or organic theory, of social structure, the theory which interprets social groups by analogy with living organisms, indeed Holism is said to be characteristics of biological phenomenon is general and holistic approach is regarded as indispensable in considering how the history of various organisms influences their behaviours {p.19}.

**Intuitive Understanding.** We must try to understand intuitively the history of the various social groups, it is the doctrine. Popper highlights that it is important for the social scientist to understand the larger aspect of the action, such as raising of new army in a



certain country, it is necessary to analyse the intentions , interest and so forth {p.21} .***Inference by analogy*** , It is a variant of intuitive understanding , from one historical period to the other, although no event can really repeat itself, yet, analogous tendencies may become dominant. Quantitative method in Physics like the reduction of aperture , increase the angle of diffraction, it becomes one cause and effect but its not possible in social science<sup>xxxix</sup> {pp.25-26}.

***Essentialism versus Nominalism.*** Problem of universals, one of the oldest and most fundamental problem of philosophy , every science use the terms which are called Universal terms ‘energy’ ‘velocity’ ‘carbon’ ‘whiteness’ ‘evolution’ ‘justice’ and so on, thus we can have proper names like World War 1, Alexander The Great Hailey’s Comet. On the other hand Nominalist held the view that universals differ from proper names , only in being to the members of a set or a class of a single thing rather than to just one single thing. The universal term ‘white’ for instance , seemed to this party to be nothing but a label attached to a set of many different things, ‘snow’ ‘swan’ table cloth etc , this is the doctrine of minimalist.

*Essentialism* are anti nominalists, ‘we call each single white thing ‘white’ on account of a certain intrinsic property that it shares with other white things, namely whiteness , essentialism also relates to realism.

*Realism* derives from the assertion that universal objects , for instance the whiteness really exist, over and above single things and sets or groups of single things, these universal objects were called as Forms or Ideas, they are also known as Essences . *Methodological essentialist*, are inclined to formulate questions in such terms ‘ what is matter?, they penetrate to the essence of things where as

Methodological Nominalists , favour words as merely useful instruments of description, they freely introduce new terms where ever necessary or by redefining the old terms where ever convenient.. {pp.28-29}.

Essence or the real character of a social group can reveal itself and be known , only through its history {p-33}.

The *Pro-Naturalistic Doctrine of Historicism*. Popper in the second half of his book , now puts forward the ideas of Pro naturalisti Doctrine ‘sociology is like Physics a branch of knowledge which aims at the same time to be theoretical and empirical, by theoretical , we mean sociology has to explain and to predict events with the help of theories or of universal laws {which it tries to discover} by empirical , it means that , it is backed by experience , that the events it explains and predicts are observable facts and that observation is the basis for the acceptance or rejection of any propounded theory {p.35}. prediction with the help of laws and the testing of the laws by observation must be common to Physics and Sociology , this is {p.36} the Pro naturalistic doctrine. If it is possible for astronomy to predict eclipses, why should it not be possible for sociology to predict revolution, is the standard question which Popper raised. *Observational Basis*, history in this natural sense is the basis of sociology as all sociology is based upon observation and observation of the past are in the form of political chronicle, in brief *sociology is theoretical History* {p-39}. Popper takes the analogy between the astronomy and social science as the base of his arguments.

Historical Laws. Popper argues , sociology is theoretical history, its scientific forecast must be based on laws and since they are historical forecasts , forecasts of social change, they must be based upon historical laws, they have to be discovered {p.41}.Popper

also highlight Historical Prophecy versus Social Engineering, the prophecy of Typhon coming and the construction of shelter as safety , is the utility of historical forecasts.

Historicism, the kind of history to which historicist wish to identify sociology, looks not only backwards to the past but also forwards to the future. {p.45}. it will be admitted by the defender of the rights of Pure or Fundamental researcher deserves every support in their fight against the narrow view, that scientific research is justified only if it proves to be a sound investment {p.55}. before we can collect data, our interest in data of a certain kind must be aroused, the problem always comes first {p.121}<sup>xl</sup>. initial conditions, historical interpretation, a selective point of view or focus of historical interest, if it cannot be formulated as a liable hypothesis {p.151}.

### **Richard Collingwood**

*The idea of History* {Oxford:1956}. Writes about history ‘ this book is an essay in the philosophy of history, the name philosophy of history was invented in the eighteenth century by Voltaire, a type of historical thinking in which the historian made up his mind for himself instead of repeating whatever stories he found in old books { in introduction} same phrase was used by Hegel but they meant a Universal History , a third use of the phrase is found in several 19<sup>th</sup> Century positivists for whom , it was the discovery of the general laws governing the course of history, discovering ‘ uniform laws’ Collingwood’s own idea of philosophy of history is a ‘philosophical inquiry into the nature of history’ {pp,1-7} history is a kind of research or inquiry , science is finding things out and in that sense history is a science, object of history is to ‘action of human

beings that have been done in the past' {pp.9-11}. How does history proceeds? History proceeds by evidence and its interpretations, only clue to what man can do is what man has done {p-10}. Theocratic history, a unscientific history rather a statement of what has been said {p.14}. Collingwood cites Herodotus as the creator of scientific history, although Herodotus in his account of India had never been to India and as such all his accounts are based upon what he listened from others and that does not make him or his histories as scientific. Thucydides is the father of Psychological History which is not narrative facts for the sake of facts , its chief purpose is to affirm laws, psychological laws which is not an event , not yet a complex of events , it is an unchanging rule which governs the relations between events, what chiefly interests Thucydides is the laws according to which they happen. {p.30}. World history or Oecumenical history is attributed to Polybius, he has a definite theme, he has a story to tell , a story of notable and memorable things {p.34}. Herder was the first thinker to recognise a systematic way that there are differences between different kind of men {p.91} Marx asserted that historical events have natural cause {p.125}. Positivism may be defined as the philosophy acting in the service of natural science, they ascertain facts and secondly framing laws {pp.126-127} The laws are framed through generalisation from facts by induction {p.127} this is known as the Positivist Historiography. Comte proposed that there should be a new science called sociology, which was to begin by discovering the facts about human life and then go on to discover the causal connexions between these facts {p.128} the 19<sup>th</sup> century historians accepted the first aspect but rejected the second the discovery of general laws {p.130}. In England F.H. Bradley wrote in 1874 'The presupposition of Critical History@ what the critical historian has to do is to decide whether the persons whose testimony he is using were on this or that occasions judging correctly or erroneously {p.137}<sup>xli</sup>

## **Waziristan and North Waziristan**

World history originates around the banks of rivers especially the Nile, Mesopotamia, Yellow and Indus River. Unlike the other three civilization there is no written record of Indus Valley but through the archaeological evidence it is regarded as the cradle of civilization. The oral history Rig Veda which dates back to almost 1100 years B.C. highlights the fact that the mountainous tribes Aryans migrated from Central Asia and came down upon the plains of Indus Valley. These Aryans were fun loving cruel nomads who had their own code of conduct in which it was expected to honour the guests and not to let anyone go empty handed if he has knocked on your door, Aryans gamble and drink Somoa which was an intoxicating substance, Aryan was generally scared of his mother in law especially after loosing in gambling. These Aryans entrenched themselves in the upper part of Indus Valley at Harappa and later they destroyed the Dravidians living in the lower part of Indus Valley notably Moenjo daro. Who were these Aryans the history is not very clear or precise the reason being lack of any physical evidence as present in other riparian civilisations.

Herodotus the ‘Father of History’ wrote an account of Indus Valley in 400 B.C. The Indus Valley was divided into two separate layers the upper portion was known as the Tashkila {present day Taxila} it was the last of the twenty satrapies {provinces} of the Persian empire under Darius and the most wealthy because it was paying the highest amount of tax, it was paying 360 talents of gold where as the Bactra was paying 360 talents of silver and the

gold was worth 15 times more than silver. The whole of the Indus valley region was called Hindu by the Persians, Sindhu in Sanskrit language is the name for river and because of phonetics the Persians started calling it Hindu and all the inhabitants were known as Hindus. Alexander the Great from 330 B.C. entered into the region which is presently known as Central Asia and entered into present day Pakistan in 326 B.C. The natives which he encountered in his expedition were fierce and militant in nature. Alexander entered from the Khyber Pass in a two pronged advance and later crossed Indus close to present day Attock, had his major and decisive battle against Porus on the banks of Hydaspes {Jhelum River} moved forward and finally on the eastern banks of Ravi his troops mutinied and he rolled back his forces opting to follow the River Indus downstream. He sailed with portion of his forces and majority marched on the banks for protection. He met constant resistance and attack during this sojourn from tribes inhabiting the banks of Indus. Alexander was able to survive and considered himself fortunate enough to reach back Persia through the present day Balochistan. This Greek invasion provided the first ever written account of the natives as Alexander had no less than five court historians to record his adventure unfortunately none of that has survived today.

India by Alexander time had progressed into two distinct riparian civilisation the Ganges/Jumna & Indus with its Punjab tributaries. Alexander had left his Greek lieutenants in the conquered territories which soon after Alexander's death erupted into a civil war with River Indus acting by and large as the boundary. The Mauryan Dynasty under Chandragupta Maurya emerged at the Magadha on the banks of Ganges and later his grandson Asoka expanded the empire but he soon became an ardent Buddhist renouncing all kind of violence. This non violent approach was adopted as the state

policy and became an integral part of Ganges culture where as the tribes of Indus Valley especially living in the adjoining mountains retained their Aryan identity.

The very first Islamic army had knocked on the doors of the Central Asia when they were in the hunt of the Firuz the emperor of Persia , Muslims had settled at Merv by 646. Qutaibah ibn Muslim was the governor of Khurasan the north eastern part of Persia who between 710-715 conquered the Central Asia especially the Bactria and Ferghana valley the heart land of the Turks , these Turks were nomadic tribes originating from the Mongolian steppes and one the tribe Ye Hu was able to establish himself in the Jaxarates {Amu Drya} area, Turk was the name given by Arabs to all nomadic tribes of Central Asia thus it does not represent any particular ethnic tribe<sup>1</sup>. In 751 a decisive battle between the Muslims and the Turks who also had the support of the Chinese army took place at .... In which not only the Turks were defeated but it also put an end to the Chinese rule in the area for another thousand years. Resultantly almost all Turk tribes accepted Islam.

Afghanistan was not a country at that era in same sense as one talks of Persia of that time. The society dwelled around the mountains and a tribal system which was a direct descendent of Old Testament flourished in mountainous region of Hindu Kush, a kind of controlled anarchy, where all the tribes were independent to run their affairs which amounted mainly in livestock breeding and raids on the caravans and low lying villages astride the foothills.

These Turks became an elite force as due to consistent civil strife the Caliphs at Baghdad felt the need to have a force which should be above political alliance for their personal security, with the passage of times these Turks became the king makers and Seljuk Turks were

---

1 The Muslim World, Age of Caliphates, p-37

the first one which entered Baghdad and were granted the titles of Sultan , these Turks however retained the Caliphate to the Abbasids but were the real power behind the throne. Another of these Turks established the first Islamic dynasty in Central Asia under the name of Samanids which were eventually overpowered by the Oghuz Turks, from these Samanid Turks emerged the Ghazna Turks which shaped the destiny of the India for another five hundred years.

The founder of the dynasty was Sebuktegin {r 977-997} a Turk slave who rose to distinction and it was he who like earlier Aryans claimed his territory to the natural boundary of Indus , This frontier including Kabul were under Hidu Shai kingdoms. He first invaded India and defeated the Hindu Shahis { 989 & in 991} who gave tribute to Ghazna after his death his son Mahmood of Ghazna continued the conquest{ 1000-1030}, the striking aspect of the successive humiliation of the Hindu states year after takes the art of warfare to new heights, it is amazing to draw a conclusion with the character of the Hindustani militant reaction to the Alexander The Great which finally worn the will power of his Macedonian soldiers, the psychological impact on the over all population must have been devastating as it created a myth of geographical superiority between the plain dwellers of Punjab , Sind, Deccan, and Ganges Valley who were ruthlessly being subdued by the mountainous people , the nomadic tribes and Turks were after nothing else but nomads, wealth taken at will from the Hindu temples help him create the Ghazna culture which became the symbol of the Turkish people, on the historic note it was the culmination point of the Aryans who almost 2000 years ago humiliated the Dravidians, this time they built Ghazna seat of first Islamic Kingdom of Hindustan, notable historian Al Berouni was able to write down the history of the regime and the social life pattern of the India. India in practical term was just a vassal state of Ghazna. As its very capital of Harsha empire Kanauj was sacked by him in 1018 in which the Rajputs displayed



their honor of committing mass Jauhar {suicide} after defeat, in 1024 Mahmood's most severe psychological blow came with his almost 500 miles deep expedition to the southern Dravidian sacred temple at Somnath ' it had 1000 Brahmins, 300 barbers and 350 temple prostitutes in constant attendance and chief idol a huge lingam the phallic symbol of Shiva was washed in water from the sacred Ganges carried over 750 miles....'<sup>2</sup> For Hindu nation it was a knock out blow an ultimate of Dravidian culture's and religious surrender, the destruction of the myth and symbol of Brahminic and Hindu identity was mental surrender, from this state of mind from Hindus never recovered right till the end when India was divided on the religious line .

India after the Mahmood of Ghazna's raids became a vassal state for the Turk dynasties of the western mountains, Indus became part of mountain dwellers the very fact that Indus Valley had embraced Islam changed the over all picture of the area. The invading Turks were not regarded as an invaders rather as brethren of Islam. Ghazna was destroyed by the neighbouring Ghor and with it the India also passed from the hands of the Ghaznavities to Ghorids. Shahbuddin Ghor was initially resisted by the Ganga Valley but very next year the all semblance of resistance were destroyed by Shahbuddin and from 1206-1526 A.D. India or more specifically all the three riparian civilisations were under the control of Muslims who were chiefly Turks and Afghans later this was overthrown by the Moghuls who descended down from Central Asia. The rule of Delhi Sultanate<sup>3</sup> is divided into following dynasties. Mamluks 1206-1290 A.D. Khiljis 1290 – 1320 A.D. Tughluqs 1320 – 1414 A.D. The sayyids 1414 -1451 A.D. and Lodhis 1451 – 1526 A.D.

---

2 A History of Asia Volume 1, Formation of Civilisations from Antiquity to 1600. Woodbridge, Hilary & Frank { Allyn, Boston, 1964}, p-208

3 The rulers who ruled India before the Moghuls have been termed as Delhi Sultans and the empire is termed as Delhi Sultanate.

Shihab ud din Ghorī had no male heir, he had appointed three governors in occupied India, Qutub Ud Din Aibak was given the rule of Jumna/ Ganga Valley, Nasir al Din Qabachah was made the governor of lower Indus valley and Taj al Din Yaldiz was given the helm of affairs of Karman and Sankuran. Aibak was made governor of Delhi in 1192 A.D. with instructions to make conquest further east<sup>4</sup>. All these Turk governors were related to each other through intermarriages which took place on the command of Shihab Ud Din Ghorī. Aibak was married to the daughter of Yalduz similarly another daughter of Yalduz was married to Qubachah apparently Shihab Ghorī had the idea of creating peace among his governors through these marriages but it did not work the way he had thought as soon after his death the civil war broke out among these chieftains for the control of the power. Yalduz occupied Ghazna, Aibak declared himself sovereign in Ganga and so was Qabachah in Sind or lower Indus. Aibak was regarded very high by the late Shihab Ghorī and his rank was raised

The bloodline of this empire were the Afghans and Turks Muslims which formed the fighting backbone of the military and ruling junta. The invasion of Tamerlane in 1399 and before him the Mongols in 12<sup>th</sup> century both originating from the Central Asia once again engraved the racial superiority of the mountain dwellers since Tamerlane had specifically targeted the Hindu population thus the religious supremacy of Islam over the non believers remained intact. Mughul Empire was established by Babur of Ferghana in 1526 after crushing the Muslim Sultan of Delhi, {Sultan Lodhi was an Afghan} Mughul empire later not only protected the native population from the raids of mountain tribes of Afghanistan but also adopted a more liberal approach towards the non believers with varying degree of

---

4 Agha Hussain Hamdani *The Frontier Policy of The Delhi Sultans*, Pakistan National Institute of Historical & Cultural Research {Islamabad, 1986}.p-39.

freedom. Afghanistan did not exist as a country under Moghuls<sup>5</sup>, Kabul the main city acted as a base camp for the Babur, other important cities like Kandahar, Herat, Khiva, Bukhara were ruled by the native tribes and what was right was the law, it was Akbar the Great who had Kandhar under his rule, another Mughul King Shah Jehan did try to capture the Central Asia and was successful for a short time to keep imperial forces at Ferghana. Western part of Afghanistan remained under control of Persians before the Hotak rebellion of 1720 which again put the Kandharis in power. In 1738 Delhi was ravaged first by the Persian Nadir Shah and later in 1763 by the Afghan Ahmed Shah Abdali who in true sense is the founder of modern day Afghanistan. He kept Lahore, Kashmir and Multan as provinces of his Afghan empire and from this point in history the cultural clash took a new shape in the form of religious animosity between the Afghan Muslims and the Punjabi Sikhs.

**Sikhism** took birth in Punjab in 1520 AD and despite having Muslim Sufi saints' teachings as part of their religion they were prosecuted ruthlessly by the Aurangzeb and as such when the Abdali's forces were marching back to the mountain retreat they were attacked by the Sikh bands. In 1799 the Sikhs finally captured Lahore and within years had the Kashmir, Multan and Peshawar under their control, for the first time in a thousand years the martial supremacy of the mountain dwellers of Hindu Kush was broken by the native dwellers of plains of India.

Sikhs did not have an easy and comprehensive control over the territory and people living on the Western bank of River Indus yet through a blend of diplomacy and militancy Ranjeet was able to have his forces in Peshawar<sup>6</sup> and for a short time had the control

5 Charles, Miller, *Khyber, The Story Of The North West Frontier*, {McDonald & Jane's London, 1977}, pp xiii

6 Khullar, *Maharaja Ranjit Singh*. {Hem, New Delhi, 1980}. pp-48-52, pp 121-129

over the Khyber Pass as well. The Kabul and Lahore thus remained embroiled in a constant war of attrition. The tribes inhabiting the mountainous region remained independent and owed no allegiance to any ruler however the religious and ethnic commonality bounded them together against Sikhs furthermore the tribes internal feuds were such that they were erratic and unpredictable in their conduct, looting, levying of taxes on trade and forces passing through their area of influence were the cornerstone of their economy. Ranjeet Singh had kept the Kashmir under the Dogra rulers in a semi autonomous state. Kashmir at that time had no well defined boundary in the North ,West and East. Dogras expanded the frontiers of Kashmir in these three directions and were able to capture the Gilgit, Skardu, Laddakh and also made in roads into tribal territory of Marghalla and Hazara hills. Ranjeet Singh also staked claims on Eastern Afghanistan<sup>7</sup>.

On 31<sup>st</sup> December 1600 Queen Elizabeth granted a charter to ‘The Company of Merchants of London trading unto the East Indies.’ On 11<sup>th</sup> January 1613 the Muhgul Emperor Jahangir issued a firman to establish a factory at Surat to Captain Best the company’s representative, in 1625 a trading centre established at Masulipatam {Madras} and in 1634 a trading factory was establish at Piplee {Bengal}. Later these factories and trading centres were fortified and troops some British some natives were employed for the protection, in 1698 a new Company of Merchants received its charter, in 1708 both companies were amalgamated under the title of The United Company of Merchants of England trading to the East Indies or East India Company. Thus these areas became the presidencies Bombay, Madras and Bengal each having its own army commanded by separate commander in chief who also was the president answerable to directors at London. By 1741 the Bombay Army had a battalion of

---

7 Miller, *Khyber*, p xv

troops consisting of seven companies and formal artillery was raised in 1748, in the same year Major Lawrence Stringer was appointed as the commander in chief of all the armies in India. Promotion was strictly based upon seniority only in Bombay the battalion system was adopted in other two presidencies the companies remained the basic unit. The feud between the French & British trading companies brought a larger influx of European troops into India and also an increase in the army of native soldiers. In 1754 the British and French troops clashed at Madras in the same year the first detachment of Royal Troops 39<sup>th</sup> Foot arrived in India as reinforcement it also brought into effect the Mutiny Act into India thus the forces in India were divided into Royal Troops, Company's European Troops and Company's Native Troops. In 1757 the first Indian Regiment was organised onto European pattern it had native troops but officers were all British it was known as 'Lal Paltan', it had three British officers several British non commissioned officers 42 Indian officers and 820 Indian rank and file, the Paltan had ten companies. It also had a Indian commandant and adjutant. In Madras six such battalions were raised in 1759 and in Bombay native battalions were raised in 1767, the man responsible for this pragmatic organisation was Clive known as 'Clive of Plassey' in history. The officers of East India Company troops despite their seniority were junior to the King's troops and this created several mutinies among them mainly over pay the native Bengal troops also show their resentment mainly over the pay. This resulted in reorganisation of the army in India in 1796 the number of British troops in India both company & King amounted to over 13000 where as the native troops numbered around 57000. Reorganisation resulted in decrease of native troops and increase in the number of British officers which were increased to 22 from the previous 12, the system of two battalion regiment was also introduced. A colonel commanded the regiment having two

lieutenant colonels, one for each battalion which also had one major, four captains, 11 lieutenants and five ensigns. The battalions were also numbered for the first time in this organisation. In 1824 further reforms were carried out in the army which resulted in the breaking up of two battalion regiment for the Indian troops it also necessitated renumbering of battalions the irregular cavalry regiments were also raised the ratio of cavalry to infantry battalions was 1 to 7.

### **Great Game & Forward Policy**

The political and military rivalry of European continent also had its effects on the sub continental politics, initially British had apprehensions about the Napoleon's advance towards the India which were later replaced by the Russians after the treaty of Vienna in 1815. By this time in history the area West of present day Afghanistan was a conglomeration of independent small valley states all Islamic in nature like Khiva and Merv<sup>8</sup>, these were captured by the Russians therefore British in order to keep an eye on the affairs wanted to have a friendly and a subservient ruler in Kabul which was under control of Dost Muhammad. British failed in diplomacy to achieve their aim and therefore the first Anglo Afghan war started in 1839. Ranjeet Singh did not allow troops of BEIC to march through his territory which was the most feasible in terms of logistics. The first Anglo Afghan war resulted for a brief time to have a friendly Afghan ruler, the Shah Shuja at Kabul, however Afghans revolted against Shah Shuja and British Consulate at Kabul was burnt in 1841<sup>9</sup>, thus ended the sphere of influence in Afghanistan for the British. Out of the original 16000 troops only one escaped death to narrate the

---

8 Anila, Bali .*THE RUSSO-AFGHAN BOUNDARY DEMARCATION 1884-95: BRITAIN AND THE RUSSIAN THREAT TO THE SECURITY OF INDIA*, {School of Humanities, University of Ulster. Thesis submitted for the degree of D.Phil.1985}. pp 25-27

9 Azmat, Hayat, *The Durand Line its Geo-Strategic Importance* { Area Study Centre,

events this was the single most military disaster that felt upon the BEIC since their formation<sup>10</sup>

From this point onwards the myth of racial superiority of the white was shattered and a chain of events in which first the Sind was annexed in 1842. Death of Maharajah Ranjit Singh's brief illness in 1840 resulted in a war of succession among his heirs this led to the First Anglo Sikh War of 1842 in which Sikhs suffered defeat. Second Anglo Sikh War of 1846 finally resulted in the annexation of Punjab by the British and Henry Lawrence was made the governor of Punjab. The frontiers of Punjab at that time bounded on the Indus it was only in upper Indus Valley at Peshawar that Sikh Rule was on the western banks of Indus otherwise they remained confined to the eastern fringes. This diplomatic and military moves between the Russia and Great Britain was like a game of Chess and is termed as **Great Game**.

The tribes of Hindu Kush which hitherto remained independent had no other means of sustenance other than plundering the plains of Punjab, they on regular intervals in mass or in small parties raided the settled areas now Lawrence was adamant to stop this and to establish the writ of Company and to provide protection to the subjects living under the British rule from the marauding tribesmen. He first created a force which was formed of the natives of Peshawar vale and came to be known as Guides. The annexation of the Punjab in 1846 brought forward the BEIC troops to the banks of River Indus the traditional natural boundary between two civilizations, on the Western bank were the foothills. BEIC and especially the lieutenant governor of Punjab, Lawrence were adamant to protect the subject population inhabiting the forward edge of British Empire, BEIC

---

University of Peshawar, 2000; pp 63-64

10 Ibid p,64

had taken over the legal responsibility of Ranjeet Singh's empire which by itself was based upon the tacit mixture of diplomacy and militancy. Area West of River Indus from Peshawar down South Dera Ghazi Khan was divided into six Frontier Districts {FD} a separate force the Punjab Irregular Force {PIF} was also raised which was put under command of Punjab Government instead of a central command<sup>11</sup>. Between 1849 - 1854 over eighteen military punitive expeditions<sup>12</sup> were conducted to punish the tribes for their acts of hostility that included looting of caravans and attacks on BEIC, which from tribes perspective was nothing new.

A treaty was signed between the John Lawrence chief commissioner of Punjab and Dost Muhammad the Walee of Kabul at Peshawar on 30<sup>th</sup> March 1855, it had three articles and it was a treaty in which both parties expressed perpetual peace and friendship, not to intervene in each others territories and also acknowledging the sovereignty of each other over their respective areas, Dost Muhammad agreed to be an 'enemy of enemies of honourable East India Company'<sup>13</sup>. Another treaty was signed in Peshawar on 26<sup>th</sup> January 1857, in which British agreed to pay the Dost Muhammad one lakh rupees per month for his assistance against the Persian which had captured Herat along with 4000 muskets<sup>14</sup>.

In Post 1857 the War Office and politicians in London especially prime ministers Disraeli and Gladstone had varying policy on countering the Russian threat, one school of thought favoured a '**Forward Policy**' which promoted an aggressive posture having

---

11 Timothy Robert Moreman "*Passing It On The Army In India & The Development Of Frontier Warfare 1849-1947*., Thesis submitted for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, King's College, University of London. pp 20-25.

12 *The Durand line* ,pp 244-245

13 Ibid ,p 246

14 Ibid,p 248.



British military contingents stationed as far forward as possible there by making Afghanistan a dependency of British India, the other school of thought favoured an isolationist policy<sup>15</sup>, there by rejecting the very idea of any Russian invasion to India as not practical, they considered River Indus as an viable and economical defence line<sup>16</sup>. The policy of Lawrence of Punjab in dealing with frontier has been termed as **Masterly Inactivity**.

As part of Great Game Britain engineered the western borders of Afghanistan and Russians also agreed on having a clear sphere of influence, a treaty was signed with Russia on the extent of spheres of both empires in 1873 which later became the boundary between Afghanistan and Russia. Amir of Afghanistan was not consulted.

After 1857 the troops of the East India Company were placed under the crown the proclamation of Queen Victoria on 1<sup>st</sup> November 1858 practically ceased the existence of East India Company and its troops. The company's European troops became British regiments and artillery of three presidencies was amalgamated into Royal Artillery. In 1861 reorganisation was carried out under which the strength of British officers in cavalry and infantry regiments was reduced to six per battalion however the presidency system was retained but a staff corps was introduced into them.

## **Second Anglo-Afghan War**

Second Afghan War started because in London the policy makers now adopted the forward policy. 'coming of the Conservatives in power in 1874. Lord Lytton became the new Governor General in India. The Forward Policy was pursued {by new governor General

15 Miller, *Khyber*, pp 85-86.

16 Mujtaba ,Razvi, *The Frontiers of Pakistan, a Study of Frontiers Problem in Pakistan Foreign Policy* {National Publishing House,Karachi,1971} pp,144-145.

Lytton} and the tension grew... a mission under Neville Chamberlain left for Afghanistan, but on 25 August 1878 it was not permitted by the Afghan soldiers at the Khyber Pass to enter Afghanistan'<sup>17</sup>

Thus a military expedition was carried out 'to remove all anxiety about India's north western frontier... decision for war has been taken'<sup>18</sup>. The war itself was a replica of first Anglo Afghan war ,however reinforcement from India finally compelled the Yakub Khan{son of Sher Ali who had fled Afghanistan} the Amir of Kabul to a treaty signed at Gandamask ,a British military camp approximately 79 miles south west of Kabul on 30<sup>th</sup> May 1879.

*His Highness the Amir of Afghanistan and its dependencies agrees to conduct his relations with Foreign States in accordance with the advice and wishes of the British Government. His Highness the Amir will enter into no engagements with Foreign States, and will not take up arms against any Foreign State, except with the concurrence of the British Government. On these conditions the British Government will support the Amir against any foreign aggression with money, arms, or troops, to be employed in whatsoever manner the British Government may judge best for this purpose. Should British troops at any time enter Afghanistan for the purpose of repelling foreign aggression, they will return to their stations in British territory as soon as the object for which they entered has been accomplished.*

*With a view to facilitate communications between the allied*

---

17 Dr Sultan-I-Rome *The Durand Line Agreement (1893): Its Pros and Cons*, WWW.VALLEYSWAT.NET,accessed on 26<sup>th</sup> January , 2011

18 Durand line ,pp 110-112 also see Aslam Khattak, *A Pathan Odyssey*, {Oxford,Karachi,2000} pp,70-71. Also see,Muhammad Qaiser Janjua. "In the Shadow of the Durand Line; Security, Stability, and the Future of Pakistan and Afghanistan". Naval Postgraduate School, Monterrey, California,pp 66-67.

*Governments and to aid and develop intercourse and commercial relations between the two countries, it is hereby agreed that a line of telegraph from Kurram to Kabul shall be constructed by and at the cost of the British Government, and the Amir of Afghanistan hereby undertakes to provide for the protection of this telegraph line.*

*In consideration of the renewal of a friendly alliance between the two States which has been attested and secured by the foregoing Articles, the British Government restores to his Highness the Amir of Afghanistan and its dependencies the towns of Kandahar and Jelalabad with all the territory now in possession of the British armies, excepting the districts of Kurram, Pishin and Sibi. The revenues of these districts, after deducting the charges of civil administration, shall be paid to His Highness the Amir.*

*The British Government will retain in its own hands the control of the Khyber and Michni Passes, which lie between the Peshawar and Jelalabad districts, and of all relations with the independent tribes of the territory directly connected with these passes .The British Government agrees to pay to His Highness the Amir and to his successors an annual subsidy of six lakhs of Rupees.*

Despite the treaty the Afghans again revolted and scenes similar to First war were re-enacted , ‘A rebellion took place and the Mission’s members were killed on 3rd September 1879’<sup>19</sup> the British thus concluded that without having a King in Afghanistan who is reliable to their cause and also accepted to the Afghans problem of Afghanistan will remain agitated, Yakub Khan was put into exile in India. The British Viceroy in India, Edward Robert Lytton Bulwer had three choices: to annex Afghanistan and declare it a part of

---

19 Sultan Rome, *Durand Line* 1893,p 36.

the British Empire, to make Afghanistan a strong British ally, or disintegrate Afghanistan into small independent states. All these options were rejected by London,<sup>20</sup> and instead Abdur Rehman nephew of Sher Ali who had been in exile in Russia was put on throne on 22 July 1880.

Tochi Pass is unique from all other passes where as the other passes are high in the mountains the Tochi Pass is almost at the banks of River Indus and due to this the control of this pass eventually led into the Waziristan and following the Tochi valley one can enter into the Afghanistan. The purpose was not trade as the major trade route was the Khyber but Tochi pass had a pure military importance. Tochi Pass was ceremoniously opened in 1890 when the Viceroy of India paid a visit to the Dera Ismail khan and entered into the Pass. One of the chief architect of this was Bruce the chief commissioner of Dera jats who had been a deputy of Robert sandeman.

### **Durand Line.**

Abdur Rehman was a bold ruler and he tried to assert his authority over the areas which were historically under Afghanistan but all his actions were seen in the background of simultaneous Russian movements , for instance in 1882, Abdur Rehman laid claim to Chitral, {rejected by the British}. In 1886, his forces occupied Chageh (in Baluchistan) but the British forces uprooted and evacuated the Afghans. In 1888, he interfered in Bajour and Swat. Durand, the Foreign Secretary of India, wrote to the Viceroy:

*‘We are getting bad news all along the border, from the Black Mountain to the Waziri territory. The Amir is threatening Kurram, and the Afridis are in a very shaky condition.... Finally, when the*

---

20 Abdur Rehman Khan,” [http://www.1911encyclopedia.org/Abdur\\_Rahman\\_Khan](http://www.1911encyclopedia.org/Abdur_Rahman_Khan)

*Viceroy felt the need to meet with the Amir, he made an intelligent move and wrote to the Amir, "...whether you accept this offer or not, it will be necessary to decide what territory does, and what does not form part of the kingdom of Afghanistan'.<sup>21</sup>*

Abdur Rehman resisted the mission on one pretext or the other and finally agreed to receive the British mission, under the foreign secretary of state Mortimer Durand .the main issue from Abdur Rehman's point of view was his insistence on having the Yaghistan[ Chitral, Bajaur, Swat, Dir, Chilas, and Waziris} under his influence

He wrote to the Viceroy that:

*'But if you should cut them out of my dominions, they will neither be of any use to you nor to me: you will always be engaged in fighting or other troubles with them, and they will always go on plundering. As long as your Government is strong and in peace, you will be able to keep them quiet by a strong hand, but if at any time a foreign enemy appears on the borders of India, these frontier tribes will be your worst enemies . . . . In your cutting away from me these frontier tribes, who are people of my nationality and my religion, you will injure my prestige in the eyes of my subjects, and will make me weak, and my weakness is injurious to your Government.'*<sup>22</sup>. Viceroy Lord Lansdowne replied ' British government had always dealt directly with the Waziri tribe and would continue to do so'.<sup>23</sup>

The "Durand Line Agreement" between Abdur Rehman and Durand was signed on November 12, 1893, which formulated the formal borders between British India and Afghanistan.

---

21 Sultan Rome, Durand Line, p 8, also see Azmat Hayat, Durand Line, pp 128-131.

22 Azmat, Durand Line, p131.

23 Ibid, p 132.

**Text of the Agreement:** Whereas certain questions have arisen regarding the frontier of Afghanistan on the side of India, and whereas both His Highness the Amir and the Government of- India are desirous of settling these questions by friendly understanding, and of fixing the limit of their respective sphere of influence, so that for the future there may no difference of opinion on the subject between the allied Governments, it is hereby agreed as follow:

1. *The eastern and southern frontier of His Highness's dominions, from Wakhan to the Persian border, shall follow the line shown in the map attached to this agreement.*
2. *The Government of India will at no time exercise interference in the territories lying beyond this line on the side of Afghanistan, and His Highness the Amir will at no time exercise interference in the territories lying beyond this line on the side of India.*
3. *The British Government thus agrees to His Highness the Amir retaining Asmar and the valley above it, as far as Chanak. His Highness agrees, on the other hand, that he will at no time exercise interference in Swat, Bajaur, or Chitral, including the Arnawai or Bashgal valley. The British Government also agrees to leave to His Highness the Birmal tract as shown in the detailed map already given to His Highness, who relinquishes his claim to the rest of the Waziri country and Dawar. His Highness also relinquishes his claim to Chageh [Chagheh].*
4. *The frontier line will hereafter be laid down in detail and demarcated, wherever this may be practicable and desirable, by joint British and Afghan commissions, whose object will be to arrive by mutual understanding at a boundary which shall adhere with the greatest possible exactness to the line shown in the map attached to this agreement, having due regard to the existing local rights of villages adjoining the frontier.*

5. *With reference to the question of Chaman, the Amir withdraws his objection to the new British cantonment and concedes to the British Government the rights purchased by him in the Sirkai Tilerai water. At this part of the frontier the line will be drawn as follows:*

*From the crest of the Khwaja Amran range near the Psha Kotal, which remains in British territory, the line will run in such a direction as to leave Murgha Chaman and the Sharobospring to Afghanistan, and to pass half-way between the New Chaman Fort and the Afghan outpost known locally as Lashkar Dand. The line will then pass halfway between the railway station and the hill known as the Mian Baldak, and, turning south-wards, will rejoin the Khwaja Amran range, leaving the Gwasha Post in British territory, and the road to Shorawak to the west and south of Gwasha in Afghanistan. The British Government will not exercise any interference within a mile of the road.*

6. *The above articles of agreement are regarded by the Government of India and His Highness the Amir of Afghanistan as a full and satisfactory settlement of all the principal differences of opinion which have arisen between them in regard to the frontier; and both the Government of India and His Highness the Amir undertake that any differences of detail, such as those which will have to be considered hereafter by the officers appointed to demarcate the boundary line, shall be settled in a friendly spirit, so as to remove for the future as far as possible all causes of doubt and misunderstanding between the two Governments.*
7. *Being fully satisfied of His Highness's good will to the British Government, and wishing to see Afghanistan independent and strong, the Government of India will raise no objection to the*

*purchase and import by His Highness of munitions of war, and they will themselves grant him some help in this respect. Further, in order to mark their sense of the friendly spirit in which His Highness the Amir has entered into these negotiations, the Government of India undertake to increase by the sum of six lakhs of rupees a year the subsidy of twelve lakhs now granted to His Highness.*<sup>24</sup>

Amir AbdurRahman had also stated that: “The province of Wakhan, which had come under my dominion, I arranged to be left under the British for protection, as it was too far from Kabul, and cut off from the rest of my country, and therefore very difficult to be properly fortified. The boundary line was agreed upon from Chitral and Baroghil Pass up to Peshawar, and thence up to Koh Malik Siyah in this way that Wakhan, Kafiristan, Asmar, Mohmand of Lalpura, and one portion of Waziristan came under my rule, and I renounced my claims from the railway station of New Chaman, Chageh, the rest of Waziri, BulundKhel, Kuram, Afridi, Bajaur, Swat, Buner, Dir, Chilas, and Chitral. The Amir further states that: “The misunderstandings and disputes which were arising about these frontier matters were put to an end, and after the boundary lines had been marked out according to the above-mentioned agreements by the Commissioners of both Governments, a general peace and harmony reigned between the two Governments, which I pray God may continue for ever.”<sup>25</sup>

The actual demarcation took place in following manner.

---

24 Azmat, *Durand Line*, appendix, p 244.

25 Ibid, pp, 134-144. Also see, Muhammad Qaiser Janjua. “In the Shadow of the Durand Line; Security, Stability, and the Future of Pakistan and Afghanistan”. Naval Postgraduate School, Monterrey, California, pp 79-82.



## **The Khyber Demarcation Commission**

The first commission, known as the Khyber Demarcation Commission, was designated for the demarcation of the border from the Safed Koh to the Kabul River. This included the boundary from Chandak (the southern territory of Chitral) to the Kabul River and between the British Kurram territory and the Amir's area of Khost. The map of the Durand Line Agreement virtually divided the Mohmand Agency in two during the demarcation process. The Amir claimed the whole of Kafiristan and maintained that Bangsal Valley was a part of it. The British, on the other hand claimed that Bangsal Valley was part of Chitral Valley. The British ended the deadlock after surrendering Asmar and the Bangsal Valley of Kafiristan to the Amir thus finalizing a 130-mile border from the Hindu Kush to the vicinity of Nawa Kotal

## **The Kurram-Afghan Commission**

The Kurram-Afghan Commission was represented from the British side by the British Commissioner, J. S. Donald and by Sherindil Khan from the Afghan side. The border demarcation from Sikaram to Laram was done with minor adjustments to the Durand Line map in favor of the Afghans. Both the British and Afghan representatives sanctioned this border in mid 1895.<sup>37</sup>

## **The Baluch-Afghan Commission**

The Baluch-Afghan Commission was responsible for the border demarcation from Domandi to the Iranian border, The boundary from Domandi to Chaman was easily settled by February 16, 1895. The border from Domandi to Persia (the top of Koh-i-Malik-Siah Mountain) was finalized in June, 1896.

## **The Fourth Commission**

After the three main Commissions, a fourth Commission was set up under L.W. King to delimit the Afghan frontier on the border of Waziristan in 1894-95 but the actual work did not start until early 1895. He claimed that historically Mitai and Mohmand had always been under Afghanistan's jurisdiction. He further claimed that there was no mention of Mohmand in the Durand Line Agreement. the Secretary of State stated that the boundary south of Kabul was not an urgent issue, proposed the division of Mohmand into two between Afghanistan and British India.

## **Origin of Waziristan**

The origin is obscure in history the tradition goes that once upon a time long long ago there were two brothers and one of them was childless and the other had a daughter, they both were out hunting when they found a child who was left at an army camping ground they found an axe also. The childless brother adopted the baby which in Pashto was named as Karlanri {meaning axe}. When the boy grew up he was married to the daughter of his uncle. This Karlanri had two sons , one was named as Koday who in turn had two wives , from the first wife the Orakzais took birth and from second wife the Afridis, Khattaks, Mangals and Turis were bred. Kokay was the second son of Karlanri he had two sons one named as Sulaiman and the other as Shitak, Daurs are the descendants' of Shitak<sup>26</sup>.

Sulaiman also had two sons; Bangash are the descendents from Malikmir the youngest son of Sulaiman. Wazir the eldest son of Suleiman had two sons namely Khizri and Lali . Khizri had three sons namely Musa, Mahmud and Mubarak. Musa was called

---

26 Olaf Caroe *Pathan*, p-463. Also see *Imperial Gazetteer of India Provincial Series NWFP , 1909*, pp 72-73,182,243-248.

Darwesh from his religious character and thus clan that is today known as Darwesh Khel Wazir are his descended. Musa had two sons namely Utman and Ahmed which thus forms the sub clans of Darwesh Khel as Utmanzai & Ahmedzai. Mahmud had a son called Mahsud which forms the Mahsud Wazir Tribe or clan similarly Mubarak had one son name Gurbuz which forms the Gurbuz Wazir tribe. Thus it is seen that all the clans are interlinked through blood. All these tribes are Aryan genetically and culturally, they have fair complexion {exceptions are there} with broad head with plenty of hair, narrow long nose and dark eyes; it is the length of their nose which gives rise to the theory of their being Jewish by descend.<sup>27</sup> These tribes are also Turk culturally and socially, Turk was the general name given by Arabs to all nomadic tribes of Central Asia. The combination of these Aryan {Iranian} & Turk tribes gave birth to the two distinct tribes one known as Afghans and other as Pathans. An Afghan tribe is primarily constituted from a number of kindred groups who are not descended from a common ancestor where as Pathan tribes have a common bloodline and ancestor. Both groups accepts reluctantly but as a necessity any alien tribe within them; the reluctance is overcome by the advantage of extra manpower for feud settling but an attached tribe is always seen as an inferior and marriages are seldom contracted among them. The woman so given goes back to her own tribe on the death of the husband. The differentiating line between Afghans & Pathans is thin for the reason that both hail from the rugged mountainous region west of River Indus, Pathans are the one who lives within the Indus Valley and Afghans out side it but there are exceptions.

Language spoken is an Aryan derivation and known as Pashto which have written characters {Baluchi does not have written characters} it is a harsh language with two main derivate, in the north

27 *Imperial Gazetteer of India Volume 1*, pp 186 & 293.

east of Waziristan it is called Pakhto and in south west as Pashto, Wazirs have a dialect of their own known as Ormurt spoken in south east Waziristan. Afghani is also quite similar and both ethnic groups can communicate with each other.

On the Constable Hand Book of British Empire Indian Maps<sup>28</sup> {1893} the area west of River Indus beyond Tank in Derajat Division is marked as Waziristan, in the North it includes Kurram River and Valley with Safeed Koh Mountain ranges as the boundary. Orakzais lives here and Afridis occupy the other side of Safeed Koh. Kurram has an elevation of 4750 feet and Peiwar Kotal is the pass which let an opening in the mountain range to allow movement through the range towards Kabul. Sakaram{Safeed Koh} peak which is the highest point in Waziristan lies in Kurram with an elevation of 15620 feet. Moving west ward Shatargardan Pass at an elevation of 10800 feet is the north north western opening for Waziristan; Mangals lives here and it encompasses Khost the highest peak in Khost Valley is 12640 feet. Tajiks are neighbours of Wazirs in this area apart from Pathans. The general layout of the region in the west of Wazir country is barren with Ghazni being the major centre of culture. Ghilzai the largest Pashto speaking tribe resides here in this region. In the South lives Sulaiman Khel and also it is the home of Utman Wazirs a small town is name after them; Gomal River forms the natural frontier of Waziristan in south where Kakkars who are distantly related to Wazirs through a rare marriage which took place among them other wise marriages are only within the tribe. Musa Khel Wazirs have their abode on the southern bank of River Zhob in the Zhob Valley. Sulaiman mountain range in the south south east is another natural frontier. Unlike the northern frontier which is green, fertile and full of life the south is dry and barren with peaks touching

---

28 Constable Hand Book Of Indian Maps was published before the Durand Line treat.

11295 and 11070 feet. On the eastern edge the layout of the ground is rolling towards the River Indus with irregular spurs protruding towards Indus. It is in the east that the entire water channels which have taken birth in the western high regions joins each other in miles after miles of river beds. Bhattanis occupy the south eastern edge and moving upwards the next tribe is Marwat then Khattaks and Bangash.

With the passage of time the tribal structure and the society developed around clan system intermarriages among blood relations bonded the ties and each family settling around some water source. These river are unlike Nile they are not based upon a single water reservoir rather the mountain streams called Aligad are formed due to melting of snow and frequent rain . The valleys are thus inhabited by clans of same blood line who fought with each other as they are doing so even today for the right over water and land. There are six major rivers between the Safeed Koh in the north and Sulaiman Koh in the south. Moving southward Kurram River is the first then Kaitu, Tochi, Khaisora, Gomal and Zhob. These rivers were once full of water and life but gradually they all died down and with this the migration of tribes took towards further east where Indus became a natural obstacle and in the south Zhob River was the extreme extent of these tribes.

Traditionally the Pathans considered themselves to be one of the lost tribe of the Moses for the reasons that it gives them a lineage to the Abrahamic religion rather than to be termed as any thing else but historically these were the Aryan tribes or the people who lived in the region for time immemorial. the Pathan tradition highlights that they are one of the early converts of Islam , one of their tribal leader was called by the most famous of all the Muslim and Arab General

Khalid Bin Waleed to the Mecca and there they embraced Islam, this seems far from the certainty the one logic which the Pathans gives following logic in his support the fact that they have the same name of their pass the Khyber which is also the name of another important place in the Arab and early Islamic history The Khyber of the Jews

Area between the Kurram River or the Peiwar Kotal Pass down south till Gomal Pass or Gomal River is the country of Wazirs, it is in terms of historical contest , in terms of administrative boundary the area is divided into valleys thus Valley adjacent to Peiwar Kotal is termed as Kurram Valley and inhabited by tribes other than the Wazirs.

The over all topography of the area is pleasant and seems lively when compared to the Balochistan and extreme northern Hindu Kush. The rivers are the source of life but they seems to have dried out in the era of Aryan migration and one cannot rule out that the major reason and cause of migration was this dearth of water. For last five hundred years these river beds occasionally comes to life due to heavy snow fall or rain which causes the small innumerable riverine and streams to gush down the mountains and joins the major rivers thus the population is based around these beds of fertile land ,over all the area is rocky but not menacing in nature. Mountains are high yet none is higher than 12000 feet. The layout of ground between Tochi River and Gomal is most pleasant with green pastures and lively valleys dotted with fruit trees and wildlife however the area over all cannot sustain the inhabitants purely on its own produce. The major crop is maize and wheat , rice is not produced in the area. Fruits are in abundance especially the apples, grapes, walnut, pomegranate and watermelon. Weather is tolerable both in

winter and summer however the cold weather does force temporary migration of nomadic peoples known as powindahs who at the start of winter season migrates from the highland west of Durand Line towards the Indus Valley and then return to their lands in summer.

## **North Waziristan**

By 1895 Waziristan was divided into two main administrative areas the North & South basing upon the two rivers namely Tochi in North and Gomal in South with the plateau of Razmak {6666 feet} forming the boundary. Tribes in North Waziristan were placed under the Deputy Commissioner Bannu and South under Deputy Commissioner Dera Ismail Khan; both working under Commissioner Derajat who was Mr Bruce. After 1895 political officers were placed at Tochi & Wana with special powers for northern and southern parts working under the Commissioner Derajat. Tochi River collects the drainage of the Afghan districts of Sarabi & Birmal and on British side that of Shawal and all the valleys running into Daur. It runs along the hills north of Datta Khel, Boya, Miranshah, Khajuri and join Kurram River east of Lakki. Its total length in the North Waziristan is approximately 80 miles. This river is the main source of irrigation in this area.

The valley may be divided into four distinct parts. Upper Tochi Valley from Dotoi to Muhammad Khel, from Muhammad Khel to Isha Pass is termed as Upper Daur where as the Lower Daur from Isha Pass to Khajauri and then from Khajauri to the Bannu Plains is termed as Lower Tochi. Floods are rare but when they occurred they seldom last more than half a day. The traders of Ghazna and Kabul by and large preferred the Gomal Pass route where as the Tochi Pass was more frequently used by the powindahs.

North Waziristan covers an area of 2318 square miles . Tochi Valley from Datta Khel to Khajuri is fertile and intensively cultivated with the water of the Tochi River. On its North West is Afghanistan, in the North East is Kurram Agency, in the South is South Waziristan, in the East is Bannu and Kohat Divisions.

Much of the North Waziristan is incredibly bare, The area is in reality largely unpopulated, the tribesmen congregating in villages and hamlets situated in the less arid portions of the valleys or the areas which lie within their reach of grazing grounds. It would appear from the topography of the area that at one time the whole region was largely covered with woods but the reckless cutting of trees has altered the character of land and climate. In the hills, cultivation is practiced on every flat piece of ground. Due to these natural conditions the population remains pastoral, migratory and restless.

Khajuri is the gateway to North Waziristan from Frontier Region Bannu. As the name indicates it has an abundance of date palms covering an area of about five square miles. It is situated on the left bank of Tochi River at its junction with Shana Algad. Other main towns in North Waziristan are Datta Khel Miranshah ,Boya, Mir Ali, Razmak, Shiwa, Dosali and Ghulam Khan. All these are located on the river banks or water source. Small villages are scattered all over the agency. The inhabitants live in villages of all sizes. The general grouping and frequency of villages vary from valley to valley but these are invariably defended by mud bricks wall and towers. A peculiarity of many Wazir villages is their close proximity to large caves, to which the tribesmen have access as dwelling places in winter for the sake of protection from harsh weather. These caves are also admirable as air raid shelters. The



way of life is as primitive as it was almost thousand years in every aspect not only in terms of construction of houses but also in the form of social values which are termed as Riway. Each village is the home of a certain clan which for all practical purposes acts and behaves as a sovereign state, formulating and ratifying treaties and declaring war providing amnesty and shelter to outlaws from other clans depending upon either a collective decision or at times acting at their own will. Surrounding grazing grounds are joint property and so are fruit trees and orchards.

There is no central hereditary power junta rather it varies with time to time. Polygamy is a common practice which becomes a necessity because of frequent feuds and war. There is no concept of population control rather more the children stronger is the clan and tribe. Women are treated with respect and are seldom seen outside their walled compounds. Kidnapping or rape of females is a rarity. The practising religion is the Sunni sect of Islam. Elders are respected, Jirga is the parliament of the clan where collective decisions are taken and are bound to be observed.

North Waziristan thus includes the country of the Darwesh Khels and Gurbuz Wazirs, the latter live between the Tochi and Khost Valley and after Durand Line came under the Kabul regime however a small clan occupies area astride Tochi Pass and also southern slopes of Mazdak which came under Delhi regime. Daur was another tribe that came under the North Waziristan apart from Bhattanis who to some extent came under the control of Deputy Commissioner Bannu. The District of Bannu was formed in 1861 and it had three sub administrative tehsils namely Bannu itself, Lakki and Mianwali. In 1895 the Marwats were the numerous tribe within Bannu having a population of 52000, Wazirs numbered 24000 and

Bhittanis a mere 2000. Bhittanis were the first tribe to have a Levy and as such they were not in the good books of Wazirs {Mahsuds}.

### **North Waziristan Militia Tochi Levies**

In November 1889 the proposal for raising of Levies for the Waziristan was floated aim was to keep peace in the area and above all to escort the officers while on a tour of the area. Commissioner Bruce recommended that 12 Mahsuds be employed as non commissioned officers and 112 mounted men at a cost of Rupees 28,440 per annum, he further recommended that four non commissioned officers and 54 mounted men be taken from Darwesh Khel of Wana and from Sheranis two non commissioned officers and 23 mounted men. In January 1890 the tribal levies were raised but not according to the strength recommended by Bruce the initial posts were Mortaza, Spinkai, Kach, Kajuari Kach and Kashmir- Kar. Soon the Kajuari Kach post came under attack from the Taji Khel the garrison was held by the 80 odd lately enlisted Wazir Levies. Syed Akbar Shah and his brother Sanobar Shah both Mahsuds of Kanigoram were in charge of the Levies as non commissioned officers. In October 1890 the boundary between Balochistan and Punjab was settled and also the boundary between Balochistan and Waziristan was finalised which runs north of Gomal River from Khudar- Domandi to Kajuari Kach. In January 1891 the Levies posts were earmarked they were supposed to collect the revenues but the question of collecting the revenue from tribes was raised by the Punjab Government but it was pended on the advice of Commissioner Bruce. In June 1891 Punjab Government formulated the scheme for opening of Tochi Pass on the recommendation of Commissioner Bruce who also insisted on approving of his levies scheme which was till then being given a cold treatment mainly on the basis of financial aspects but

now the opening of Tochi Pass was intractably linked with the safety of caravans still Bruce's scheme was not approved whole heartedly and partial blessing was given at an annual cost of 18000 Rupees annually. The Durand Line agreement brought a drastic and pragmatic change in the attitude of Punjab Government towards the Levies and on 13<sup>th</sup> September approval was given for the raising of Waziri Levies and in March 1895 Tochi Levies was raised at Idak<sup>29</sup>.

The Tochi Valley demarcation was completed by April 1895<sup>30</sup> and the escort troops which included three infantry and one cavalry regiments and one battery field artillery were pulled back and camped at Idak<sup>31</sup>. On 7<sup>th</sup> April 1895 a delegation of 500 Daur and Darwesh Khel Maliks put forward a petition to political officer at Miran Shah where by they showed the interest of coming under the British protectorate on certain conditions. In the time between the offer and acceptance the political administration distributed ten thousand rupees among these tribes just to keep their morale high. The agreement evinced Rupees 66000 annual as Maliki and service allowance. Troops were moved up into Dehgam {Mohammad Khel} and detachments were left at Shinpai, Kotal, Idak and Miran Shah with the passage of years these very initial posts became the hub of militia and scouts. On 25<sup>th</sup> July 1895 the camp was moved down from Dehgam to Boia and then from Boia to Miran Shah which thus became the political headquarters. On 18<sup>th</sup> October 1895 the Government of India accepted the Daur offer of coming under the British protection, it was also spelled out that political control should be exercised over the Darwesh Khel both in Tochi Valley beyond

---

29 Richard Isaac *Forward Policy and its Results*, p-315 also see pages 265 & 320 also see Foreign Department Frontier Letter No's 164-167, August 1896. Miran Shah Archives.

30 Border & Administration Report for the year 1895-1896, Political Agent Archives Miran Shah.

31 Ibid.

Kunigrha and in tracts bordering Daur. Thus the Daur territory became protected areas. A total of Rupees 63,736 were distributed among Daur and Darwesh Khel, Daur were given 4,884 Rupees as Maliki and 10,980 as service where as Darwesh Khel were given 16,516 Rupees as Maliki and 31,356 Rupees as service which is a fair indication of how the tribes stand in the eyes of the British political administration.

In December 1895 the building of Levy Posts on the main road up to the valley commenced and towers were erected at chauki, Ajan, Roitsa, Galemot, Shinnari, Kotnil & Khawaja Khel in Bamma Khel country in lower Daur. In January a temporary civil post was constructed at Idak which later became the home of Levy. In January 1896 the temporary accommodation for the political officer was made and road from Bannu to Miran Shah was improved.

Life was not idle there was always something going on in one way or the other on 7<sup>th</sup> April 1895 a langri of 6<sup>th</sup> Punjab Infantry {P.I} was murdered within the limits of Khaddi village, on 13<sup>th</sup> May Lieutenant Lemond of the same unit along with his syce was attacked by four tribesmen at Boia as he was marching to Dehgan with his escort; both died but three of the attackers were cut down on the spot. On 31<sup>st</sup> July Lieutenant Campbell was shot in knee. Justice was through the Jirga for the murder of the langri a fine of Rupees 100 was paid but in case of Campbell the Jirga acquitted the accused due to lack of substantive evidence. The political officer Mr Caisson was stabbed through the liver on 13<sup>th</sup> March 1896 by a Daur, Caisson survived. Slowly and gradually the rules of the game were being established among the tribes and the British with give and take here and there. For instance on 16<sup>th</sup> August 1896 one Gul Hassan Dauri fired at Boia Post but managed to escape and instead his brother

was put in jail. In 1895 there were nine murders, 39 theft cases, 10 house breaking and 140 cases of hurt in the protected areas and 272 civil cases were decided, a total of 1100 Rupees fine was imposed in cases against the government<sup>32</sup>. The cases within the tribal areas were not the jurisdiction of the political officer and they were settled through Jirga who at times they invited for arbitration for instance in June 1895 the water dispute between the Daur and Tori Khel of Tappi Village was amicably resolved.

The raising and over all administrative structure of the Tochi Valley was governed by the Foreign Department {Frontier} of Government of India however the on ground actions were the domain of Punjab Government.

The continuous harassing of the political and military establishment finally touched the limits of government patience when the Muharrir Fouda Baur a Hindu was murdered at Datta Khel, a force of one infantry battalion, two companies of infantry and one battery of artillery along with forty sowars moved from Miran Shah to Datta Khel and camp was established a mile from Datta Khel. In December 1896 the telegraph line was and communication was established between Miran Shah and Datta Khel. It was also decided in December 1896 to make Miran Shah as the political headquarters with a very strong advance post at Datta Khel. Levy posts at Saidgi, Kajauri, Katerisia, Idak, Lam Ghundi, Isha, Muhammad Khel and Kanirogha were completed by end 1896 but 'no progress made on military posts and roads'.<sup>33</sup> In the same year the cultivation of sugar cane was introduced in Lower Daur it was a success later cultivation of rice was also experimented by having seed from Peshawar, an irrigation Darogha was appointed and Daur agreed to

---

32 Ibid.

33 Tochi Valley Administrative Report 1896-97.

bear his expenses collectively. It is obvious that the Daur who had agreed to be part of British political system were now reaping the good harvest, the political officer noted that the 'general conduct of the Daur through the year very good'<sup>34</sup>. It does not mean that there was peace in the area but it a relative term because majority of the cases were committed against the government property. In July 1896 42 goats of the Levy were looted about two miles above Idak, two coolies namely Jaimal and Jahandur were murdered near Pai Khel later Imanzai Khels and Daur paid a fine of Rupees 60 for them. There were eighteen case of wire cutting, Jalal Khan alone committed five offenses he infested the road near Isha. There were 57 cases of criminal nature committed against the British Government in the year 1896 which include four cases of murder and thirty nine cases of theft and that also includes the theft of General Bird's luggage which was looted near Datta Khel after the sowar of his camel belonging to 1<sup>st</sup> Punjab Cavalry name Niaz Muhammad was shot dead, the number of tribal cases were 286 which included 17 cases of murders and 109 cases of robbery only 17 cases were such which involved women; fine inflicted was 797 and compensation awarded was 7362 Rupees.

Levies were utilised to spare the regular troops of chasing the minor cases however there was no guarantee that a minor case will not erupt into a major issue of peace in the Tochi Valley. Levy posts were regularly attacked but an analysis of the reports reveal that over all the Levies lost less number of rifles as compared to the regular troops and further more their casualties were also less as they adhered to centuries old principles of war as applicable in the area. They kept a good understanding with the natives; in majority of the cases the stolen/looted items were recovered. Levies used

---

34 Ibid.

drummers on their posts to warn the adjoining villages about an incident. On the night of 20<sup>th</sup> August 1897 Murad Shah a Jemadar of Tochi Levies was killed by a gang of raiders whom he attempted to arrest single handily while they were driving off with loot which included a dozen of donkeys from Hindu traders. The crimes that took place in the Valley ranged from burning of grass being used by troops, theft and stealing of weapons, looting on the highway, kidnapping the travellers. In August 1897 the work started on the construction of Levy Post at Datta Khel and was completed by the end of year. The cart wheel road between Bannu and Datta Khel was completed by end 1897

On 22<sup>nd</sup> March 1898, 99 Hindu coolies of government stores were attacked near Ghalekot while encamped for the night, Levies pursued the robbers along with Village Chiga and most of the loot was recovered. On 23<sup>rd</sup> March Levy post at Saidgi came under attack and one bandit Saif Ali Kabul Khel was killed. The regular troops were the target of the native miscreants on 16<sup>th</sup> March 1898 a sepoy of 33<sup>rd</sup> P.I was killed with stones while he was supervising the grazing of goats, In July 1898 a Naik of 20<sup>th</sup> Native infantry disappeared from Miran Shah Post and his bones were recovered after two days almost three miles away in the hills. The most serious was the attack on 3<sup>rd</sup> August 1898 when a gang from Afghanistan attacked the coolie's camp at Kanirogha Levy Post, seven coolies were killed on the spot and two died later, offenders were the Bakkka Khel outlaws settled in Khost. Very next day the luggage camel of the Levy Commandant Mr Donald was attacked and looted it was carried out by Aziz Shabi Khel. A levy shepherd was murdered just 700 yards away from the Boya Post on 17<sup>th</sup> August 1898 which gives a fair picture of the living conditions of that era. Jalal Khel Mahsud and Mohmit Khel Wazirs were fined Rupees 1000 for this. There were

few cases which involved women also and it gives an insight into the culture of the area. On 11<sup>th</sup> April 1898 a man was killed at Tappi in Daur by another inhabitant of village who was having an intrigue with the deceased's wife, he hired an assassin to perform this task. In May 1898 a Johar woman who was living in bigamy at Spalgha was put to death by her first husband. On 2<sup>nd</sup> September 1898 an unmarried girl was shot dead by a Waziri who claimed her earlier as part of a settlement of feud but his claim was rejected by the Jirga, he was arrested and put to jail. In January 1899 a murder took place in Daur area in which a Talib of desperate character was involved the back ground of the murder dates back to almost forty years ago when the deceased had killed a member of the assassin family thus he now settled the feud. By 1898 the concept of having a licence for the weapon within the protected areas was introduced and a register was kept to have a record of all such rifles, over 200 licences were issued. Also the criminal acts were imposed in the area thus criminals were put to jail at Peshawar, Bannu or at Montgomery.

Tochi civil establishment was revised in August 1898 under Mr H.A. Anderson the Commissioner and Superintendent of Derajat Division. Levies were stationed at Boya, Idak and Saidgi, a Naib Tehsildar was also stationed at Idak, there were three tehsils in the Tochi Valley, Datta Khel and Miran Shah were other two tehsils. Mr Lorimer was the political officer at Miran Shah where as Lala Bogha Ram was the native assistant political officer even at Datta Khel a Hindu Lala Khushal Mal was performing the duties of Naib Tehsildar. It was at the end of the year 1898 that Tochi Levy Corps as it was known officially was equipped with uniform and other equipment initially 122 rifles were issued and another 100 were issued after few months. Mr Donald became its first commandant



‘result was an immediate improvement in spirit and efficiency’<sup>35</sup>.

Officer in charge of Levies was Mr Donald where as Risaldar Major Muhammad Amin Khan was the Native Political Assistant in regards of Levies; he was not a permanent appointment holder rather on attachment, Sattar Khan and Zaffar Khan remained as native adjutants drawing a pay of Rupees 80 per month.

Levies Commandant Mr Donald was authorised an English language clerk for Levies register on 18<sup>th</sup> June 1898<sup>36</sup>. The pay of native adjutant was Rupees 60 whereas that of English clerk was drawing Rupees 30 and Risaldar Major who was also the native political assistant officer was having a pay of Rupees 300 and an extra 60 Rupees was the deputation pay. Commandant apart from having one English clerk also had one muharrir, two orderlies drawing a pay of Rupees eight and one tent pitcher who was paid Rupees ten per month.

The political officer report at the end of year is perhaps the only first hand primary source which we have which encompasses the every fibre of British administration in the newly acquired areas. North Waziristan or Tochi Valley was unlike any other mountainous area of the North West. In 1894 the British made forward moves in Gilgit where an hierarchical system existed same was the case in Balochistan but in Waziristan there was no central authority only legal and moral ground which the Raj had was the formal agreement with Daur Tribe. The resistance of other Wazir tribes although segregated into over a dozen clans yet they offered resistance but in a limited manner. Political officer noted and wrote that the Mahsuds and tribes living in Afghanistan are the main cause of trouble

35 Administrative Report Tochi Valley 1897-98

36 Foreign Frontier Department letter No. 152-153 dated 18<sup>th</sup> – 20<sup>th</sup> June 1898, Miran Shah Archives. Also see letters Nos 92-102 dated September 1899.

regarding the behaviour of Daur in which four fanatics had attacked the political officer and their other petty offenses are attributed to the excessive use of Charas. Tochi Levies was one ray of hope in which the induction of locals and the over all conduct of the levies was commendable. ‘ The system of day picquetting upon cart road was developed and picquetting duty performed with far more regularity and success than in the preceding year...a spirit of obedience and discipline was observable which did not formerly exist’<sup>37</sup>.

Tochi Levies had forty Sowars which were the striking force mainly used for escort and patrolling. These Sowars were put through an equitation course, it is to be noted that majority of the natives were not as good horsemen as the tribes of Gilgit Agency. The instructors were mainly borrowed from regular army units especially the cavalry. The footmen were put through the drill classes held in rotation at the principal posts. Tochi Levies took part in quite a number of successful pursuits of raiders. One Levy was permanently disabled in rescuing travellers from a gang of robbers armed with breech loading rifles near Surkamar. It speaks high of Tochi Levies that only one prisoner escaped from their custody during the year of 1898. Lal Khan a Jemadar of Tochi Levy was killed in a bold attempt to make a baramta of a large caravan of Khaisora Mohmit Khels near Tal<sup>38</sup>. There were grey areas also, two cases of extortion by the Levy from travellers were reported in the year, and both were punished for this severely. The initial reaction of the regular military officers was not very positive regarding the Levies and there was an air of distrust around them. However the regular army picquets were removed during the cold weather in the road above Miran shah and these duties were performed by the Tochi

---

37 Political Officer Mr Lorimer remarks in a confidential report 1899. Miran Shah Archives.

38 Border& Administrative report 1898-1899, Miran Shah Archives.

Levies with commendable tactical insight ‘ The comparatively great security of the road especially above Miran Shah during 1898-99 was I believe chiefly due to the better performance of picquet duty by the Levies’<sup>39</sup>. Unauthorised leave or absent without official leave was not that uncommon and few desertion also took place mainly when men were not given leave on Eid at Bakka Khel Posta in the lower Daur valley. To counter the regular raids in upper Daur in Hamonzai a tower was built at Samiekon also a post was commenced at Bicha which was regarded as the most important at the head of the Dande Plain but it was not finished due to Kanirogha outrage. Badawan Post was dismantled on its being indefensible.

In January 1899 Mr Cooke took over as Commandant Tochi Levies his pay was 450 Rupees per month, Mr Donald the former Commandant took over as political officer of Tochi Valley, the commandant of Tochi Scouts also acted as assistant political officer with powers to give punishment to criminals on major offenses.

There was a requirement for an increase in the numerical strength of the Levies for the reason that the work was incessant and hard thus Wazirs and Daurs the two tribes manning the Levies were reluctant to join apart from the leave issue thus an increase in numbers was seen as a logical end to both grievances. In August the proposal to introduce non Silladari Militia were submitted.

‘Past year have shown that however untaught they are by no means unteachable and there is every reason to think that reorganisation would be successful. Both classes are capable of strong party feeling which turned into proper channel would become spirit de corps’<sup>40</sup>

---

39 Ibid. Remarks by the Political Officer.

40 Ibid.

In the North Western Frontier region of Punjab the very first native militia was raised in 1878 The Khyber Rifles it was composed of irregular tribesmen commanded by an Sadozai Afghan of the royal family of Durrani the ruling elite, however the Rifles itself revolted in 1882 . In 1892-3 Captain Roos Keppel formed the Kurram Militia composed entirely of the local Turi Tribe, in the same period the Gilgit Scouts were raised by Colonel Algernon Durand as part of Gilgit Agency similarly in 1900 two militias were raised in Waziristan one named as North Waziristan Militia {NWM} and other as South Waziristan Militia {SWM}.

The Mahsuds had joined the regular infantry battalion where pay was more lucrative thus the members available for levies were limited and this was compensated by having men from tribes other than the Mahsuds where as in the other militias notably the Khyber and Kurram the manpower was all from one tribe inhabiting the valley.

The population of the Tochi Valley in 1901 was 24,670<sup>41</sup>. The strength of NWM was increased with passage of years in October 1905 it was 150 Mounted Infantry and 1285 Infantry and in October 1912 the number of infantry was increased to 1612 .One of the major reason for rapid increase in number was the fact that Waziristan remained a thorn in the rose of British Empire in India, the two main tribes Mahsuds who now formed the major population of the South Waziristan and Wazir the bulk in North Waziristan. In 1901 another important step was taken when the six frontier districts of Punjab were formed into a new province the North Western Frontier Province {NWFP} The N. W. F. Province consisted of five

---

41 North Waziristan Political Agency record, the figures are result of a letter dated 14<sup>th</sup> April 1930 in which the population numbers were inquired by the Census commission of 1930.

British districts, Dera Ismail Khán, Bannu, Kohát, Pesháwar, and Hazára with a total area of 13,193 square miles simultaneously the political agencies were made part of it thus each agency had its own political agent answerable to Governor General. There were two political agents for Waziristan one for north and other for south with a resident at Tank. The North Waziristan Agency had its political agent at Bannu<sup>42</sup>, Wazirs had a strength of 27000 of whom 15000 had the weapons. NWM like other militias was not part of army rather they were under the political agent and the chief commissioner, the officers were British and non commissioned officers were local. The organisation of NWM was based upon two wings commanded by a captain with a lieutenant as his deputy and a major as commandant of the militia with a captain as his adjutant over all strength of British officers was six . The strength of a wing was equivalent to almost half of a regular infantry battalion or two companies thus the officers were more competent than their counterpart in regular army.

### **Frontiers; an analogy of America and Pakistan**

The very concept of frontier is ambiguous in modern political systems, states are more relying upon the border as it gives them definite meaning of territory and with it the concept of sovereignty. Frontier on the other hand is a broad term with no precise measurement, thus it convolutes the authority, power and sovereignty, the very principles on which our present international political system revolves around. Pakistan have a border with India on the east but have frontiers on the north and west. Frontiers are historical entity where as borders are manmade. Thus whereas the border disputes can be resolved within a reasonable time limit the frontiers are almost non negotiable.

---

42 Charles Chenevix Trench *The Frontier Scouts* , p-14

North western frontiers of present day Pakistan were also the frontiers of India and British raj. Historically the area between the Oxus and Indus from the time immemorial have been a source of concern for the seat of power at Delhi, Calcutta and Islamabad. Lord Curzon<sup>xlii</sup> highlighted that as Viceroy he has to look after 5700 miles of frontier, conducted the proceedings of five boundary commissions, ‘yet no work or treatise in any language which so far as I know affects to treat of the subject as a whole’<sup>xliii</sup> what frontiers mean and what part they play in the life of nations, the majority of the most important wars of the century have been frontier wars, i.e., Wars arising out of the expansion of states and kingdoms. Lord Curzon then went on to add that most important wars in which we have been engaged in India in modern times was waged with Frontier tribes. Lord Curzon<sup>xliv</sup> highlighted that the existing people of the Europeans are rare exceptions about whose origins we have no certain knowledge, and took them as the part of Indo Aryans immigration. In his opinion the rivers were not a natural frontiers those primitive days rather mountain constituted the earliest form of barriers or frontiers. He classified frontier as natural or artificial, in his view the sea, desert and mountains form part of natural frontiers where as wall or road is an artificial frontier. Lord Curzon ,admitted that many of the blunders and is misfortunes on the frontier was mainly due to following or rather an absence of a sound Frontier policy, ‘ no settle basis of policy, no principle of action...one of the main errors of the past had been that instead of realising that a policy can be just a policy, it has been assumed that there are only two policies, the Forward and Lawrence policy

---

Lord Curzon was mistaken , in 1890 Fredrick Turner<sup>43</sup> presented

43 Fredric Turner an American historian who was awarded with a doctorate degree in 1890 from University of Wisconsin, [http://xroads.virginia.edu/~HYPER/TURNER/The\\_Significance\\_of\\_the\\_Frontier\\_in\\_American\\_History](http://xroads.virginia.edu/~HYPER/TURNER/The_Significance_of_the_Frontier_in_American_History)” also see Frederick Jackson Turner *The Frontier in American History* October 14, 2007 [eBook #22994],<http://>

his Frontier thesis, an analysis of American Frontier. The American Frontier is treated as the margin of that settlement which has a density of two or more person to the square mile. .

To Turner the American Frontier expanded from east to west, this movement towards the west , made the frontier an American entity and dissolved the influence of Europe. This expansion started in 1714, it was not a peaceful expansion rather a series of battles, campaigns and wars were fought before consolidation was carried. *The first frontier had to meet its Indian question, its question of the disposition of the public domain, of the means of intercourse with older settlements, of the extension of political organization, of religious and educational activity. And the settlement of these and similar questions for one frontier served as a guide for the next.,*

The hypothesis which Turner has put forward is valid for the America, as it was void of any civilisation. Turner had defined the American frontier in terms of farmers and traders, which came in waves after waves, first were the farmers who tilled the land and raised small villages, then came traders who bought these lands from farmers and built industry, where as the farmers move further west and this cycle continued. The North-Western Frontier of Indus valley and that of present day Pakistan, is different from the American Frontier, the movement of Aryans came from the west and they followed the water courses all leading to Indus; a geographical entity and natural in nature. These Aryans were , contrary to America were a tribal society thus tribe and tribal way of life governed Indus valley till the arrival of British on the scene in 17<sup>th</sup> century.

## Militia; philosophy and reality

Militia the very word entered into English language on 1st March 1641, when the member addressing the house of commons said ‘ I do heartily wish, that this great word, this new word , the Militia, this harsh word, might never have come within these walls’.<sup>44</sup> This much maligned word over a period of centuries now etymological is from Latin language. Nicolai Machiavelli highlighted the concept of Militia in his *Art of War*, which is based upon the ancient system of protecting own home land or city, in modern term, Militia conveys a group of armed men who are not under control of state, and creates a mind-set of a mob armed, as in Iraq, Libya, whereas in America and in Canada it has a different connotation.

Militia in England had a very convoluted history mainly due to the distrust between the crown and the parliament, more so due to the religious differences among the population. England did not had any standing army , and what little it had was never trusted and admired, as the population believed that navy can defend the island . The Yeomanry was another kind of Militia, only it was mounted, where as Militia had no cavalry regiments, the Yeomanry first raised in 1761. Militia in Scotland was raised in 1797 when the provision was made to raise it by ballot { in which men were nominated rather than being volunteer}, similarly Militia was raised in Ireland in 1715 which initially enrolled Protestants only between the age of 16-60; they were prohibited to serve in the army

The very first act of Militia was passed by Colony of the

---

44 Mr Whitelocke addressing the House of Commons. Lieutenant General Sir Howley Goodenough and Lieutenant Colonel Cecil Dalton *The Army Book For The British Empire, a record of the development and present position of the military forces and their duties in peace and war*. London: printed for Her Majesty stationery office, 1898. Art of war was written by Nicolai Machiavelli in



Massachusetts Bay in New England on 2 November 1776, 'it is not only the interest but the duty of all nations to defend their country, lives, liberties and properties'. On the Militia, it refers to what has been called as Trained-Band, now called as Militia, it is to be comprised from the men of the town, compulsory, however there are certain exemptions to senators, school master, clergy, university, law makers. All men between the age of 15-50 will be called to serve in Militia, however no person will be forced to serve in a militia of other town in which he is not residing.

### **Frontier Corps of Militia, Rifles & Scouts**

Present day militia in Pakistan known as Frontier Corps<sup>45</sup>, was raised in 1900 when a string of Militia units was raised as Militia, Rifles and Scouts; they were raised in line with the raising of political agencies along the north western frontier. The very first militia raised was Khyber Jezailchi<sup>46</sup> in 1878, however it was not raised in the classic notion of Militia, rather it was more to secure the British interests in Afghanistan by securing the Khyber Pass. It was being commanded by a British officer and all other ranks were native not necessarily from the local area. From the onset of British annexation of Punjab in 1849, which was a result of military efforts more than

---

45 Present day Frontier Corps, was raised in 1907 as a liaison headquarters, to protect the Indian Frontier. Prior to 1970, the Frontier Corps was responsible for the entire border belt extending from Gilgit in the north to Mekran in the South. It comprised of 19 Corps namely; the first being the Khyber Jezailchi in 1878 and followed by Zhob Levy in 1889, Gilgit Levies, 1889, Turi Militia 1892, Chagai Levies 1896, Tochi Levies in 1894, South Waziristan Militia 1900, North Waziristan Militia {1900}, Chitral Scouts 1903, Mekran Levy Corps 1924. 1<sup>st</sup> Mahsud Battalion 1938. 2<sup>nd</sup> Mahsud Battalion 1944, Pishin Scouts 1946, Thall Scouts 1947, Bajaur Scouts 1961, Karakorum Scouts 1965. Kalat Scouts 1965. Dir Scouts, Mohmand Rifles, Shawal Rifles, Swat Scouts were all raised between 1970 -1999 where as Orakzai, Khattak and Bhattani Scouts being raised after 2001. In 1974, Frontier Corps Baluchistan was raised and Zhob Militia, 2<sup>nd</sup> Mahsud Scouts, Pishin Scouts, Sibi Scouts, Chagai Militia, and Kalat Scouts were placed under them. A year later, in 1975, Gilgit Scouts was placed under Force Commander Northern Areas.

46 Jezailchi is the local manufactured rifle, it is presently known as Khyber Rifles.

political, a new form of military organisation took place known as Punjab Irregular Frontier Force{PIFFR}.<sup>47</sup> From 1878 onwards , Levies were raised in the frontier districts to maintain peace in the areas which were on the fringes of civilisation, they were under the command of political officers. These Levies were upgraded as Militia, sole exception being the Chitral Scouts. Chitral was a princely state and shares a 400 Kilometres border with Afghanistan. It was only at Chitral the militia was raised in classic sense. The enrolled soldiers were all from the Chitral State and attended a two month training and were responsible for the protection of their own areas. Turi Militia which is presently known as Kurram Militia was raised as Turi Militia, it was more on the lines of religion and sectarianism. All militias had similar organisation, having a strength of 1200-2000 men, they wore uniform which was more in line with British Army dress code. Officers were all British from regular army on secondment, men were from the tribes of the respective political agency and among these men were the junior commissioned officers who commanded their respective tribes platoons.

Third Afghan War(1919) was a test for the militia, it was almost similar to the War on Terror which is underway. Khyber Rifles, North Waziristan Militia and South Waziristan Militia revolted with varying degree, to an extent that majority of posts in South Waziristan Agency were vacated by the British officers for fear of rebellion and falling into hands of Afghan troops. MiranShah was besieged and troops deserted. The two exceptions were the Chitral Scouts and Kurram Militia. These two exceptional militia units acted and reacted to the situation in a different manner, there was no desertion among these and they held their ground and acted in accordance with the orders of British officers. This was not due to

---

47 This force comprised initially of local tribes and Sikh battalions, it was converted into regulars in 1863.

any high standard of training or morale rather the composition and character of these two militia was in line with their culture. Chitral Scouts was more on the lines of a princely state, thus the people and men in militia acted in line with the ruler {mehtar}. Kurram Militia was overwhelmingly Shia thus they had little interest in the Sunni advance of the afghan army, for them a victory by Afghans would be a calamitous for their sect. In 1922, a reorganisation of Militia was undertaken in which NWM and SWM were transitioned into Tochi Scouts and South Waziristan Scouts {SWS} Khyber Rifles the most infected of all the militias was disbanded and raised again in 1946. The most dramatic change was the induction of tribes other than the native tribes into the militias organised into scouts.

### **Tochi Scouts and Fakir of Ipi**

The longest military campaign of British raj in frontier was conducted 1936-1947 in North Waziristan Agency spearheaded by the Tochi Scouts. Aim was to capture one man Mirza Ali Khan Tori Khel alias Fakir of Ipi. It is important in many perspectives, first of all the historical similarity between Ipi and Bin Laden are too obvious to be ignored. Both campaign the 1936 and present had similar aims and objectives, almost identical number of troops and aircraft have been deployed and employed; both failed to achieve their desired objectives. Tochi Scouts was supported by other militias and regular army divisions, Tochi Scouts was placed under the operational command of the army , it was during this campaign that misconceptions about the loyalty and conduct of Militia were raised at different forums.

### **Frontier Tribes; states within states**

Tribes are the oldest entity of political, social, economic,

cultural and military system. Our history originates with the concept of tribes, religions derive their sources from the tribal way of life. Long before the emergence of Greek city states there were tribal states, where as the city states have died down with the passage of time most notably after the 1800, the tribes too suffered and merged with the modern political system yet few of them have retained their original charter of life. Tribes in modern perception are perceived as the barbaric, non civilised, void of any rational and in need of dire intervention by the civilised world. Their way of life is often ridiculed.

Thus there emerged two distinct civilisations at present, not entirely on the lines of west or east but on the lines of modern and tribal civilisation. It is a coincidence that it is in east more particularly the frontiers of Indus Civilisation where still exist tribes whose way of life is more akin to the ancient code than the modern conventions.

Frontier tribes from the early history have shown militant character, as is obvious from their resistance against the army of Alexander the Great. They did not penetrated the frontier as in USA rather few of them settled in the plains and majority preferring their ancestral abodes with occasional raids into the plains for food .The most drastic transition was the religion, Islam as a religion was adopted by all the frontier tribes. Islam itself took birth in the tribal society of Arabia and as such is more akin to these frontier tribal codes than any other philosophy. From 1000 AD – 1800 AD these frontier tribes were the backbone of all military campaigns launched from the west towards east, for them these were religious wars.

British inherited the issue of securing their frontier territory, as were the Sikhs, and this is how the modern historicism of

these frontier tribes took birth. The conflicts between 1849-1947 are categorised in two broad sense, initially it was the traditional pilferage and raids of the tribes into the settled districts {areas under control of British administration} specifically in Waziristan , in Peshawar and surroundings the effort was to made an alliance with the tribes in order to secure the routes to Kabul. After the Durand Agreement {1893}, the Forward Policy became the scarlet thread in the relations of British with tribes. The increase in level of violence in terms of campaigns on the frontier were a direct result of altering the frontier itself. Thus Forward Policy was the paramount cause in the raising of militia and that of political agencies. The leasing of strategic areas including Gilgit is also attributed to Forward Policy. The political agencies raised from 1900 onwards were an acceptance of tribal way of life and traditions. British had to accept it as militarily they failed to subjugate these tribes to their terms. The positive aspect of this forward policy was richness in literature which shed light into the tribal way of life. The crux that emerged from the wide range of autobiographies, biographies and reports is a tribal society which is civilised and following a distinct way of life , with each tribe having an individual code of laws. Enmity, revenge, and hospitality emerged as the cardinal pillars of this tribal society. Women had no role other than inside the house and subject to many laws , majority taking roots from divine books.

### **1947 – 1990; Militia, Tribes & Forward Policy**

British left the sub-continent in a hurry; it was more due to Labour Party coming to power than the political movement in sub-continent which hastened this departure. Forward Policy was very much alive in this period of uncertainty, one glaring example is the Gilgit , where under codename Operation Datta Khel , the Gilgit

Scouts commanded by Major William Brown rebelled against the Kashmir rule in winter of 1947. India and Congress party which always had a leaning towards the communism was thus cut off from having any land link with Russia.

Tribes and militia also played the key role in the freedom of the Kashmir. Frontier tribes managed to reach within the striking distance of Srinagar without any support from Pakistan Army . In October 1947, Pakistan decided and acted, to vacate all the forward military posts in the tribal areas , less keeping and managing a garrison at Landi Kotal. Pakistan also agreed to abide by all the treaties and agreements of British with tribes, subject to their being loyal to the Pakistan. Under Bhutto regime, Frontier Corps adopted a policy of Forward Thrust, aiming at opening of tribal areas. New corps of militias were raised and so were the political agencies. Furthermore the affairs of militia were divided into the Baluchistan and North Western Frontier Province. The 1973 Constitution , for the first time accepted the uniqueness of tribal areas and as such placed them under federal administration. These constitutional steps were no different from the administrative steps taken by British; driving force of both were the forward policy

The Russian invasion in Afghanistan and subsequent military resistance which compelled the Russians not only to leave the Afghanistan but also resulted in the subsequent disintegration of Russia , are all attributed to Forward Policy. The demise of Russia was also the demise of 150 years old Forward Policy; no new policy was formulated or devised by Pakistan in the short period of respite, before the 9/11 occurred. In between 1990-2000, the focus was on anti-narcotics, and resultantly the tribes again in the perception of public emerged as the main culprits. A string of operations were

conducted by Frontier Corps in Khyber Agency for this purpose, in NWA the operations were to apprehend the outlaws. In Swat in 1991-92, the major operation was carried out by Frontier Corps , not to eliminate the narcotics but to counter the first major insurgency since 1947 in frontier. No less than 10,000 troops of militia took part supported by artillery; insurgency was controlled without any active part of military or air force. This highlights the fact that insurgency in frontier can be overpowered by militia alone. On the other side, the reputation of militia had reached its lowest, it now became synonym with corruption. No organisational changes had taken place since 1947, moreover whereas under the British , only the very best officers were posted in militia, now , since 1965 due to shortage of officers the posting in militia was either for low efficiency officers, or as a punishment. The coveted post of commandant was a matter of favour for the retiring officers. It comes as no surprise that no commandant posted in any of the militia between 1965- 1995 rose beyond the rank of colonel.

The other notable steps in relations to the tribes were the constitutional amendments which gave them adult franchise rights. This by itself have inherent flaw

### **Frontier Policy; 1947 - 2000**

In August 1947 on independence, the system in frontier remained the same as in past. George Cunningham a former political agent was appointed as governor; former officials linked with Forward Policy were in key positions.. All tribes less Waziristan were friendly with the new dominion.<sup>xlv</sup> There were no less than 15 battalions deployed in Waziristan. In September 1947, Governor George Cunningham wrote very first note on future Frontier Policy.

*‘Military should be withdrawn from Waziristan in 1948, use of propaganda to make Pakistan and Islam as synonym in the eyes of tribes to pacify them, retention of allowances and khasasdr<sup>xlvi</sup> system... keep the Militia and Scouts in frontier.... affairs of tribal areas should be handled by the provincial assembly of province’<sup>xlvi</sup>*

The commander in chief{C-in-C} of Pakistan Army, Lieutenant General Frank Messervy, although agreed with George Cunningham, however he pointed out that Pakistan Army is understrength, under officered and as such cannot, even if occasion arises, face the tribal onslaught, thus advocated an early evacuation from Waziristan. The minister of interior, Abdur Rab Nishtar, also agreed with George Cunningham’s proposal, but differed that, affairs of tribal areas should be handled by the centre rather than the province; his logic was based upon the defence requirements of the country. Another issue was the frontier states of Chitral, Swat and Dir; whether to treat them as states or tribes..<sup>xlvi</sup>

On 2<sup>nd</sup> October 1947, the defence committee agreed on an early evacuation of military, starting from 1<sup>st</sup> November 1947, simultaneously the tribes were to be pacified, Fakir of Ipi was to be given a pardon alongwith his followers. The allowances of tribes were to be maintained and conditioned to their supporting defence cause of Pakistan. Prime Minister in principal agreed to vacating all of Waziristan frontier less Militia posts at Wanna, MiranShah, Boya, Dossali and at Thal. Similarly in Malakand Agency, the number of Levies were to be increased and military was to be pulled out. On the delicate question of the future of tribal areas, Prime Minister, raised the question whether to merge them with the province or to make a federation of the tribes; in the end it was agreed to keep the decision pending till suitable time.<sup>xlvi</sup> Quaid-i-Azam expressed



his apprehension that if Afghan army and airforce backed by tribes smashed through Pakistan Army, then India will also face the wrath. Quaid-i-Azam also highlighted the Russian backing of Afghanistan and asked for as much military equipment ; as United Kingdom can spare'.<sup>1</sup>

Quaid-i\_Azam, the founding father did not spell out policy on the frontier; rather through his gestures, speeches and instructions laid down the post- British policy on frontier. . Quaid-i-Azam made his first and only official tour of Frontier in April 1948; he toured Khyber Agency and shook hands with Afghan sentry at Torkahm. He also visited Dera Ismail Khan and Bannu, addressed public rallies, the high point was the grand Jirga at Peshawar on 17<sup>th</sup> April 1948. <sup>li</sup>

The leading maliks spoke, first the Mohmand 'We the independent Mohmand tribesmen ...we pledge our loyalty to Pakistan...our relations with Pakistan Government should remain as they had been...we want to retain old system...our allowances should be increased...we should be dealt by the centre and not the province'. Next was, Afridi '*We the independent tribes of Afridi pledge our loyalty...our allowances should be increased...we should be given more jobs in services...we should be dealt with by the centre and not the province...we lack education institutions...we have been exempted from income tax, it should continue*'. Mahsud, also pledged in similar pattern, they however highlighted that, vacating the frontier by army, have caused economic hardships on the tribe ' we had jobs, our men worked on the road repairs, small contracts were available'; they also pledged loyalty and reiterated the same, that they should be governed by the centre and not by province. Wazir were the last to address and reiterated the same. Turi, were also initially planned to address but later they were denied

the opportunity. Quaid-i-Azam, in his address expressed his thanks and praised the tribesmen, ‘ government will follow the existing system, your allowances will continue, provided you remain loyal to Pakistan’.<sup>lii</sup>

Thus it can be seen that the very first covenant made by Pakistan with tribes, revolved around, retaining their freedom and traditions, administering allowances, in lieu of the tribes maintaining their loyalty to the state. This system continued and was adhered by all successive rulers and constitutions. It was Prime Minister Zulfikar Bhutto who in 1973, initiated the very first constitutional reforms in tribal areas by segregating them into PATA and FATA and also creating Frontier Regions and raising new political agencies.<sup>liii</sup>

### **Tribal Militias – Peacekeepers of Frontier**

The very word Militia,<sup>liv</sup> at present has lost its original meaning and is quoted more in terms of anarchy. Militia and its concept was first postulated by Nicolai Machiavelli, who favoured , natives taking up arms in defence of their country rather than the military. In England, Militia was granted the umbrella of parliament, principally it was accorded the right to bear arms and carryout training in their own specific shires and counties.<sup>lv</sup> Later Militias were raised in Scotland and Ireland. However it was in America where the concept of Militia was formally more regulated, every individual of the town had to be a member of the local militia, ranks, organisation, pay and command structure was specified. In last century, all such Militias in United Kingdom and United States were reorganised into national guards and auxiliary forces but retaining the basic charter.

In North West Frontier , after annexation of Punjab, British raised Frontier Irregular Force(PIFFER) which was the very first

militia, but not in true sense. Later in 1878, the Khyber Jezailchi and in 1890 Levies were raised in Zhob, Gilgit, Malakand, Waziristan and Kurram. In 1901-1903, these Levies were upgraded to Militia {North Waziristan Militia, South Waziristan Militia, Kurram Militia, Chitral Scouts}.<sup>lvi</sup> A liaison headquarters was also raised in 1907 as Frontier Irregular Corps, the forerunner to present day Frontier Corps. In these militia the men were recruited from local tribes, with British army officers in command. In 1915, Frontier Constabulary was raised by upgrading the Border Military Police, which was raised in 1904. The constabulary differed from Militia, in terms of the charter, they were being commanded by British police officers; they also recruited from the same tribes. Constabulary was employed in the border belt between the political agencies and settled districts.

In 1922, after the Third Afghan War in which majority of Militia rebelled, less Chitral Scouts and Kurram Militia, they were reorganised into Scouts, therefore NWM{North Waziristan Militia} became Tochi Scouts and SWM{South Waziristan Militia} became South Waziristan Scouts. It was not merely a change of nomenclature but men from tribes other than the Wazir and Mahsud were also enrolled. Khassadar were introduced in this time period, they were recruited from native tribes, not provided with any weapons or ammunition and salary was paid through the tribes. Khassadar were and are the tribal police, managing local affairs and facilitating government officials only within their tribal territory. Thus each tribe has its own Khassadar force.

Lashkar, truly is the militia of tribes, it is the oldest form of tribal military power. Each tribesman is bound to carry arms, when ever his tribe requires him to do so. There is no pay or salary, each lashkari has to arrange his own weapon and ammunition and neither there is

any central command nor organisation. Clans join each other for a common cause, which is mostly a campaign against a rival tribe. Lashkar relies on loot and plunder apart from indemnity or payment from the defeated tribe as compensation which is divided among the Lashkar.

George Cunningham, highlighted that, he has resisted the moves of military to incorporate the militia into them. 'All these corps are of high quality, as good as anything in regular army; and ought to be maintained as they are'.<sup>lvii</sup> On Khassadar, he pointed out that scholarships have been initiated to induct tribesmen from early age into the khassadari. Cunningham further wrote, 'function of army on the NW Frontier is to oppose {if extreme necessity arises} the tribes as a whole; the function of the Scouts is to work daily with the tribes and to help them control their own individual malefactors'.<sup>lviii</sup> Pakistan, at that time was spending Rupees 10 Lakhs {one million} on allowances to tribes and overall spending Rupees 90 Million on the tribal areas; whereas the income of the province was merely 20 million Rupees.<sup>lix</sup> It was emphasised to the tribes, that Militia is part of them and not an occupation force, it is here to help you as brothers, in building schools and hospitals.

Presently, The Frontier Corps and Frontier Constabulary are under the Ministry of Interior and Narcotics and can be employed anywhere in Pakistan. Levies and Khassadar are controlled and paid by the Ministry of Frontier and States and are employed only in FATA and PATA. The pay structure is varied and so are allowances and privileges. None of these militias have a constitutional cover. Levies were constituted in 2012 through a regulation<sup>lx</sup>, whereby a detailed structure has since been drafted. Their charter of duties is wide, encompassing almost all duties as presently being performed

by the militia and constabulary. raids, ambushes, anti-smuggling, protection of roads, and general maintenance of peace. Thus these militias have overlapping duties under different ministries; a time tested hypothesis under which , misunderstanding often leads to friction among multiple organisations in the same geographical area.<sup>lxi</sup>

### **2300 hours.**

Return of Superman is on HBO and out side it is calm and apparently peaceful, weather is fine and it had rain rather light showers in the evening, there was no fire from both adversaries today. The Frontier Warfare was dubbed as a kind of gentleman's game and I think it is rather true to some extent at least from military point of view where the civilian casualties are a consideration although the other side is least pushed about this aspect. I awoke early in the morning and then again went to sleep and then woke up at 1000 hours and later cursed my self for wasting this time. Went to the political agent's office the same very official who came with us in the helicopter from Peshawar and was an ardent supporter of using force. In his office few locals were also sitting with their classic turbans but in my opinion none of them was a malik or man of influence this is what I gathered from their out fit but still I was bit excited to see the local inhabitants. PA was very courteous he rose and so did all others probably it is due to the fact that General is my course mate but I think the PA himself is quite a polished person. He gave me two books one is in Pushto a 800 page book written on Waziristan by a Laiq who works in the political agents office but resides in the city probably he will come tomorrow. I also noticed the 16 volumes of Gazetter of India with coloured maps in the PA's office. I was tempted to ask him about the opium and hasish usage

in the agency but wisely pend it off. Then I went to Commandant's office but he had gone for the debriefing, had a telephone chat with Tiger later I collected the data of Tochi Scouts on the USB from the clerk, I appreciate his initiative to run the generator for my work although I insisted that it can wait but he did so, this is the difference between army and Scouts, in army the clerk would have given me ten logics that why the generator cannot be run now in the absence of commandant and would have consulted at least three officers before giving me any answer. I called Havildar Shah and he came promptly again a sign of good regiment, we both went to clothing store first , I also noticed the three boards being painted with the name of Tochi Scouts soldiers who have died in last 100 years, I made a mental note to talk to commandant about this as from where he collected the names. The clothing store was opened promptly it is bit damp and not well organised. The equipment or rather the clothing is all new and nothing of any historical value. The Scouts have got a winter jacket, a sleeping bag / razzai, desert shoes. The socks are green in colour and woollen in nature so I inquired 'do you wear this in winter? And Shah replied that we wear it in all seasons, the clothing store keeper then showed the new socks which are again woollen but still bearable on this Shah was rather annoyed as to why it has not been issued so far. I was keen to see the whole equipment but that was all, where are the gloves and I was told that there are no gloves as part of the uniform, neither they have got any kit bag or big pack not even small pack is part of kit. The water bottle is made of plastic and without any discussion absolutely useless.

Later we both went to library and I started from the very first book and then for next four hours I went through each and every book anticipating something to find. What a pleasure it is to go through the complete library, Scouts libraries are bound to have

something rare in them for the reason that they remain stationed at one place and being remote they have rich collection of books and Tochi Scouts are no exception although the quantity is not that large. The Blackwood magazine of 1919, John Masters, Winston Churchill speeches and books, travels, geography, fiction and much more. Majority of the books were published and purchased in 1900s the oldest which I found dates back to 1890. Through these books one can mentally travel back in time all books of that era had conservative romance in them, two books caught my attention one deals with the confession of a gigolo and other that of an innkeeper. I was searching for Venus In India but it was not there however I hit the jack pot when I discovered the Standing Orders of the Corps published in 1926 that has lessened my task immensely, few secret documents dealing with the tribes were also found amidst a heap of old newspapers. I had my lunch at 1700 hours.

Later Major General Ali Abbass came to my room and we talked and behave like course mates and then went for a walk which we had to cut short as he had to go for his prayers. I sat and luckily Lt Col Suleman the 25 Cavalry commanding officer also came in and over a cup of tea we shared history. On my inquiry as to what kind of tactics the tanks are using here or more precisely what are the fears and dangers he or the tanks are facing. He updated me that one of his tank in South Waziristan was knocked out of action by the Talibans by hitting it with a SPG-9 rocket launcher, secondly the rebels have been too good in sniping they have shot two tank crew members on their head when they put up their head through the cupola thus now the crew keeps the tank sealed while operating, in another instance the rebels hit the front of the tank while it was turning on a hill track, the front of a tank has 220 mm of armour plating and it is not confirmed as what kind of weapon they employed. The other

deadly tactics of the rebels is to use improvised explosive device {IED} which accounts for over 75% of all casualties in military. For tanks the rebels use barrel fill with explosives and then burying it under the earth on the probable route of tanks, the bottom of tank has only 20 mm of armour thus it is deadly. The end result of all these or the cumulative effect is that the tanks now requires a bomb disposal team to walk ahead and infantry to provide protection from snipers. On my query of using the armour personnel carriers {APC} he disagreed with the idea of using them and he cited the Swat operations where an APC carrying 22 soldiers was hit by a rocket and all were killed to him an APC is a death capsule. This led to me saying then what are the chances of survival in a conventional warfare if these weapons cannot hold their ground in such a small scale conflict but his logics are valid that conventional warfare is conventional in nature and easy to fight as the rules of engagements are quite clear. What it means is that in a conventional warfare the soldier knows that he will not be slaughtered if he surrenders.

I had a walk with Ali Abbas and discussions ranged from the exceptional qualities of our late course mate Javed Akhtar who and Ali were regarded as two sides of one coin, he still rang his family on 25<sup>th</sup> April the day Javed died in an avalanche 23 years ago and on 30<sup>th</sup> March which happens to be Javed's birthday. Ali Abbass shared his war experiences of South Waziristan where his brigade became the pioneer in pushing back the rebels, Ali led the attack himself and confessed that it was pure luck that he survived the day as he stood on the banks of a ravine while the fire was coming from all direction and all his staff officers had hit the ground. Ali has a notion that he is lucky and a chosen one by the God and in support of his logic he has his military career to prove his point where he has been kind of unconventional in various tiers of command and staff, I personally



think his main strength is his innocence and simple way of life apart from sense of humour. The threat of locals attacking the Miranshah is quite real and he discussed the scenario with Colonel Wajahat and Brigadier Aqeel, he is quite right because even a handful of rebels can create panic and havoc in the camp and it is very much in their capability to strike at the divisional headquarters. I asked Ali do you have any weapons with you and he replied affirmative so I told him I in such scenario will be coming to his room.

There is a war going on but to me the things are not in orders, I don't see any camera surveillance of the area neither any watch dogs or horse patrolling and above all I am off the opinion that soldiers must fire at least 1000 rounds daily without any reason just to keep the upper hand. Officers do walk around in the evening without carrying any weapon and for that matter almost a quarter of soldiers strength at any given time are away from their weapons especially the officers. In classic terms every one must carry a weapon even while attending the call of nature because this is what frontier warfare is all about, unexpected chain of events and sheer brutality.

Every night I sleep in perpetual fear as to when the rocket will come and more dreadfully when a rebel is going to walk into my room I have nothing but an ashtray to hit back, at times I wonder how I am going to react to such situation, there is no escape route my only safety is in keeping the room pitch dark, I better get some knife.

## **Afghanistan**

has an area that equals to that of France, Holland, Belgium and Denmark combined or it is five times bigger than Vietnam ,it had a population of 17 million in 1979,which is 99% Muslim{90%

Sunni, 10 % Shia} and 85% of this population lived in rural area having a literacy rate of 10%, there are no railways in Afghanistan, 80% of area is mountainous, it had 19000 kilometres of road out of which only 25% was paved. Afghanistan shares a 2,348 Kilometres of border with Russia on west and north, 2,180 Kilometres with Pakistan on east, 820 kilometres with Iran in south and 73 Kilometres with China in north<sup>48</sup>

In April 1978 the Russian backed left wing coup in Afghanistan resulted in a wide spread social reforms that included education of women as well, soon the tribal society took up arms as it was against their customs. By 1979 the rebels had captured major town and even regular Afghan army started defecting, in line with 'Breznev doctrine' the Russian army came into Afghanistan on the request of state, internationally USA had lost Iran and all its listening posts against Russia thus a major military invasion from them in area was on card.

## **Soviet Union**

Russian 40<sup>th</sup> army with a strength of 81,800 troops having two motorized divisions, one airborne division, one air assault brigade, two motorised regiments, under the name of Limited Contingent of Soviet Forces {LCOS} all in all having over hundred combat units supported by requisite number of aircraft and gunships<sup>49</sup> crossed over the international border at 1200 GMT 25<sup>th</sup> December 1979 and was in position by mid January 1980, Its primary aim was to relieve the Afghan army of garrison duties and to push them and support them in fighting the insurgency.

---

48 Lester Grau and Michael Gress, eds, *The Soviet Afghan War, How a superpower fought and lost a war*, Kansas university press, 2002, p. 1-5

49 Ibid p. 17-18

## Mujahedeen

Mujahedeen is an Arabic word which means ‘one who fights in Allah’s way’<sup>50</sup> the religious authorities who wielded great power declared Jihad {holy war} against the soviets because they are infidels thus created a frenzy among population. The insurgency was already there against the afghan army by over a dozen parties who all were styled on linguistic, ethnic, sectarian and tribal hierarchy, majority of them were educated professionals like Hikmat Yar and Ahmed Shah Masood both university graduates and other like Moulvi Khalis and Rabbani were religious preachers. These mujahedeen were based on locality and village concept similar to ‘German hundred’ concept and had varying strength of 200-2000, majority were interested in looting and raiding. some of them were based in Pakistan for logistic reasons. Mujahedeen were unpaid religious volunteer fighters.

### First Phase 1980-1984

Initially mujahedeen continued their way of fighting as they were doing against the afghan army ie attacking in large number and holding the area and positions but soon they suffered heavy casualties and resorted to combat bands of 20-150 mujahedeen. The major area of interest was attacking the convoys by ambush. Mujahedeen were underarm ,in one instance in 1980 a group of ten mujahedeen ambush a ‘soviet convoy of over forty trucks by using two RPG-7 and three AK-47’<sup>51</sup> and same pattern was observed all over the country . Soviets responded with battalion size retaliation forces that would carry out the sweep of the area supported by gunship, The soviet analysis later revealed that their ‘inherent adherence to

---

50 Mohammad Yousaf and Mark Adkin *The Battle for Afghanistan ,the Soviets versus the Mujhadeen during the 1980s* ,{Pen and Sword,Yorkshire,2007},p,33

51 Ali Jalali and Lester Grau,*Afghan Guerrilla Warfare in the words of the Mujahideen fighters*,{MBI,Mminnesota,2001},p,5-6

conventional style of fighting and training was inadequate to answer the problem'<sup>52</sup>. In one instance a soviet battalion was ambushed while clearing a village as it failed to clear the flanks 'as the fire came from the top , we remained paralysed for minutes , none could give even order to fire as we all waited for senior officer to do so'<sup>53</sup>

This pattern of small level hit and run was most common and caused constant bleeding of the soviets.

Yet in Panjsher valley the pattern was different, mujahedeen under Masood held the valley and fought pitched battles with soviets, this 90 miles long valley is almost a hundred kilometres north of Kabul and controls the strategic Salang Highway, the life line of Russian forces. For eight years the soviets launched over nine major attacks all having excess of division plus forces supported by bombers, fighters and gunships yet they failed to overcome a group of not more than five thousand mujahedeen under Masood who came to be known as 'Lion Of Panjsher'.

By 1981 Pakistan was supporting the mujahedeen with arms, the Reagan administration was also active but no American weapons were provided rather Russian weapons from third source were given. China, Egypt, Italy, Britain, Saudi Arabia and UAE were providing the funds and weapons. 'In 1983 some 10,000 tons of ammunition was provided to guerrillas'<sup>54</sup>. Inter service Intelligence of Pakistan was the brain but mujahedeen were not yet united neither they had any centralised command or doctrine, it was fight for the sake of fight.

---

52 Lester and Gress *Soviet Afghan War*, p,19

53 Lester Grau, *The Bear went over the Mountains, Soviet Combat Tactics in Afghanistan*, {Frank Cass, London, 1996}, p,2-4

54 Yousaf, and Adkin *Battle for Afghanistan*, p.,86-98

Russians adopted themselves to the new realities by changing their tactics and now relied on all means. They bombed the villages to deny the food, they adopted scorched earth policy, they resorted to winning of heart and mind policy and even had a year of truce with Masood. Militarily they did not increased their strength .

## **Second phase 1985-1989**

In this phase the Russian underwent political changes back home and LCOS were given a year in field {1986} to either win or be ready for withdrawal thus intense heavy fighting was conducted. Both sides were now experienced and knew each other strength and weakness. In 1985 the Russians did increased their military strength but it was marginal. As one Russian officer wrote ‘By 1985 the mujahedeen became masters of stubbornly retaining highly defensible area and attacking our forces with ambushes’<sup>55</sup>.

Russian thus conducted one of the most fierce attacks in Panjsher valley and adopted new tactics of using gun ships for landing assault troops at heights, multiple axis attacks, and above all surprise. 1985 was the bloodiest in the whole campaign and balance was in soviet favour. Brigadier Yousaf admits ‘through out mid -1985... our attempts to take Khost had failed, we had suffered casualties, soviet high command had apparently gained initiative’<sup>56</sup>. The stinger shoulder fired missile changed the complexion of war, rarely has one weapon made such a drastic outcome to any war. Mujahedeen got stingers in 1986 and ‘shot down six gunships in one encounter’<sup>57</sup> this changed the scenario to some extent, moreover mujahedeen were now more disciplined and their attacks were now coordinated thanks to Pakistan who brokered a seven parties alliance among them and kept it intact despite in house feuds.

---

55 Lester Grau *Bear went over Mountains*, p 31-32.

56 Yousaf and Adkin ,*Battle for Afghanistan*,p,164-166

57 Ibid p.174-178

The Satakonda attack is a classic as it displays some flavour of the war, it took place in 1987 when almost a whole Russian division tried to open up Khost-Gardez road which was under mujhadeen control since 1980,in the words of one mujahedeen commander

we took hold of the two passes and had our positions on high ground, and laid three tier mine belts on the hair pin road.....yet Russians achieved surprise their gun ships landed air assault troops on high grounds and they bombed our villages,we were forced by enemy to move further up the mountains, we were dying of thirst ... we launched twelve prong attack and finally Russians left the valley and also heavy luggage. <sup>58</sup>

## **Analysis**

Soviet Union was a military super power and had a rich strategic military culture thus it is illogical to assume that they did not studied the Malay and Vietnam campaigns, rather in subsequent time period they employed all the lessons, they tried to win the heart and minds of people by giving amnesty, tried to split the mujahedeen by having peace accord for a year with Masood in Panjsher Valley, they used ruthless force as well ,isolated the mujahedeen from local population through food denial policy and scorched earth ,crops, orchids, oasis were bombed and sprayed. Anti personnel mines were an innovative idea whereby they instead of killing rather maimed the mujahedeen thus not only decimating fighting potential but also ensuring another couples of mujahedeen who will attend the injured are put out of action.

Russian from the start had few serious limitations, namely the conscription and under strength regiments coupled with poor

---

58 Jalali and Lester, *Afghan Guerrilla Warfare*,p,165-173.

training. The soldier had to serve for two years in army and mostly joined Afghanistan after few weeks without even having fired the weapons, their living conditions in Afghanistan were poor and many were 'caught selling their weapons to mujhadeen'<sup>59</sup>, most importantly the army as a whole was trained and cultured for a war in Europe and not for counterinsurgency in a mountainous terrain

The soviets tactics did evolved from the experience, they inducted mountain battalions later and initiated a mountain training school and things improved to an extent that by 1985 they were looking for a victory, it changed with the induction of stinger shoulder fired missile which negated their main tactical advantage of gun ships.

Soviets apparently had a limited political aim, they never attacked the bases inside Pakistan which were the mujahideen's strength and neither did they increased their force level drastically, as American did it in Vietnam where they had over half a million force for an area one fifth of Afghanistan.

Guerrillas {mujahideen} from the beginning were fighting on tribal issues of honour loyalty and religious zeal, their tactics were centuries old proven methods of guerrillas mainly ambush and raids which they conducted with brilliance and courage ,as early as 1980 they were hitting the convoys. The initial tactics of fighting in large numbers and conventional style soon proved fatal and they resorted to minor groups intent upon bleeding the enemy without any strategic aim, they till 1984 remained in factions and seldom supported each other rather at times they fought with each other, despite suffering heavy casualties from soviets in term of percentage of killed they remained in fighting spirits.

---

59 Ibid,p,371

They adopted their own drills and tactics ,like making mines from unexploded Russian bombs ,laying ambushes to the gun ships and attacking and defending strong points. Bombing urban areas, kidnapping Russians were also their salient points. Their main advantage was in being light weight and having almost negligible logistics tail ,they were excellent shots, scouts and courageous in nature, in brief they were modern day Spartans with a dash of zealots and Jewoh's convents but with a much higher tendency towards violence and ruthlessness.

## **Foreign Aid**

Mujahedeen were supported by the Pakistan ,America and other western allies ,the presence of having a strong base in Pakistan was of great help, they were provided with training and new weapons apart from medical and intelligence guidelines. Over 5 million refugees were in Pakistan. The pipe line of logistics ran very long and thus mujahedeen had to occupy and defend their forward bases in close vicinity to border ,the aid of heavy weapons from western also posed problems as it increased the pay load of a fighter, it was result of these two that mujahedeen suffered their heavy casualties in 1987 and 1988 in Khost province.

## **Conclusion**

The loss of Roman Legion in 'Teutoberger Forest'<sup>60</sup> cannot be attributed to lack of training on part of roman army ,similarly the Russian with drawl from Afghanistan was not a weakness of the army but it was the strength of the mujahedeen that resulted in this milestone .It was clash of two military strategic cultures, the

---

60 Hans Delbruck,*The Barbarian Invasion*, {Nebraska University Press,London,1990},p,69-95.



Russian's revolved around mass numbers ,technology, fire power, combine arm tactics and manoeuvre , centralised disciplined force, lack of individual initiative, and living in civilised environments. Soviets lost 13,833 men and other 43000 were wounded, they also lost 118 jets,333 helicopters,147 tanks,433 artillery pieces and 11,369 trucks<sup>61</sup>.

On the other hand was a primitive culture relying upon individual skill, courage, faith, mobility, swiftness, less logistic weight, individual initiative, pride and inherent military training .This was the major difference between two rivals and in the end primitive culture prevailed upon technology because terrain suited it and local population was behind the ideology which was based upon religion.

Mujahideen could have been defeated had Russian opted for a total war,a war without any morals or ethics based upon total utilisation of their force and fire power but in the end every war has one aim ;peace and that is never possible when total force is used,yet it cannot absolved the Russian forces from the fact that they failed to overcome the mujahideen thus it is pertinent to conclude that Russian forces were not geared for guerrilla warfare.

Both Mujahideen and Taliban took birth in Afghanistan which has an area of 252,830 square miles, population in 1979 was 17 million,99% of them are muslim however there are ancient bhuddist remains in Bamian province. literacy rate is less than 10%,majority of population almost 85% lives in rural area<sup>62</sup>. The social pattern of country is wholly male dominating, agriculture is scarce and major crops are opium and related products. Weapon is an ornament of every afghan. The tribal system is the working system based upon

---

61 Lester Grau ,*Bear went over Mountains*,p,xix

62 Lester and Michael ,ed, *The Soviet Afghan War how a superpower fought and lost*, {Kansas,University Press of Kansas, 2002}p 2-6

centuries old customs and tradition. Elders are respected and so are religious clergy. The Islamic population is divided into two main sects, 90% are sunni and other are shias, both have long history of feud and difference and are backed by Saudi Arabia and Iran. Another distinct feature of Afghan society is its division on linguistic and tribal basis. The Pashtuns are 50% of population and their tribes are mainly in eastern Afghanistan spilling over into neighbouring Pakistan, the northerners are Tajiks and southerners are shia and hazarajats. Afghanistan came into existence in 1747, founded by a pashtun Ahmed Shah Durrani, 'it was then merely a confederation of tribes and khanates'<sup>63</sup>.

Islam is in fact the binding spirit in Afghanistan, all traditions and cultural roots are inline with Islamic teachings which itself is based upon 'Koran' the divine book and 'sunna' the life of Muhammad the prophet of islam. There is a mosque in every village and at times more than two, all Islamic principles like annual pilgrimage to Mecca {once in a life} the annual one month fasting, slaughtering of animals, non interest trade, non alcohol consumption [although afghans were the biggest smugglers of alcohol in region during seventies], the most prominent feature of afghan society is the treatment of women according to Islamic principles which are veil, death for adultery, confinement to house and absence from public life.

The sunni and shias have bitter interpretation of islam and Koran, at times these differences can result in long bloody feuds which annually can claim over hundred of lives. Sunnis and shias seldom offer prayers together, the religious teacher 'Mullah' holds an important role in afghan society this title is attained after a talib {student} has studied religion for over twelve years

---

63 Kamal Matinuddin, *The Taliban phenomenon*, {Oxford, Karachi, 1998} p 1

## *Mujhadeen, The Holy Warriors*

After the April 1978 marxist revolution in Afghanistan over 150 mullahs were confined and imprisoned and after their release these fled to Pakistan and declared 'jihad'<sup>64</sup> the holy war against the communists, many followers joined them and after the soviet invasion ,the western and Pakistani interest in overthrowing the soviets resulted in using this religious 'jihad' to rally the muslim population of not only Afghanistan but also of entire Islamic world ,in Islamic history the people who fought early wars of Islam are also called mujahed .Thus resistance to soviet became a religious war , it was the battle cry and it worked because soon arabs and other muslims from all over the world started pouring into Pakistan to fight the jihad.

These mujahideen were a blend of tribes,farmers and university students. Two most prominent mujahideen leaders Gul Badin Hikmatyar and Ahmed Shah Masooud were both graduates of Kabul University and many other leaders were either tribal patriarch or moderate religious men like Rabbani and Sayyaf. The difference between them as noted by Brigadier Yousaf was 'moderate can accept a woman in trouser but not in mini skirt where as a fundamentalist cannot'<sup>65</sup>.

Over five million people<sup>66</sup> migrated from Afghanistan to Pakistan ,which by itself is not unusual as majority of these had blood ties in the neighbouring tribes. There was a life that was going on in the camps, which were mainly tents and mud houses inhabited by women ,children and elders. The education which

---

64 Ibid p,21

65 Muhammad Yousaf and Mark Adkin,*The Battle for Afghanistan*, {Yorkshire, Pen and Sword,2007} p. 40

66 Ahmed Rashid *Descent into Chaos* {London,Penguin,2008} p. 8

these children received was only religious ,they were raised and groomed for only one purpose to fight, thus a child who was five years old when war broke out in 1979 was fifteen when it ended and thoroughly indoctrinated in religious teaching of war, hate for infidels, and conservatism about women. these seminaries are part of culture and also necessity ,mainly funded by the rich gulf states who prefer having their own brand of sunni islam being spread. The religious seminaries called madreesah is an integral part of culture, they provide free education to boys and it consist of only about religion.in 1992 there were over 100 deeni madrasahs in Pakistan with over 30,000 students<sup>67</sup>.

After the soviet with drawl on 15<sup>th</sup> February the afghan government held the fort and defied the mujhadeen attacks. The most notable feature was the inter party fighting among the mujahedeen, in one instance the Hikmat yar group ambushed Masood's commanders and killed over a dozen ,in retaliation Masood hunted them and hanged them publicly<sup>68</sup>. Pakistan was actively supporting the mujahedeen in a vain hope to have a consolidated control over Afghanistan. The mujhaadeen finally took control of Kabul but it was the northern group of uzbecks who were in control and not the pashtuns. The country was in civil war and war lords took control of varying cities looting, violence and killing was common, that was the state when the Taliban emerged. Thus mujhadeen failed as rulers to provide safety and security to people and country was in anarchy with independent war lords having own control of cities.

### **Rise of Taliban**

One day in October 1994 there was an incident of sodomy in

---

67 Kamal *Taliban Phenomenon* , pp. 14-16

68 Stephen Tanner *Afghanistan a military history*, {Massachusetts, Da Capro, 2003} p. 272

Kandahar {not unusual} and one Mullah Omar a 39 years old jihad veteran ,who had lost one eye against soviets and wounded couple of times and was passing his time by running a deeni madreeseh having 30-40 taliban rushed to the scene along with them and few other comrades, he took hold of situation and from there onwards they within days got control of Kandhar and restored peace<sup>69</sup>. Pakistan also helped them as they escorted their thirty trucks convoy safely through the southern Afghanistan, Taliban also captured over 180000 AK-47 rifles from Spinboldack area. Taliban were young Afghans of pashtun ethnic back ground and sunni by faith ,they were mainly the students of seminaries in Pakistan and in border area, in fact they were the war orphans of jihad who were job less had nothing to look for future and engraved with Islamic values, thus they became the van guard and other groups started following them. Mullah Omar himself stated ‘we took up arms to achieve the aims of the afghan jihad and save our people from further suffering at the hands of the so called mujahdeen’<sup>70</sup> the mujahedeen also joined them as the motto of this movement was restoration of peace in Afghanistan and Islamic values. A total of over 35000 talibans from Pakistan base seminaries joined them majority of them were pashtuns<sup>71</sup>. After taking over Kandhar the Taliban issued decree that put an end to the unrest and lawlessness ,people were ordered to hand over their weapons something unheard of in Afghanistan but it was implemented. It was at this time that they carried out public stoning of adulterers and cutting hands of thieves, they also banned the women from coming into open without full veil. All these acts were in true tradition of islam, Mullah Omar and his colleagues all lived in same mud houses and conducted their chores while sitting

---

69 Peter Marsden, *The Taliban, War ,Religion and new order*, {Karachi,Oxford,1998}, p. 43.

70 Rashid, *Taliban*, p. 23.

71 Kamal,*Taliban*,p 16

on floor which is an Islamic and afghan tradition thus they became a symbol of Islamic renaissance in its purest form ,this is what attracted the Taliban of Pakistan and compelled other mujahideen groups to surrender and join their ranks. Not all mujahideen groups did this and Taliban had to fight pitched battles like in Heerat in 1995. This was a major deviation from the past war as Taliban did not resort to guerrilla warfare rather preferred open attacks.

In 1995 Taliban struck against Hikmat Yar and forced him out of Afghanistan and also clashed against the Shiites Hazaras and on 19<sup>th</sup> March 1995 Taliban came face to face against the Lion Of Panjsher Massoud who gave them first taste of defeat but Taliban retaliated and finally capturing Kabul in September 1996 although the Masooud and Hikmat Yar had united against them. From this point onwards they constantly remained engaged in a war with the northern people of Afghanistan and attempted to capture Mazar Shariff thus till the American invasion of Afghanistan the Taliban were never really in command of Afghanistan ,they had all the country except the Panjshir Valley.

Taliban ideology was very simple. adherence to Islamic teaching of Koran and peace in Afghanistan, they had no political agenda and neither they were working for any country although by virtue of religious affiliation they were close to sunni Pakistan and Saudi Arabia than the shia Iran. The deep rooted conflict between sunni and shias resulted in bitter opposition to Taliban in southern Afghanistan.

Taliban rule was unique because they were living in seventh century Arabia and simulating the life of early caliphs and teaching of prophet coupled with the tradition and customs of afghan. They had no diplomatic ties with any state other than Pakistan and Saudi Arabia, they had no embassy no foreign policy or political agenda,

it was the fourteen hundred years old religious book Koran which was their manifesto and everything had to be done according to it ,since Koran states that woman are inferior to men thus they are, as Koran states the punishment of adultery is public stoning thus it has to be like this. ‘the woman mother of seven has confessed killing her husband ,sentence of death up held by three courts....she was shot in head in front of 20,000 crowd’<sup>72</sup>. In other instance women accused of adultery was stoned to death publicly, thieves hands were cut in public and Taliban for the first time in Afghan history banned opium cultivation

These acts were looked with disdain in civilised world but were applauded in Islamic world especially in neighbouring Pakistan apart from the fundamentalist Saudi Arabia. The world took first serious notice of Taliban when in 2001 they decided to destroy the thousand years old Bhudda carving in Bamian province<sup>73</sup>.No amount of pressure could sway them from this ,neither offer of money nor threat of force. Pakistani president General Musharraf admits in autobiography, that he tried hard to convince the Taliban but he refused, even Saudi crown prince went to Kandhar to meet Omar,who met him in a mud house sitting on a floor and when prince accused him of lying he simply rushed out and later came back drenched in water ,and said I have just poured cold water over my head to cool myself,had you not been my guest I would have done something to you.

Taliban might have been still in power had not the 9/11 event took place, resultantly whole world became paranoid with the Osama and Al-Qaeeda and both were reportedly in Afghanistan. Any other regime in world would have buckled under the dire straits but Taliban

---

72 Jason Burke *Al-Qaeeda* {London,Penguin,2004} p.117.

73 Pervez Musharraf, *In The Line of Fire*, {London,Simon & Schuster,2006} pp. 214-215.

were not normal and they simply refused to even acknowledge their existence and later admitted that even if Osama is here we will not hand over him because under afghan tradition he is our guest and has seek protection and we will abide with our tradition and USA must provide the evidence and later even agreed to handing over Osama to be tried by an international court provided evidence is given of his involvement in terrorism. It is worth recording that Afghanistan was attacked by over seventy American cruise missiles in August 1998 on alleged AlQaeda bases for their role in bombing USA embassies in Kenya and Tanzania a month early<sup>74</sup>

American forces started bombing Afghanistan from 7<sup>th</sup> October 2001<sup>75</sup> and on 19<sup>th</sup> October 2001 the first ever US marine operation against Taliban was launched at Kandhar ,on 21<sup>st</sup> October American started bombing Taliban front line soldiers facing against northern alliance in the north of kabul this bombing reached its crescendo on 5<sup>th</sup> November when American used daisy cutter bombs,Kabul fell to northern alliance on 12<sup>th</sup> november and on 26<sup>th</sup> November 2001the first batch of American Marines landed at Kabul and on 02 December 2001 the operation Anaconda was launched to capture Alqaeda,,neither Osama has been found and nor Al Qaeda has been defeated rather their has been an increase in AlQaeda attacks now directed against the NATO countries like Spain{Madrid}UK {London} and Pakistan who is not a NATO member but an active member of the alliance. Mullah Omar also escaped allegedly on a Honda motor cycle.

### *Analysis of Taliban and Mujhadeen*

Mujhadeen and Taliban are two sides of one coin, they share same culture, language, heritage, religion, and history. Mujhadeen

<sup>74</sup> Rashid *Taliban*, p135

<sup>75</sup> Tanner ,*Afghanistan*,pp 296-298



were created artificially to fight a super power which they already were fighting as isolated individual tribes, parties and groups basing upon their centuries old traditions .They were based in Pakistan ,they were funded by the Western countries and Gulf states, they were trained and indoctrinated by the religious and political groups based in Pakistan. Even the families of all these mujhadeen fighters and all other people who migrated from Afghanistan were given the religious meaning of mujahedeen .Yet these mujhadeen were not hardliner as Taliban. The mujhadeen were too diversified in culture. The northern Uzbeks in 1992 had over 1800 girls<sup>76</sup> studying in Balkh University the only operational university of Afghanistan. Mujhadeen were united as long as their interests were there however the inbuilt tribal feuds were too high and rigid to be overcome by them thus they remain loggerhead moreover the interest of Pakistan in having pashtun based power as opposed to Uzbek base was another factor of constant civil war.

Taliban were an independent idealistic movement which was not based upon tribal code but on that unifying element of religion however since the religion itself is divided into sects thus Taliban pursued their own sect of sunni islam which the 90% of Afghans followed and since they were so deep rooted into religion that they saw the other sects as non muslims and acted according to the teaching of their own sect that is the reason of their killing over 6000 hazarajats shittes in Mazar Shariff battle of July 1998 and it should also be noted that almost 3000 Taliban were also killed by the other sect in a battle in the same city a year ago. This religious difference also put Taliban against the shia based Iran whom majority of sunni muslims consider almost non Islamic in nature.

Militarily Taliban differ from mujahadeen ,because unlike them

---

76 Rashid *Taliban* p52

taliban failed to offer a stiff resistance to American forces. Taliban had to fight against their countrymen more than the Mujahadeen. The major reason lies in the fact that where as the Mujahadeen call was nationalistic the Taliban cause was revolving around the religion. The arab connection of Osama with Taliban is not new<sup>77</sup>, Osama fought with mujahadeen in 1988 and funded them it was sheer coincidence that when he returned from Sudan in 1995-6 the Taliban were on the surge and their ideology was in line with his ie the spread of Islam and practical application of Muhammad's teaching.

Both mujahedden and Taliban were backed by the Pakistan military in covert and overt way, Pakistan had strategic interest in the region and over 40 million pashtuns are living in Pakistan thus it always welcomes a pashtun hold of Afghanistan, taliban remained under Pakistan influence for a short time but later they carved their own policy which in any case was in line with Saudi and Pakistani thinking.

Taliban had a consistency in their ideology, they for the first time were able to eradicate the opium cultivation and also to disarm the society.

### *Conclusion*

As Nazis cannot be separated from the Germans of WW1 or a Stalinist cannot be differentiate from a Leninist ,similarly Taliban cannot be differed from Mujahadeen, they were part of them, yet they revolted against them because of mujhadeen's inter fighting and lack of security but it all happened without any preconceived plan.. They were as militarily sharp as the Mujahadeen thus they avoided the direct confrontation with American forces and retreated

<sup>77</sup> Jason Burke, Al-Qaeda, {London,Penguin,2004} p.134.

to mountains, Taliban are an ideology which is based upon religion so was the mujahadeen's but the difference lies in the fact where mujahadeen were to fight a foreign aggressor the Taliban were to reconstruct the society and get rid of all vices and this message has spread to the east, into Pakistan where there tribal brethren and religious seminaries are located and they have started a reign of suicide bombing in Pakistan, starting a similar movement in Swat area, emphasising upon the dress code and role of women ,banning all music and video shops. Thus Taliban ideology is more deep rooted than the ideology of Mujahadeen which in fact promised the same but never got the chance to implement this, furthermore Mujahadeen were too linguistic and tribally divided than these Talibans. Another characteristic of Taliban is the poor background of their entire leadership and their being disabled in one form or the other thus their appeal to the poor muslim masses is now more and finally Taliban consider and legitimise their actions in society also as jihad therefore they are mujahadeen as well.

*‘All men dream but not equally, those who dream by night in the dusty recesses of their minds wake in the day to find that it was vanity, but the dreamers of the day are dangerous men, for they may act their dreams with open eyes, to make it possible.’*

Colonel T.E. Lawrence *Seven Pillars of Wisdom*, p. 7

## **Enduring Freedom**

is the code name of the ongoing operation of America against the terrorist who launched the successful and most lethal attack on American soil in its living memory and also in written history. Repercussions had to be there and they had to be quick and a lesson for all to know . ‘We may be the only one left in this war, that’s ok

with me , we are Americans' President George Bush after the attacks commented, this much Bush was sure that is Osama Bin laden and his Al-Qaeeda behind this attack but he did not had the proof and neither he needed one at this time, he wanted him out dead or alive. Osama was in Afghanistan a land locked country ,barren, desolate about the size of Bush home state Texas. Afghan are to some historians the 12<sup>th</sup> lost tribe of Moses. Present day Afghanistan took birth as an after shoot of Great Game when British after suffering the most devastating defeat in military history when only one survived out of a force of 16000 in 1839 and later again suffering similar fate in 1879 finally relinquished their claim and demarcated the Indian subcontinent into Afghanistan and British India with a 'Durand Line' running on the crest of mountains, naturally tribes never accepted and neither respected it.

There are twelve major tribes who lived on the eastern border more famous are Afridis, Khattaks, Shinwaris, Mohmand, Mahsuds, Wazirs and Orakzai. They are pashtun by ethnicity and these pashtuns are about 20 million in number {9 million in Afghanistan and other in Pakistan} the other major ethnic group of Afghanistan are the northern tribes who are Uzbek and, Tajik they differ in appearance from pashtun as they have more mongol blood line, the binding factor is the religion Islam in which they are again having varying difference, the northerners having moderate view and pashtuns having extremist view point. Soviet Union tried to cultivate Marxist ideas in Afghanistan in 1979 and later invaded as well with over 85000 troops but retreated after eight years and having suffered 55000 casualties thanks mainly to American military aid to tenacious afghans and their brethren Arabs mujahedeen for whom it was a religious war the Jihad. After soviet departure the tribes fought among each other and finally in 1994

the student 'Taliban' revolution took place in which the veteran front line Mujahedeen who were now mainly spending life in an anarchic environments by teaching religion to orphans' of the war in the Pashtun tribes led by one eyed Mullah Omar of Kandhar and his close mujahedeen who almost all had lost either a leg or hand in Jihad started the drive and within three months they virtually had the half of Afghanistan under their control. And by 2001 were in control of whole except a valley under northern tribe.

Laden is probably the most romantic rebel, guerrilla, terrorist of all time, he seems to be reincarnation of 12<sup>th</sup> century Hasan bin Sabah and his assassins. Laden was twenty six and a billionaire when he came to Peshawar from Saudi Arabia {the way Che Guerra went to Bolivia} and soon Osama became the most fierce fighter followed maniacally especially by his Arabs and other Mujahedeen's. After the war Osama soon became disillusioned with Afghan civil war and also of Saudi royal family and settled in Yemen from where he conducted a series of spectacular attacks on American embassies in Kenya and Tanzania in 1998 and than migrated to Afghanistan now under Taliban.

Mullah Omar demanded a proof from Bush later however Omar agreed to put Osama on an open court of international justice, both demand rejected by Bush. Between 11<sup>th</sup> September- 7<sup>th</sup> October 2001 the Central Command of America {Centcom} under whose area of operation Afghanistan falls carried out all appreciation and put forward three plans, the first one calls for destruction through air power only but finally the presence of ground troops and destruction using air power was approved.

Secretary of Defence Rumsfield admitted 'the hard fact was that

America could not operate in Afghanistan without having allies'

The fact was Afghanistan was not a country at all, there were no target to be hit as in conventional states or as in Iraq. President Bush remarked 'whats the fun in hitting a \$ 10 tent with \$ 200 million worth cruise missile'. There was no electricity, command and control centres, air defence weapons, telecommunication etc what little was there it was not affecting anything ,what was present on ground were 60,000 Taliban ,a thousand of Osama Arab warriors and potential million pasthuns in tribes all ready to wage another war.

A quick glance through history confirmed Americans that Afghanistan is not a push over. All neighbouring countries were coerced like Uzbekistan, Kazakhstan and Pakistan into giving bases and all other support for which American paid and wrote off old loans. This is where a new way of warfare in American military history took birth. instead of simply landing the troops in Afghanistan or bombing it into rubble the Americans paid the northern alliance money to wage war against the talibans with their{USA}aerial support. It was a unique war where the first Americans to land were Central intelligence Agency field operatives followed by the special operation forces whose main task was to guide the American bombers to the target with the help of laser guided equipment. By 23<sup>rd</sup> December 2001 Kabul was captured by the Northern Alliance and soon American forces started landing in Afghanistan in numbers. Taliban simply fled to their stronghold in Kandhar and took refuge in mountains with Americans following hot on their heels supported by British and Northern Tribes. The Taliban and the wanted Laden escaped through the mountains towards the east and into eastern tribes of Pakistan. Some pitched battles and operations took place like 'Operation Anaconda' and heavy bombing in Tora Bora mountains.

Pakistan was coerced into deploying its almost two corps along the border to stop the Taliban fleeing and from this point onwards an intricate and delicate situation took birth. Pakistan denied Americans right to cross into its territory in hot pursuit of Taliban and rather took it self to hunt them down but Americans were not satisfied with this arrangements yet they conceded to Pakistan, for an outsider it looks extremely enigmatic that the biggest super power on god's earth is unable to chase the talibans and hunt them down in primitive mountains. The answer lies in following.

Pakistan is a nuclear state with a population of over 150 million with 97% Muslim and over 3 million Christians , the biggest in an Islamic country, the country due to prolong military rules have become a nursery of radical Islam and ongoing guerrilla movement in Kashmir against India finally resulted in Indians amassing their forces on border in 2002 for a showdown with Pakistan. As soon as American bombing campaign started in Afghanistan there were wide spread mass demonstration in Pakistan although not as violent as expected. USA had the following option ,either to launch a ground operation from Afghanistan onto the tribal area and in ensuing expect high casualties, launch an air campaign for a prolong period during which the population might revolt against the existing friendly regime and finally USA could have allowed the India to launch the attack from the east and simultaneously itself launch attack on the tribes. But all these had catastrophic consequences thus USA adopted the same strategy as they adopted in initial routing of Taliban, they simply paid Pakistan to wage their war and simultaneously put the tribal area under aerial observation and conducted joint operations with Pakistan army. Americans trained Pakistan army into night vision fighting by providing helicopters {almost 40 Bell 412 and 20 cobras} and later

training them in USA as well. New militia force was raised with American funding, intelligence was also shared.

Between 2002-2006 almost three hundred hard core Al-Qaeeda operatives have been arrested in Pakistan and over 80% of all wanted persons have been arrested in Pakistan by USA but all this has come at a very high price. From 2002 the attacks on Christian community started increasing in which church and schools were targeted, all foreign national became a target of suicide or kidnap attempts. In June 2002 eleven French engineers were killed in suicide attack and later American journalist Daniel pearl was butchered, Pakistan army itself became target of suicide attacks and one three star general has been killed and other has been injured apart from over 200 other all ranks killed in various attacks. A series of bomb and suicide attacks virtually paralysed the country and brought it to anarchy. The public support especially in tribal areas started increasing for the talibans, this was mainly due to the religious ties and also as an reaction of American operation in the tribal area, the Americans at times as in 2003 Bajour area operated and fired missile on suspected hideouts of Taliban in Pakistan territory which killed over a dozen civilian population.

America thus found itself in a catch-22 situation ,if they attack on suspected habitats in tribal area than they can face high casualties of their own troops and a possible repercussion and public lashing from Pakistan and if it goes unchecked than a coup or anarchy can take place, on the other hand if they simply allow Pakistan Army to carry out operation inside Pakistan on American intelligence than the results might take time, one additional factor was that almost all Al-Qaeeda members got underground in the major cities. Thus America opted for a combination of both ,it does not operate within



Pakistan territory yet it violates airspace as and when required and it also allows Pakistan army and intelligence agencies to operate at their own.

*Winning Heart and Mind.* In October 2005 the Northern Areas of Pakistan were hit by a massive earthquake and Americans led the way in the biggest helicopter rescue relief operation in the history 'Operation Lifeline'. In same year the Swat area of Pakistan underwent a radical change when people started an armed campaign to have Islamic laws in their territory and called themselves as 'Taliban' soon it became a full fledged armed resistance and employed a corps of Pakistan army. In December 2007 the Pakistan underwent a shock when twice premier Benazir Bhutto was assassinated in a political rally by hardliners, for next three days there was no writ of state in Pakistan, later in elections the ex army chief and president Musharraf was defeated in parliamentary elections and soon democracy return to power. This presented new dilemma to USA as although it champions democracy yet it believes in rhetoric in this aspect as far as Islamic states are concerned because in true democratic state it is the will of people that has to be prevailed and people are generally against American policy. In 2009 the Pakistan made a compromise with the Taliban in the Swat area which is highly criticised in America.

*Conclusion.* America's war against terror has become a war against tribes of Pashtuns of Hindu Kush and apparently there seems to be no immediate remedy for this for the reason that there is a difference between extremism and terrorism as far as Islamic ideology is concerned. Pakistan the key player in this war has its own limitations, and Pakistan does affect the region's stability in a more drastic manner than the Iraq or Iran. The Chinese factor will play a key role and USA might have to face the Chinese if

it decides to carry out any intervention in Pakistan. On the other hand the present state of affairs is not satisfactory from American perspective who desires and demand a more aggressive policy from Pakistan towards the Talibans. The Pakistan dilemma is that it cannot undertake operation against an ideology that is wide spreading along its western borders, it is already engaged in such counter insurgency operation since December 2001 and have suffered heavy casualties in tribal areas. Democracy has its own logics and one must respect them. Pakistan is now most volatile area in world ,the recent terrorist attacks in Mumbai and Lahore have again brought the fact into light that Al-Qaeeda and its sympathisers simply want a confrontation in the region, their aim and goal is that there should be a war involving Pakistan and they know any war now will be a nuclear one and they hope by this they will bring anarchy into Pakistan as war has brought it in Afghanistan and thus they will have more wider audience for their call. One major answer to all this is to rebuild Pakistan and all that money which America will be spending in any future conflict in the region should now be spend on economic and educational uplift, rather than spending later on rebuilding and most importantly the democratic institutions in Pakistan shall be protected at all cost

### **Sunday day 7<sup>th</sup>**

It is 1000 hours and I am still lying on the bed thinking about how to write the history of this corps I better move fast. In last two days nothing much has happened, let me go backward. Yesterday there was a brunch for the out going political agent Mr Yahya Akhund, it was lavish and well organised the dinning hall was well decorated I was invited through a card and it is almost after three years that I have been invited in such a manner I am grateful to Colonel Wajahat for this I was made to sit on the head table ith the General Ali. The discussion among all of them on the table was

about the operations with regular jokes and remarks about the last night drill, the over all atmosphere was very informal rather too informal, there seems that these army officers have nothing else to talk about other than the operations, well the point to bring home is that it is normal but then these discussions must take place in a more formal manner in the office which they had and on dinning table the subjects must vary otherwise the orders and instructions lost their impact, Wajahat seems to be the only officer who refrained in getting into the discussion.

I then spent some time in the library with Colonel Wajahat later on since my computer had crashed thus I was mentally worried and made a request to Captain shoaib for a person to have a look which he promptly did. Tochi Scouts are looking after me the way a newly wed groom is looked after in the bride's home, they are concerned about my comfort my food the cigarettes that I smoke , it is this pressure that I am feeling lest I do something wrong which I am bound to do sooner or later.

In the evening I went to a walk with M. Shah I went to his barrack , the establishment branch has mixed gathering of all qaums otherwise all other live collectively in a barrack with their qaum members. Shah treated me with tea and cake pieces, the barracks were neat and clean and had an aroma as well quite a change from the normal military barracks. There were no posters or girlie pictures but still it had a unique touch of the area, the floor had the carpet and two pillows were placed I took off my shoes as per tradition. The bed sheet of a khattak havildar was quite colourful . Myself and Shah then walked towards the western side of the airfield, first I noticed a stable where they have mules and donkeys and no horses, there were two young very young mules having a playful time running around and kicking in the air. We went through

the wheat fields which is now under the process of being cutting and wrapping. Major General Ali Abbass also went on an inspection of the posts inside the camp with an entourage of vehicles he stopped and we had a chat. Later Shah asked me about the General and I told him we are course mates and Ali is a fine general, in any case Ali enjoys a very good reputation mainly because of his white flowing beard which instantly commands respect in these environments. The firing range post is made of mud all on self help basis it over looks the road, through the binocular I observed the opposite movement, Shah warned me to watch for my head as the snipers can hit and fire at any time. On the road was normal vehicular traffic a godown was unloading the trucks mainly carrying food sacks probably the wheat, two men were sitting idle in a corner, an old man walked quite close to the post, dosen of boys were playing cricket. The area in front of the post is levelled and raised with mud and barbed wires are erected, the distance of post to the road is approximately 100 metres , inside the post which itself comprises of two observation towers there were three rocket propelled grenades and one light machine gun apart from standard small machine gun, on my question I got the reply from that last time post came under fire was six years ago thus it is mainly the post opposite the bazar which is hot and receives regular rockets from talibans.

Myself and Shah then walk through the fields and Shah highlighted that it was Commandant faqir hussain who converted this barren land into present day fields and planted all these fruit trees it is a mamooth task , hats off to Colonel Faqir for such splendid work because all around now are fruit trees and agricultural land, one tube well was inaugurated by the governor in 2005 in an old building. Batair are favourite pets of Scouts and in the field I saw nets being erected , Shah told me that it is for cathing Batair, quite amazing that amidst all this chaos the Batair bazi is on. We walked

on the runway, there are two runways one is 32 which is the main and concrete but I noticed that the rubber used for bonding the slabs is coming out and it can cause damage to the aircraft, previously there used to be two commercial flights run by the Peshawar Flying Club from Miranshah. I thought of Lawrence of Arabia and tried to figure out where he lived and I am sure he walked through these fields enjoying the scenic beauty which is sprinkled with ever present fear of a bullet coming through.

Later we both went to the stables and came to know that the two young mules are in fact donkeys born only a fortnight ago. The mules were previously utilised for load carrying and supply of water to the posts they are rather under utilised now because of environments, on my inquiry I came to know that not much of horses are under the use of locals.

We later climbed to the air traffic control tower which is the oldest building of the garrison, it is three storeyed high with narrow wooden stairs, a good mannered signaller by the name of Pervez was there he is quite decent and initially I thought he is an officer or from air force. He was busy on telephone trying to find if any aircraft of ours is flying in the area because a unit has inquired in Razmak about because they have heard the sound and Javed at his own gave them the orders to fire and later started checking from various airfields but there was no flight plan of any friendly aircraft.

I asked Shah to get some hashish for me and now lets see what happens ,is he going to report about me, it will be a test of the Scouts culture and mind set. I am quite keen to see the end result, if he tells the commandant it will be quite embarrassing because in all probability the commandant will say ‘ sir you should have told me’.

At night there was dinner for the PA from the division again a well organised affair good food, Russian salad, roast beef, mutton, pulao and then a real sweet fruit custard followed by green tea in the lawn. Ali made a very good speech for the PA highlighting how vital is the PA for the success of operations and acknowledging the limitation of army officers in the understanding of native culture, it is not every day that an army general is so candid and forthright in lavishing praise to a civilian. After dinner myself and Ali had a walk in the lawn for well over an hour in which I tried to understand the operation from the beginning.

Ali Abbas on promotion in 2007 was initially marked for 57 infantry brigade but as the luck would have it he landed in another brigade where he reported at night put his family in a guest room and next morning left Okara with the brigade for Taank.

### **Sunday Day 7th, 2330 hours.**

Finally Havildar Shah or shall I say Airman Shah alias Colonel T. E. Lawrence has finally brought a good quality of hashish good enough for two cigarettes , I had one a few minutes ago and few seconds ago a rocket has been fired presumably from our worthy tribesmen and instantly one round of artillery has been our answer, in the evening when I went for a walk with Shah , I picked him up from his barrack where he was busy playing Ludo, he looked tired in the afternoon when he came to my room I had nothing special to say to him other than to inquire about the hashish because he had left the map sheets yesterday when I was at dinner but where was the stuff but I did not had the courage to ask him so we just made a plan to go for walk after the prayers which are at 1645 hours. We just at the Tochi stadium stairs , Shah had already told

me that this stadium which had the plaque of 1957 was in two tier of grounds one higher than the other but Commandant Faqir made it levelled, it was a mammoth task almost twenty trolleys of mud was brought for this purpose. I just ask him general things whether they have fights among themselves since so many qaums live here and although it is rare yet it happens, even in Tochi Scouts there was one Subedar ...who ran amock and became a rebel in 1941. But Shah said no it has never happened, I asked do you Scouts marry the local girls, Shah did not understood me correctly and said 'yes we do attend local marriage parties, in the past the influential and rich people used to invite the officers and soldiers also' but on my explaining him the purpose he said 'no, we Pathan do marry among our own qaum, if there is no girl in the family then in the qaum but not outside'. He himself offered to go for a walk and volunteered to offer the prayers at the post it has something to do with the fact that the call for prayers went at 1715 hours and he was bit embarrassed for being wrong in the times. We walked through the wheat fields which have stony wide enough for vehicular traffic pathways with trees at regular paces. While walking I normally tells him the age of the trees and other buildings and sometimes he corrects me and updates on the actual dates. You know sahiba that colonel ghulam hussain did lot of work he quipped when I really praised the work done. There was wheat lying every where, Scouts were not very happy with him because he made them do lot of work, I laughed and said Shah this is something very peculiar about military that no one likes to work more than what he is doing before but than you can see the rewards all around you. He nodded and said this is what every one thinks now. We reached the post and enroute I joked to him that we are being watched by the snipers and anytime he can fire if he so desires so lets thus move with the cover of the trees so as to make him think and he agreed. There is a tank of 25 Cavalry

placed on a rampart overlooking the whole of town the Sowar was taking a bath with the help of trailer water we kept on walking forward. The post is classic in nature made of mud and nothing but mud and wood for roof beams. I stood at the wall and had a look at the people and things which I donot have a proper word to explain shall I say my people, my country men or miscreants and talibans or tribesmen, Waziri or Tauri or Mahsud. It is the junction of the town and a fleet of Toyota taxis were parked alongwith the two trucks. A motorcycle rickshah similar to quin chi of Punjab but different also moved around without much of noise. Three young men walked and the Scout sentry shouted and waved to them so did the Subedar of Tochi Scouts the post commander and they promptly obeyed they were without any weapons. I had the binoculars with me courtesy of Subedar ..... This was the junction of the road coming from north and town starts from here. In front was the boys school and girls college both under control and occupation of tribesmen , I could see clothes hanging out and with more focus I thought I could see women clothing but they were male apparently a vest and shalwar. The gaps were filled with bricks by the tribesmen. Post commander told me that from this building and the one behind it is the base of rocket fire where as the grenades launched from sub machine gun by the miscreants is from the Khushboo hotel direction. I remained fascinated with the area and the people wondering who are they, there was a fear and apprehension this place is void of any rules of engagements. An army captain came up the beauty of the new uniform is philosophically understood here at least in terms of shrinking of ranks, it was only when he introduced himself did I came to know that he is a captain. Aqeel was full of inquisitiveness and I admire his wearing of helmet and bullet proof vest and after few minutes I ponder over the famous quotation that discretion is the better part of valour and I moved down .



The souts at post offered their prayers and my self and Shah were initially offered drinks and then tea in which the Captain Aqeel and his two other soldiers were also invited. Yesterday and today at both posts the quality of drinks was exceptional, yesterday it was juice and today a kind of cola. I also noticed a deep freezer at the post, in the menu tonight was the chicken which we saw being slaughtered while coming towards the post. Later the Wing subedar Major came on the Honda 125 which have been provided to all subedar majors of the Tochi Scouts what a commendable thing, it has enhanced their status and increased their efficiency manifolds, yesterday and today I saw the subedar majors making rounds of the posts, this SM took the post commander up and gave him few instructions and then joined us for tea. Captain Aqeel was still trying to understand from his Havildar as to what happened last Sunday at the Amin Post which was mere a kilometre away on high ground and yet almost soldiers were killed and equal number slaughtered. Myself and shah left and I asked Shah as to what happened at the Amin Post he was not knowing much more than what I already knew and I knew more than him. While walking back we stopped at the Mule Stable and leisurely watched the animlas I showed him the two newly born donkeys which were playing with each other, since today is a mothers day thus I witnessed this god gifted quality of a female caring for the new sibling among the donkeys, the more beautiful one had a heart full of milk from the mother's well.

Now I think that I am sitting on a probable dynamite because there are two military cultures on the protection one that of Tochi Scouts and other 7 Division of Army. What I have gather here in last seven days is that there is no need of artillery here when Cobras are available. Similar to the 1922 when Royal Air Force took over the role of providing the firepower and Scouts the ground troops and

Political Agent the one looking after the politics, thus there is no need of army because army is the other name of firepower and that Tochi Scouts have enough and what is there is to have the gunships under the command of the Commandant just the way artillery pieces and armour is already there under his command as an integral part of the Tochi Scouts.

### **Day 8<sup>th</sup> Monday.2230 hours.**

Relatively a peaceful day no firing no rockets although there was one artillery round fired early in the morning. Had tea break with Commandant there was another officer who came today from forward post and he narrated some odd events of the Durand Line. I after consultation with Colonel Wajahat got in touch with an old subedar he was enrolled in 1974 and retired in 1996 he updated me regarding the infrastructure of the Miran Shah camp. Majority rather the very first face lift after arrival in Miran Shah took place in 1957 which was probably the result of General Ayub Khan then army chief visit to MiranShah which resulted in the construction of sports stadium, quarter guard and monument apart from construction of main gate. The other major renovation took place starting from 2000 onwards when the mess, museum, centenary monument and construction of living quarters took place and that is still going on with demolishing of buildings and construction of new one is taking place.

In the evening I went to see the tennis and what a treat it was to witness the routine evening games, they have two tennis courts one clay other cemented, court was well marked with limestone and half a dozen pickers in Tochi Scouts track suits with brown Servis Cheetah sports shoes, an array of rackets were there. The game was

as usual full of fun, standard being not very high but with progress of time it became better and better and with that I mean that rally and shots were displayed Commandant has a powerful serve. The other players included the artillery commander and logistics commander who paired with commandant. The tennis went on till half past seven in between the game was stopped and every body came to attention at retreat which was sounded at quarter past six. I had a refreshing and warm cup of tea rather I had three cups of tea in the course of the game, a smartly dressed waiter was there to serve. The military tennis is unique from the way tennis is played in a sense that it is full of jokes and yells, no body minds the fouls and generally it is the interpretation of the senior which matters, there was no line man and it was on code of honour. Almost two hundred yards away are the miscreants and rocket and machine gun fire can come down at any time thus this game becomes historical in nature and no where in the world has tennis ever been played so close to the line of fire.

## **Day 10. 1435 hours**

Well Colonel Wajahat has gone on leave and such is the impact of his office and his own personality that I am feeling relaxed although I have nothing to do with official affairs, this helps in understanding the culture of Scouts in particular and also of the army in general, as long as the Commandant is in his office or even in station there is a fear of appointment and respect for the institution now Lieutenant Colonel Tariq is acting commandant and as such he assumes the mantle and runs the affairs of the Scouts. I had a lively discussion with the officers at tea break over the geo-political scenario. These officers are no exception in having an perception which is prevalent rather always has been as long as there is a civil government in chair that things are wrong and corruption is rampant in every institution. I put across my perspective over the question put across by Tariq ‘ would I support the present regime? And my answer was in affirmative to the surprise of all, on the next question as to why should I do, my answer was that since if we look around in the region we see Libya, Egypt and now Syria descending into chaos despite having very strong economies, Iran is under fire thus the very fact that we as a nation are heading for a general elections not because of any unrest or agitation but for the reason that the assemblies have completed or about to complete their legitimate tenure by itself is a great achievement of the regime and now it is up to public to keep the present status quo or bring in new faces. The world has undergone tumultuous changes in last ten years some very strong economies have crumbled like Spain and Portugal but Pakistan has shown stability. I found almost all less Major Zamir having the same stereo type version of corruption and lack of sincere leadership as the major cause of our problems, I highlighted the fact that it was none other than Mr Jinnah who started this by not accepting

Bengali as a national language and by dismissing the government of NWFP after the transfer of power in 1947 but he cannot be criticised under the provision of constitution. Pakistan's has progressed and is progressing and will progress in future because this is the verdict of history our advancement in nuclear field is a clear indication of our potential our record in sports is another feather in cap. On Durand Line the historical facts are different when Pakistan has adjusted its borders with Iran and China in both cases giving away some territory than what stops us in adjusting the same with Afghanistan, probable cause is the mind set of early rulers who were anti pathan in historical pattern.

Captain Hammad and myself later had tea together in major Zamir's office the Tochi Scouts medical officer is from Wazirabad an important small town on the eastern bank of Chenab in Punjab. Hammad mentioned that how rumours spread for instance one of his course mate on face book showed his concern for Hammad and highlighted that the exact number of casualties on 8<sup>th</sup> May skirmish with miscreants is own 36 dead and 92 wounded. Captain Hammad laughed and said ' Sir I was there from beginning till end and numbers are in range of less than a dosen' and I am witness to this fact because on the very day when I arrived on that fateful Sunday he came back limping after three hours. I did not asked him then as it was out of customs but now I asked him what happened from his point of day.

It was road opening day on Sunday , one day a week the curfew is imposed in the city and envoirns for the people to stay inside any body seen out side is taken as a foe wheter he has committed a hostile act or not. The tribes have come up with an technique and tactics which is novel effective lethal and yet primitive. Improvised

explosive devices are the mostly deadly weapons after suicidal human bomb, in it explosives are placed in a container a shopping bag or hid under the bush or buried under the ground or road and then when the convoy is over it or a vehicle or a party of soldiers it can be detonated either through a mobile phone or a time watch or even pressure. The state has terminated the mobile communication in the tribal frontier. Presently a Sapper walks in front with prodding device thus it is a sapper not the infantry which is leading the war against the tribes. This sapper is protected by a section of infantry or the scouts presently it is done by the army , this is tiring and time consuming because to clear inch by inch of road which is winding and has abundant cover in terms of green patches and boulders thus by and large it is a chance which has to be taken by all. Hammad had gone with his quick reaction force of 24 Scouts in three Toyota Vigos and an ambulance to the Amin Post which is around two kilometres from here and made of mud and on a high ground overlooking the valley that lies on the south western edge and the exit towards the South Wziristan through Razmak. The G. O. C Ali Abbas had gone to Islamabad on a week end, within the Miranshah the divisional policy of leave is one week after one month of stay and fourteen days after two months which is quite liberal rather more than what troops and officers had in the Siachen deployment, however commanders seldom use this on themselves especially Ali normally goes on an odd week end after a month and this time it was his youngest son's son birthday so he had taken an extra day off as well. Thus commander 103 Brigade became the acting divisional commander for the duration.

According to Captain Hammad after some time he went to Bannu Road check post and later he was called back in the area at the base of Amin Post. He went there and saw the commanding

officer 36 Baloch Regiment alongwith the brigade commander. The intent was to search a mud compound next to a Aligand, it seems so normal and casual that no need of having verbal orders was felt and neither they were given by any one. The affair from the young scout officer's perspective was an enjoyable experience and he laid down under a tree with the another officer and enjoyed and talked about the forthcoming event, anything can happen this could be their last hour. The compound was composed of three mud houses, Scouts Subedar Shariff was the first one to enter and he climbed onto the roof without any help of ladder and shouted that ' we have come here for search bring out your women out side and we will respect them'. There was no reply and Hammad and other officer Captain Mehmood entered the two mud huts simultaneously and kicked the door and in they dashed , that is the moment when every thing in the world stops and next move is the one on which you're your existence depends. The third mud house remained silent somehow the other it was not charged simultaneously and now all of a sudden the door opens and a man fires a burst of AK- 47 which hits the Mehmood on the legs and with this fire a panic starts and every kind of fire by the inner and outer cordon starts opening on to the mud house. These search parties came out of the compound and took cover in the nullah and remain in the after some time I went to the ...post which is on the road coming from Bannu

### **Yesterday.**

Yesterday I had a bad day as I slept most of the day and tried to figure out how to go about the history it was helped by the hasish given by Shah and it was the major factor of laziness as well. The thing with hashish is that it gives new and wonderful vistas of research and ideas but makes one lazy enough to just have these

in minds but I have to put them in black & white. In the evening I went for a walk with Shah, we first had a walk inside the complex talking and guessing about the probable dates of construction of various buildings, the photographs which I saw in old albums clearly indicates that the outer cordon was made of soldiers barracks and that still exists, the tree next to the hospital is also there but now it has become old. The lone hut over the barrack at the main gate is the command net where they are still using the Morse Code system and according to the operator it is the quickest and most effective, they have two such machines. From there we went outside the gate { Mohammad Ali shaheed Gate} and first had a stop at the subedar Mirjan's wood trading shop; he was not there there were two locals who offered cup of tea which I politely declined and myself and Shah walked through the family quarters, these quarters were property of haqqani the world renowned terrorist but now they have been converted into family quarters of Scouts, the main hujra of Haqqani is the now family and women training centre and Haqqani's mosque is used by all.

The children were playing cricket in the stony park, there is a college also which is now deserted and it an army battalion living inside however in the college palying fields the local boys were playing cricket. Coming back to the park, behind the park a tubewell was running and it is quite pleasureable and soothing to see water gushing out with such volume, a girl of eight years was playing with her friends riding the tri cycle she I am afraid has now entered into an age where she is bit over age to sit on a tri cycle. The Tochi Scouts have their own dairy farm and they have one of the most healthy cows which I have seen at least in Pakistan, they recently purchased seven cows and two buffaloes and now have ovr a dosen milk producing animals, they are selling milk at an astonishing low



price of rupees twenty per litre, there is a bio gas plant as well with a capacity of 15- 20 kilograms per day. Myself and Shah had cup of tea at the dairy farm, traditionally the scouts put out their steel charpoys for us with pillows and we had tea, the tea with pure milk now tastes bit different and it was with difficulty that I finished it off amidst the cow dung smell. We later walked back through the Christians quarters, there are two colonies of Christians here one in the political agent colony and other here in the Tochi Scouts yet there is no remnant's of any old church in the Miranshah, now the present commandant has made one in the colony by converting one of Haqqani's residence into church but it has no cross.

I dropped in at Major General Ali Abbas room which is next to me and had tea with him, it is very soothing to sit with a course mate and Ali is a fine officer although we have very little in common ,our views about the world are poles apart. The discussion drifted to the world politics, Ali has a theory that the Americans are behind the militants because they want to disintegrate Pakistan therefore they are supporting factions which are fighting against the army. He further elaborated that India has opened ten consulates on Pakistan – Afghan border mainly to destabilise the country but they will not succeed as Pakistan is an ideological country a blessed one with the holy prophet himself taking care of it and it was the holy prophet himself who ordered Mr Jinnah while he was in self exile in London to go back to India. It is only as a course mate that I can strongly disagree with him and I did because my point of view is that a strong and stable Pakistan is in the interest of India because of her economic compulsions and also for America as well, the topic then touched the Rodick Mines in Balochistan and how Americans are creating hindrance in its progress. Somehow the other this American hate phobia is difficult to understand and on this we both

agreed because we both comes from a background where we had an access to the western cultures resultantly in any Olympics we would always support the Americans in their matches against Russians, how this has changed is an enigma. Presently Ali narrated that two thousand militants of Tehrik Taliban Pakistan has been forced to leave Miranshah , I do not think that it has happened because here in the camp the rumours circulate quite fast and it is more of morale boosting but I nodded my head in agreement with Ali. The major groups fighting against the army are difficult to pin point but the main leader is Baitullah Mahsud of South Waziristan , Commander Nazir Group popularly known as CNG and then Gul Bahadur of Miranshah, now the CNG and Gul bahadur have left Mahsud and are operating independently but their targets are Americans in Afghanistan and not the Pakistan Army, the militants have been stressing that they have no ideological conflict with Pakistan Army so it is better if they leave the area.

The million dollar question that whether Pakistan Army is helping these groups is obvious from the events of last ten days, army is confined to the camp a prisoner of own walls, none can dare to go out for the fear of Taliban is paramount, what is that fear ? it is the brutality of them and knowing fully well that no logic can appeal to them so to say that Pakistan Army is helping them is absolutely false, sympathies are there but nothing beyond this. To me and many other living here there is no grand strategy or designs it is mere survival, all the cards are in the hands of locals they dictate the terms, army or political agent has cosmetic influence they can only talk and here it is not words that matter but the firepower which is understood by all.

**Today.2350 hours.**

I have finally finished the hashish in the morning and decided that enough is enough. Went to the political agency office the new political agent has not arrived yet. The office area is similar to any such compound all over the Pakistan, saw two men sitting in the veranda pondering over an antique map of the area showing demarcation of individual lands, few natives sitting under a shade and waiting for their settlement of cases. I was taken by the Tochi Scouts sentry to the superintendent's office whom I explained my purpose of visit, he was in picture and send me to another office which had the notice of English Record Office, I was again interviewed by a clerk and then after much thought he took me to another office where he talk in Pashto to another clerk, I could see heap of old files and just wanted to sit there and read them but I was taken to head clerk's office who after a short interview gave the decision that before proceeding any further I must have a written letter indicating what I want, I left. I went to the Major Zamir's office who immediately dialled assistant political agent and spoke in Pashto and matter was resolved.

The Tochi Scouts firing team is ready and Captain Hamza is in charge of them a fine cavalry officer he is in fact the regiment officer of the Commandant, another officer was sitting bit gloomy as his wife was admitted in hospital in Peshawar and wanted to go on leave, but his leave was turned down by the commandant on telephone , Major Zamir gave him consolation. Lieutenant Colonel Rab Nawaz also came in and we had tea. Our discussion touched the officers posting and tenures in Scouts. The account officer was also there and I inquired how they draw the pay, the procedure is that roll sheet is made in the Scouts and check is signed by the political agent and pay is drawn from the National Bank which is located within the

agency office compound, now a days the pay or the amount comes from Peshawar on helicopter and then distributed among the troops. Since the troops are living on qaum system thus any one member going on leave takes the pay of all others to their hometown as they all belonged to same area.

Meanwhile there were fire shots and Rab Nawaz mentioned that the sound of fire indicates that it is coming from city area and it was true, they were firing in the town no body bothered to seek any further information on this. I went to museum and saw the old albums again. Had lunch and then a long siesta. Awoke up at 1900 hours and after shower went to Ali's room and had a cup of green tea and few dates. Today our discussion hovers around the technical developments that have taken place within the division. Ali has done quite an innovation in improving the night vision capability of the posts and troops. He had come up with an directive to improve the defence of the posts, the posts presently are having anti personal mines twenty meters away which Ali now wants to push back to three hundred meters, the first line will be high concertina wire then mines then low concertina wire and twenty meters in front of the post will remain free of any obstacle for maintenance purposes. The major breakthrough has been made in night vision devices. There are approximately 60-70 NVG's in every infantry battalion and they have been supplemented with infra red light which is portable and rechargeable thus enhancing the vision up to three hundred meters, the common web cameras have also been turned into infra red cameras with a range of hundred meters. Rifle G-3 have been modified to have night vision sights and telescopes which have been purchased from the open market for 6000 rupees similarly the small tri pod for the rifles have been purchased. There are twenty cameras operating around the fence of the camp and four inside.

Mortars have been modified to act as mines by putting together four mortar shells and taking out their firing mechanism and joining them together through ordinary wire and firing switch in the hand of post commander. All very impressive the only draw back is that all this has to be tested under the battle conditions the attack on Amin Post last Sunday would have been the ideal test but it was not put into action. Another infantry brigade is coming as reserve. So much of fire power and man power but still the initiative is with the miscreants and that is the hard pill to swallow that army or for that matter Ali Abbass has not been able to dictate his terms and they are nothing but safe passages of road and liberty and freedom to search any compound suspected of harbouring the miscreants. No military vehicle can operate on road with having massive firepower protection and even then as displayed on Amin Post the miscreants still strike and create panic among the army.

## **Friday**

I went to the Political Agent's office but before that I received a call from Colonel Sardar Sajjad just to say hello, I am grateful to him for being so considerate, he is leaving for America on Sunday for a week's course at Alabama and then a month long leave wish him the best.

The same story at PA's office but the staff was friendly, I observe that the tourism calendar in the superintendent's office was covered with white sheet only the dates were visible on my inquisitiveness he said that since the picture distracts while praying and the calendar is in western direction therefore it has been covered. Amin Khan the clerk in charge was called by the assistant political agent whom I had met at the farewell brunch and dinner of the political agent was

very kind he just told Amin to open up the old records almirahs and let me find what ever I am looking at, that serves the purpose.

The English record office is made up of two rooms, in the first room a table and two chairs on which Amin works and the adjoining room is devoid of any furniture just a date mat on the floor and a heap of files in one corner the rooms have been made two storeyed by making almirahs from ground to top. Amin opened one almirah and handed me over the files I was not impressed it dated 1961 then another file dated 1951 regarding the visit programme of governor another file 1946 regarding the status of head clerks in political agents office another file dealing with the character certification of natives dated 1941 and so on finally three files dating back to 1896 they were regarding the pay and allowances of staff. In the meantime many tribesmen came and moved around, I just sat on the datemat and started scanning the files and lost track of time , there files of 1919 regarding the defence of the agency another one dealt with the administrative report of the agency in 1937 and there few pages about Tochi Scouts then two very old pages written by a Scout Officer and another report on Tochi Scouts dating back to 1961, I was unable to hide my happiness, Amin now starting bringing the files the Frontier Gazettes and similar to them, the thaw has melted and there was warmth in his dealing he inquired whether I would like tea or cold drink I politely declined yet he brought a bottle of Mountain Dew, this hospitality of Pathans is legendary and one comes across it at every step here whether own Tochi Scouts or the political agent's office. Amin was muttering something about the British he was praising them for keeping the record so well, by this time the lunch time was there he offered me join him but I made an excuse to him. Amin lives in Mir Ali and everyday comes to work which takes him almost two hours of travelling one way. I was surprised to find

him living in Mir Ali and travelling amidst all this chaos daily. The things have gone so wrong here and such is our sieged mentality that any person moving out of the fort area seems to be travelling to outer space, I made a mental note to interact more with him and to learn about the life style he is living, I am interested in social aspects of the life what kind of relationship he is having with his wife and in laws, does he have any fear from Talibans regarding his working in the political agency. So far it seems that Talibans have not imposed such restrictions on the locals but if they do then the machinery is bound to collapse. It was a happy hour. When I came out of that storeroom only then I realised that it is Friday. The loudspeakers all around especially the one in city were blazing with the Khutba, since it was in Pashto so I could not make it but from the tone it was militant in nature.

I in the evening at 1700 hours went to Muhammad Shah's room and from there we both started walking , the sun still hits you at this time. Normally we decide after we have started walking where to go, as we were in the scouts Stadium I looked at the cricket pitch and inquired when it was made although I knew it has been made under present commandant's directive. Shah told me that not long ago a cricket tournament was held here in which Scouts , Army and civilian team from the city also participated I was surprised to hear that teams from city are allowed to play and take part in cricket matches but then this is what Scout culture and way of dealing things is all about. In other settled cities and cantonments the interaction between the military and civilian is almost non existent especially in terms of sports.

We walked towards the army camp enroute we watched the making or rather erecting of aviation hangar it is quite a task and I

wondered how this crane has been brought here quite a risk. Before the army camp I saw another wall about Tochi Scouts and I passed a comment that it must be something to do with Lieutenant Colonel Aashiq Hussain he seems to have done wonder here, mess, gardens and now this assault course, hats off to him. Army has made a monument and it is quite beautiful and well laid, the names are ever increasing and even now it is almost full, the dates of actions are not given only the rank, name and unit of deceased soldier and officer is given. I found the name of a second lieutenant from Northern Light Infantry here he is the second subaltern to have died here in Waziristan the other one is Flury who died in June 1919. The army area has a traditional gate as well it seems that the army is here to stay and this will become a permanent cantonment. Area is open and barren all around , orchard has made by the engineer battalion and 8 Frontier Force battalion. We moved towards the Scouts area through a short cut and crossed the old strip, the college building in front and the mobile company's tower on the left and then through a narrow path which has a stinking air all around, the college building before its inauguration was occupied by the army and now I could see the soldiers bullet proof vests and rifles all stacked with the windows which had no glass rather army issued blankets were put for shade.

We entered the grid station but before that there is a vocational institution again under occupation of an army unit, Shah told me that American troops used to live here for short duration and that is why it is so highly secured, he further stated that no one was allowed to come here. At grid station entrance there was a bit chubby Punjabi Havildar and a young soldier, they were not sure what to do because we were such an odd couple Shah in his white kameez shalwar long beard and white cap on his head a typical miscreant dress code and I dressed in trouser and bush coat. They belonged to 36 Baloch



Regiment the same regiment that has suffered casualties on 7<sup>th</sup> May incident I condoled with him and we both walked to the edge of the grid station there is a colony of half a dozen houses or quarters which are the property of WAPDA through a walkway having eucalyptus trees and a barbed wire , there were few children playing and it is criminal to call it playing because there was nothing to play with, these young toddlers were just rolling around , quite a number of hens also running around including a pair of rare Turkey, the natives have a very strong liking for the pets especially the fowls. The post is not that well laid as other Scouts posts but they have made a very fine green mosque on a raised ground , when we entered the compound one soldier was praying. I had a look at the area, the area on the north is the dry river bed and quite green there are few civilian houses all made of mud , in the near distant a colour full building which I thought must be a hospital but the local sentry told me it is a madrassah.

The post is well defended a mud wall with concertina wire then twenty metres of anti personal mines and then high concertina wire but these wires were broken, the post also has a video camera on the top which revolves around and there is a laptop which allows the operator to monitor the area the same footage is being observed in the divisional control room which I have not seen so far. There was occasional traffic on the periphery an odd motorcycle a four wheel drive and so on. The soldiers' at post have made a garden also and regarding the hens moving around they are the property of the family quarters.

On our way back we were invited by the canteen contractor Shah Rukh Khan who was sitting on the cemented water tank with another person and three children, I accepted his hospitality , the

other person introduced after having my introduction as a person from inter services intelligence, he speaks Pashto and has served in aviation bases at Multan and Rawalpindi . Shah Rukh narrated the good old days when he could walk freely and entertained his guests his biggest regret was that under present circumstances it is very difficult to entertain a guest and this is a matter of disgrace for him. He told me how few years back none could talk even in a high tone to a stranger in the town because he was the guest of the town.

We moved forward and I saw a very cute little girl with golden hair and blue eyes she was just crying the way toddlers do but she reminded me of my daughter and I talked to her for few minutes caressing her hair and inquiring what has made her cry I wish I could have the sweets with me for such events.

On our way back I entered into the army public school or more precisely Scouts Public School, it is the efforts of Colonel Wajahat who was commandant in 2001-2003 and seeing is believing, a fine school with its own hostel for boys and other classes included nursery and play group apart from imparting study and education till class eight, it has a vast playing area with merry go round and slides. The boys were busy in playing cricket in fact that was the only game being played and there were no less than half a dozen pitches where game was being played. I watched in amusement and in my mind came back the Aitcheson College Lahore where I was the house master for a brief period. One boy who was bowling with left hand had a perfect bowling action and bowled quite well I will not be surprised to see him at international level in couple of years. This cricket is the major change in the culture and the most important factor in changing the outlook of the new generation, this is the binding factor. In the past the tribal children were more

attracted towards the football and they still do in the World Cup time but cricket has taken over and with this the inherent hostility also diminished. I was told by the shah that daily students come from city they are dropped at the city gate away from the anti personal mines and for short period the passage is open and they walked in and similarly they goes back in the evening same holds true for lady teachers but I think I will carry out more research on the subject. There is another school on the opposite side of the road then there is the college which I mentioned before then another school Al Azhar which is opposite to the civil stadium so quite a number of educational institutions.

I met major Zaheer from aviation on my way back he told me that they had gone in the morning to the Razmak to lift a casualty. I took him to the tennis court for a cup of tea after bidding good bye to Shah. At the tennis court I was approached by a bulky dark colour officer who as a matter of fact started asking me questions , where is your family how many children you have got how old are they, I do not mind these querries because this is typical army culture and when I asked him politely about his regiment so as to start any conversation but he was bit reluctant and then said I am from military intelligence and looking after the intelligence matter of the division and it acme to me as no surprise because somehow the other these intelligence officers have this false sense around them. They are absolutely useless in this area because majority of them are unable to speaks Pashto thus they are at loss but to make sure that they are taken seriously they have only ideas and plans to make the area peaceful and this colonel was no exception, he gain belongs to the category where glass is half empty to him there was corruption everywhere and none was sincere with the country, a theme which I have heard umpteen time and practically fed up with it but I listened

to him and then gave counter arguments which with the help of historical evidence proves that nothing is as bad as it seems, the country is progressing despite all hardships and comparing to the regional anarchy we are rather lucky and fortunate to have a stable political system in place and soon we are heading for our general elections which is a mile stone. This area has its own historical and cultural values and they must be respected and should not be treated at par with city life and values and laws. The colonel had a plan to disarm all the tribesmen similar to United Kingdom pattern and I pointed out that in America you can buy weapon from the shopping mall similar to the pattern you buy a mobile phone.

### **Saturday. Day 13<sup>th</sup>**

It is a close holiday and spent the day in the room rather the suite, it is a four room set, one main sitting room with traditional sofa set a seven seater, it has French windows which gives almost a complete view of the lawn then a small room which is the dinning room with a small fridge it has also window, then a master bedroom a changing room and washroom, even washroom has a window and an exit. There are two split air conditioners and a wall mounted television. All doors are made of pure wood and same holds true for all other furniture, only the bed seems to be modern . The electric system I have not fully understood till now, there is a grid station which provides electricity on timings then there is generator and finally urgent power system {UPS} and all the lights are linked with one or the other system, it at times happen that there is light in one room but there may be no light in the certain power sockets. There is a telephone in the room which I have used only for calling mess on number 136 and to ask for cup of tea in the morning.

In the evening went for a walk with Havildar Shah towards the monument as I wanted to check certain data from the names written there, on the way we stopped at the Shah Rukh Khan's canteen , nothing special other than the torches. I inquired about purchasing weapon from the market at Miranshah but Shah Rukh flatly declined of having any such contact probably he is apprehensive of my credentials I will try again.

We went to three different posts after walking through the Political Agent's colony. The colony is similar to many other such pattern colonies all over Pakistan. Houses small in size with distorted paint, an odd out of order truck, a small shop, few odd shops with little crowd, hens running around and children sitting idle, one particular boy was neat and clean with hair comb and surma in his eyes, I recall the days of Multan in 1992 when my wife used to dress my son every evening like this. The way to posts was most unusual and most unlike military, you have to follow the colony road and comes to a dead end in front of government degree college for women and then step down and follow the dirty stream and through narrow path and cross it while steeping on three stones and then climb up and you are standing next to what is called telephone exchange post, infact these are two posts the first one is what I mentioned just now and the other is almost adjacent and is known as Civil Works post.

The telephone exchange post is as the name indicates in the telephone exchange complex the post commander a Khattak from Karak received us, he was bit perplexed as to who am I but Havildar shah introduced me. Everyone comes and shakes hand some embraced and I had a look at the post, unlike other posts which are made in open and that of mud this one is in a built up area in a constructed building and as such most pathetic in layout.

The scouts as usual had their kitchen established in one corner and accommodation in quite a number of rooms . The way to top is quite easy through well laid stair and on top of roof there are three firing spots there was a machine gun with rockets in one. I peered through the fox hole and post subedar narrated how the fire came on 7<sup>th</sup> May, they were fired upon by two RPG-7 rockets by the miscreants from the frontal narrow alley, ‘they did not aimed it properly rather they fired with one hand in a general direction towards us ... the rockets went over us. We fired almost seven rockets on the buildings and over a thousand bullets’ said the post commander. We stood on the parchment overlooking the street below, it was evening time and few shops were open and they deal with auto parts, a lone tribesman walked in a heavy dark colour kameez shalwar without any weapon. The houses or the buildings in front were all poked with gun fire, they all are hotels the auto mechanics who work here normally comes from Bannu and as such these are their residences. I noticed air conditioners in the buildings just one odd and that too of window type have not seen any split in bazar. On the other side I noticed a massive red brick construction going on and I was informed that this is the new market which is being constructed by the local chieftains, there is a conglomerate of four. I was surprised to see such construction going on in such a war torn town and that speaks for the facts itself, none is fool to put the money in any risky construction but the locals must have the knack that this is worth it. The bricks comes from Bannu daily, now that is interesting that army or for that matter the state can operate this kind of traffic only once a week by imposing curfew and on the other side these locals are moving freely day and night, now there is none on the road to check them the state is not visible on the streets it is only in this fortified compound.

We had cup of tea which is customary and then took leave the subedar came to see us off till the gate, something more about the telephone exchange it is in working condition shaving a capacity of 5000 lines out of which 4500 lines are working and there is no tapping of the phones. People from city comes daily for work whom the scouts know by face and are allowed to enter, any body desirous of rectifying his faulty number has to contact the line man from his area but none other than these linemen are allowed to enter the compound, I forgot to ask how they collect bills and what about the net working, for this I have to get in touch with some telephone exchange official.

This public works post is almost adjacent, almost four years ago three terrorists stormed in through a hole in the wall and occupied the building they were flushed out by the scouts which suffered casualties also. The colony which is next to it was opened by Premier Bhutto I was told by the another Khattak Post Commander, which I presumed was in 1973. Let me take you a bit in past, I met Major General Naseerullah Babar a former governor of Frontier Province and he narrated that how in 1973 he put forward the idea to Mr Bhutto that if our boundary runs to the Durand Line then we must have control of it also and that is how Mr Bhutto then made a whirlwind tour of all political agencies from Gilgit to Zhob, that period was also a high point of cold relations between Pakistan & Afghanistan.

I also observed the Boys College on whom none has any control but it is still operative and so is Girls College, I inquired how do these girls enter the compound and answer was that the Tochi Scouts have employed one female from Christian colony which physically checks the students and there is a scanner also but both are superfluous arrangements because when you look at the culture the fact is that

here every thing is done on your own judgement , a soldier will not peep into a car which has a female passenger and in my these two visits towards this side I have not seen that female security staff. There is another post which is made by occupying two quarters I did not climb into that rather sat out on a chair and observed the people sitting at the far side of the wall.

Later we walked through another path which took us to the far side of the colony where a long ground more suitable for Polo because of its layout was having a proper football match in which one team was wearing a uniform also, the world famous team shirts like Manchester United and AEG were visible probably these were the popular shirts available in the market, I told Shah to sit and let's watch the game, the players were of varying age I noticed some old men too and then I realised how this colony has adjusted itself to being besieged by miscreants; it is through sports in normal circumstances the game might still have been played but not with this zeal because now there is no other outlet for majority of the men as they cannot take a risk of going out especially those working closely with military. The doctors are there which are working in the lone hospital of the town, there are two I believed and one of them lives inside the colony and goes out daily to hospital so does few sweepers. Later as we were walking back I saw two young girls playing outside their homes on the green patch, they have made a kind of doll house and one was working on putting some flowers in it and other a bit far was doing something with the expired medicines probably portraying a hospital. I had a look at the design of the doll house which was marked on the grass with stones, had a bit of conversation with girls and they were replying ok but then changed their tone when they saw the other people coming from the match area. On my way back I noticed that the grass around the Scouts monument has been mowed freshly.



## **Sunday Day 14th**

Nothing unusual other than the fact that the breakfast had a aloo paratha which made me drowsy and it was with great difficulty that I managed to walk to Havildar Shah's barrack and we both set out for a walk, I said lets go towards the runway for the reason that I thought I may be able to photograph the Cobras coming from the day's patrolling but they I think flew back. It was road operating day and there fore many Scouts have come back from the posts, it is a custom or tradition that the friends or the qaum makes a food for them which is usually meat cooked by them in the barracks, today I saw four such cooking going on in the barracks and Shah told me the background. Wonderful weather dark grey clouds, cool breeze and then light drizzle. Met the brigade commander of 103 Brigade and I thought of getting his viewpoint on the matter I made an appointment with him. Havildar Shah's relative is in the Butt Post and as such we decided to walk there, I took pictures while standing on the runway thus I can correlate all around because runway is aligned with north. The wheat is now getting wasted, the fields were thinly vegetated and we agreed that it is only that man who has to live on the outcome of this field and wheat who will work hard and not the military, Shah again remembered Colonel Ashiq Hussain for his efforts. The apricot trees are almost ripe and we plucked few, very nourishing and sweet another week and they will be ready if by that time the soldiers left anything on it.

I have been on this post before but today the post commander showed me the area , I actually saw the pillars of Durand Line at Ghulam Hasan and moving westward, The

natives were playing cricket outside the wall, they were in trousers I saw two talibans carrying weapons with long hair and cap, many people were sitting on the green fields enjoyning the weather. This used to be the Scouts post and we kept our firing range equipment here but for last six years this has become the taliban's post. The post soldiers all prayed at the Maghrib time the post has made a mosque as well a mud bricked room.

Later at night I had tea and food with Ali Abbas and our conversation turned to the heroes and why we need it, Ali said that a hero has to die young otherwise his heroship gets polluted with time with all kind of judgements passed, I absolutely agree with him. We talked about heroes, Captain Javed our course mate was one, so was M.M. Aalam the Pilot who shot down four Indian aircraft in 1965 War, Ali narrated an incident. ‘ I was in Karachi in the brigade in year 2001 and my brigade commander was full of nationalism, he decided that the chief guest for Independence Day celebrations will neither be the divisional commander nor the corps commander but the legendary M.M. Aalam , who came in his old Volkswagon and was well received he was the icon and every one was eager to shake hand with him , M.M. Aalam spoke about Mr Jinnah ‘ I have seen him in hell’ and this was the end of his hero worship by the brigade commander. The point which Ali was highlighting was that a hero has to live up to the expectations and this is where the trap lies because as a human he can make an error, I quoted him Brigadier raheel Sehgal and the Captain .... Who later both felt down from that mantle. Brigadier Tariq Mahmood TM is the sole example who died the way a hero should die, I gave him the example of Captain Jawad Aslam Cheema who I feel was a hero in classic sense, height, figure and family wealth yet he opted for Siachen and died there in avalanche.

**Tuesday Day 16<sup>th</sup> . 2345 hours.**

**Just came back from the farewell dinner for Colonel Aneeq the out going colonel staff of this division , he is going to Bahrain. Wonderful food only in terms of tikkas otherwise almost all military food have same taste, ice cream was an exception because it was handmade. In the day I went to 103 Brigade Headquarters, major Zamir gave me commandant's vehicle and I feel embarrassed for this , it is after years that I have sat in a cahuffer driven car, it had dark glasses and none checked us on our way to the division. It was difficult to find the 103 brigade , I had not gone in the area before it is adjacent to the divisional artillery, I asked from few soldiers but all gave typical blank look, as compare to Scouts the army jawans apparently have confidence issue among themselves. I saw two tennis courts of the divisional artillery, frankly they are demoralising for the reason where as the Tochi Scouts have their courts made long time back the divisional artillery courts are recent production, the point is that this game is played only by the officers and it requires manpower to keep it in playing conditions and above all it requires soldiers to act as pickers thus it looks odd in operational area, a football ground or basketball court is the games that soldiers play in field conditions and officers must play with them to interact. Finally we found the 103 Brigade and instantly I sent back the vehicle. Colonel Mateen the deputy commander of the brigade as all operational brigades have colonels as the deputy is known to me accidentally, he is from 42 Punjab Regiment the very regiment with which I was attached in Siachen and we must have met there but I do not remember but he does. Colonel Sardar Sajjad other day rang me and said I can get in touch with Mateen for any hash etc**

and I rang Mateen yesterday and gave the reference and he invited me to come over for a cup of tea without understanding the purpose, thus was my aim of going there. But Mateen is not the type and he apologised for that but I made him comfortable and our conversation soon touched the favourite topic of finding the issue of Waziristan issue. Mateen is a Punjabi and as such favours ruthless use of force to settle the score. His version of Amin Post fiasco is different, according to him the Scouts never entered the compound and they are in league with locals and as such are reluctant to open fire, I took the Scouts side and said that four of their sepoys were also hit and even if we keep the Scouts aside what rationale you have for not using firepower on that day because the fact remains that the sepoys of 36 Baloch ran away despite you having six tanks and two Cobras. He said finally that it was miscoordination and somehow we could not fire back, the old saying that truth is the first victim of war seems true here as no one is accepting the responsibility of that fiasco and this blame game is just getting worse. Now if this is the situation with in a division over an operation which took just two miles away almost a fortnight ago then think of Pakistan – America relation ship over the war against terror.

I visited the clothing store again because Havildar Shah told me that they have something to show me. I met a subedar who happens to be the qaum commander of Marwat Qaum as well. A well disciplined person because he vacated the main seat for me and asked for tea or juice which I politely declined. The things which they wanted to show were nothing of interest an old bandolier, a web belt and two covers of Kukri. I asked the subedar to explain the qaum system and he highlighted that asa qaum they are collectively responsible for the misconduct

of their any one soldier, any fine is payed collectively. The topic then broached the general situation and he was very upset over the media which has nothing else to show other than a pessimistic view of the country and this in his opinion was harmful for the new soldiers who are not getting the required dose of good things happening in the country , I fully agreed with him. The fact is that he is the second person after Havildar Shah who has raised the point of irresponsible commercial media playing with the emotions of people. This subeadr was very critical of the fact that the media is showing caricatures of head of state and prime minister and as such eroding the authority and the decorum of the office.

I had a lunch and then a nap after which my conscious pinched me for not writing anything today regarding the Tochi Scouts history.

I went to Ali Abbas room to inquire about the proposed visit to Razmak and he said tomorrow and then made arrangements for my stay as well. I told him that tonight they have Keema Kareelay in the dine out and we talked about how as young officers we used to look forward to dinners in which general officers were also there. I inquired about newspaper and he also realised and call his attendant for this who replied that for last two days there is no newspaper and ali very politely said ok. I took Ali to the task and teasingly said that in good old days it was unthinkable that the newspaper has not been given to the general and he just smiled back, he asked whether I am coming to the dinner and since I did not received any invitation so I made an excuse that I will be taking the food in my room and came back. After five minutes I got a call from the divisional

intelligence colonel who was sorry for not sending me the invitation and said it is on way and this is how I attended this dinner. I am made to sit on the main dinning table with the brigade commanders and they all seem to be very cordial and respectful, I am enjoying that typical phase of life where you are course mate of the general officer.

Ali very high of the out going colonel staff but then I think the way a hero should die young similarly these after dinner speeches should be short and crisp. Ali talk about the contribution of the colonel staff which were many but then he said that the division has made two guest rooms in the Peshawar and colonel staff's wife decorated that and in same good faith he highlighted that the staff house in Peshawar was also renovated by his wife. Now this looks perfect in a mess dine out where the lady is also present but here these very remarks have negative connotation among the officers who I am sure right now must be taking a hell of wordily fire on the colonel staff for his this performance. Ali is too humble in his words and now I think it is going too far because every time he says that I was not worthy of promotion which is absolutely incorrect, he has that qualities which have resulted in his becoming a general. What I like most about his speech was his view point regarding the Peoples Party which in his opinion is a progressive party and this country has to go about the life in a moderate manner, I am sure his remarks will be very effective in influencing the mind set of officers.

Tomorrow I am going to Razmak, luckily I met the Commandant of Shawal Rifles also he is from 53 Cavalry. Ali is adamant that he will go by road from Razmak to .... But staff officers are making sure that he should go by air, Ali wants to save the national resources but staff is thinking of his protection.

**The first test match between England & West Indies have been won by England in an interesting manner, Chanderpaul is still a force to reckoned. Also saw the highlights of 1988 Seoul Olympics, Flo Jo was there with her smiling winning face.**

## **Liveries**

Present uniform is still in settling down period it is the first major transition since 1950 when militia kameez shalwar was introduced in lieu of trouser for officers. In 1994 the classical militia cloth was replaced with a khaki colour but with a drastic change where as militia was 100% cotton the khaki cloth was 65% cotton and 35% ryan other wise the footwear remains the same that is brown chappal , technically the original colour was tan, headgear on ceremonial also retained its diginity with paggri which is an integral part of militant tribal culture same holds true for kameez shalwar adorned with a brown leather belt with a brass insignia. Ranks were always the same as in army.

First change from tradition took place in 2005 when instead of chappal the rubber sole desert laced ankle high shoes were introduced under the shalwar as part of moderation of the Frontier Corps yet the choice of wearing chappal was still retained. In 2011 the grey colour fatigue comprising of a jungle shirt and multi pocket baggy trouser tucked in the desert shoes without a belt were regulated. By June 2012 it became a standard uniform along with a bullet proof vest and helmet as field dress without belt. Two days in a week are allowed to wear the traditional militia dress of militia colour kameez shalwar with brown chappal and belt along with beret. Within Tochi Scouts each wing has its own colour thus scouts of No.4 Wing have pink as wing colour therefore their chindi the base around shoulder

ranks and titles is pink where as No.3 Wing has blue, No 1 Wing has No2 Wing has No 5 Wing is and No 6 Wing is given.. The uniform items are provided free of cost to all ranks less officers from clothing store, each wing has its own clothing section.

For sports the light brown colour joggers Cheetah of servis company of Pakisatn are issued, Scouts wear white socks only both under the chappals and aslo in sports hoever the green socks are issued for field dress both in woollen and mixed pattern, white socks are however pure cotton. Tochi Scouts have made their own track suits for all the scouts which is in green colour with red writing it is not issued by the frontier corps rather the Tochi Scouts have made it at their own , it was introduced in 2000 by Colonel ....., The dress of Commandants orderly retains its magnificence especially in weekly traditional dress days when an adone ment of scffalded is wrapped around the waist. Commandant wears paggri only on darbar or at Jirga or attending the Frontier Corps week. Qaum commanders wears a red band around their left arm with the name of qaum written in abbreviation . Duty Junior commissioned officer wears a cross belt over kameez shalwar. It must nbe remembered that the present day militia is not the original militia marzi cloth rather it has a tinged of wite in the form of sparkles in it. Tochi Scouts marching stick is unique among all the scouts and militia corps , it has a dagger in it which ith a twist in cane can become a weapon.

The dress regulations of 1922 specified that uniforms will only be isseued in the presence of company and platoon commanders and they are responsible for its fitting. The basic dress item was kurta having two categories the sepoy's had different pattern and recruits had different. A sepoy kurta was to be fitted over a cardigan or waistcoat and length to extend from 1 inch to one and ahlf inch



below the tips of the fingers when the belt is worn, Neck band should admit of two fingers being easily increased was another requirement, sleeves to extend to midway between the wrist joint and the upper joint of the thumb, button pleat in front of kurta to extend to the belt buckle the lower extremity being covered and hidden by the belt buckle. The recruit was same in all respect other than that the button pleat was eleven and half inches long but not extending to the belt buckle. One very key drastic item were the shorts which ordinarily is against the riwaj of the area. Its height was four fingers above thigh bone to the top of the knee cap. Woolen socks were an option for guard duty between retreat and reveille other than this if a man wishes to wear them on parade then they must be covered under a leather sock. In 1846 when the very first Beeloch regiments were raised the soldiers were allowed to wear the native dress code of kurta and pyjama with cap, shorts were not introduced then but by 1890s they gained popularity because of hot weather climate still it took some time for the recruits of Waziristan to adjust to shorts.

Headgear is of paramount importance and has cultural value also thus in Tochi Scouts the Shamla of the puggri in the infantry was nine inches long where as in mounted infantry the Shamla was to fall to one hands breadth above the belt and fall in line in the centre of the neck. Pantaloon were to fit four fingers above thigh bone and overlap at the knee at least four fingers. Mounted Infantry had a different dress their coats were supposed to fit over a cardigan waist coat the length to extend to the knee cap when belt was worn, further more it was to split down the front and buttoned with five buttons similarly it was to split in the back from waist downwards and to over flap and finally it was to be fully shirted from the waist downwards, the other specification remained the same as in sepoy kurta.

The dress of the Indian officers specified that the tunic should not reach lower than the tips of the fingers the instructions specified that this measurement should be taken without belt, gold fringes were to be worn with the dress except when on gasht. Between 15<sup>th</sup> of April and 15<sup>th</sup> October every year a twill shirt with badges of rank, breast pockets and no medal was worn instead of tunic the length of this shirt remained the same as that of sepoy's kurta.

Medals were worn by both British and Indian Officers only when ordered however the ribbons were worn when bandolier was not worn.

On enlistment every sepoy was granted a sum of money to cover the initial issue of kit and if he serves for three years the kit belongs to him otherwise he had to refund the balance amount in cash which was 1/36<sup>th</sup> of the initial grant for every month of service short of three years, the deserters debits were collected collectively from the qaum or the class. Sepoys were not allowed more than two paggaris and two pairs of of chaplli a year debit able to their half mounting amount.. All kits were numbered the mosquito kits were also issued to each recruit at reduced rates but subsequent renewls at full cost. Clothing was issued only once week. Patients in hospital were issued with dressing gown but only for going to the latrines and not to be worn in bed.

## **Razmak**

Wednesday 24<sup>th</sup> May 2012 , Razmak. 2030 hours.

Sitting in the room shivering with cold and waiting for the dinner which is at 2100 hours with Ali Abbass and commander 212 Brigade. John Masters was here and for last almost two decades I

have been visualising about this place, it was built starting from 1922 onwards and somewhere in 1935 the very first two ladies arrived here albeit in a disguise their footprints are preserved not more than fifty yards from the room where I am staying.

We took off in the morning from Miran Shah at 1030, before that I just stood at the tarmac watching the helicopters getting ready for the mission, there were two Cobras which were parked in the hangar they were towed to the tarmac, one Bell 412 was getting ready, one Puma was there in which we had to travel. Major Zaheer was there so I asked him can I take snaps of the helicopter he was surprised and said 'sir why not'. Being myself an army aviator I knew that it is better to ask because any youngster can say 'why are you taking pictures it is not allowed', one has to be careful with army pilots they can stand up so establish their writ and command and tarmac is their jurisdiction. We walked towards the Cobras, Major Amrose a young pilot with a long beard happens to know me thus ice was broken and we had good conversation. The Cobras here are armed only with 750 rounds of cannon and no rockets or TOW missile, Cobra can carry 14 rockets and four TOWs apart from 750 rounds of 20 millimetres Gatling rounds. Major Amrose highlighted that since engines have gone old thus all Cobras cannot carry full arsenal, on my question of the techniques which they are using, the answer was vague, they fly at 3000 feet above ground level {AGL} and engage targets once they are told either earlier or through radio in air, but seldom they pick and engage targets at their own, the zooming power of Cobras is about 13 times more than naked eye. It was quite hot and warm.

I moved to Puma with Major zaheer, this Puma is different from old Pumas, they were initially made for the UAE forces and were

given to Pakistan by them. Zaheer briefed me that this model has 300 horsepower more than the old versions and like all pilots he was full of praise about this machine the instruments it has and he also narrated me the one accident which Puma had a couple of years ago at Tarbels where on take off it just swung and hit the ground and spin around but luckily none of the occupant was injured the one fatal casualty was the subedar who was standing outside and was hit by the flying debris of the shear away tail rotor. Meanwhile another helicopter approached a Bell 412 and as it came closer Zaheer said from the approach I can make out it is Major Omar Mehdi Warraich, I have not met Omar for last five years and was excited to see him, by the time he switched off our doors were closed but he came and I stepped out to embrace him it was really very pleasant to see him, he is Cobra pilot and angry young man of his decade.

We took off with major General Ali Abbas who looked like a real field commander with weapon strapped around his thigh, colonel staff and two brigade commanders. I was keen to see the area and as we flew south the area on my right was the Boya Fort and Spin Khaisora where the very first Victoria Cross of Tochi Scouts was awarded, the general lay out of the country is quite a mix one dry river beds, numerous ravines all confluencing, mud villages scattered around the banks of these water channels, occasional green patch and then the country start elevating, thin forests, ridge lines with their centuries old tracks, greeneray which resembles the area around Desoai plains but with less menacing mountains, if one is not aware of the militant culture of the area then it looks picturesque and a tourist spot, the word little Switzerland comes into mind. The Razmak bowl is a kind of flat surface a bit of plateau but not in true sense because it is surrounded by mountains of gradual slope yet it is more or less like a long wide ridge. The elevation is 6666

feet AGL. It was nostalgic in nature, I recalled Bugles & Tiger of John Masters where he described of Razmak in 1935 it was known as Little London with its building and lay out. All around from the helipad which is there in the middle of the sports ground the view of the valley is fabulous, on the south is South Waziristan the water channel just below the Razmak is the dividing line between the North & South Waziristan, Cobra and Bell 412 provided the cover by clearing the adjacent heights which in any case are occupied by the army regiments. I was taken to the brigade headquarters of 212, this brigade was in Lahore and came here last year. Another surprise was there Major Afzal who was junior at 5 Squadron Skardu and we served together for well over year and half is the DQ here. He took me in his office and made a number of calls to make sure that my stay here is comfortable arranging for room installing telephones and making sure that I have an attendant to look after me all typical of him, I was feeling embarrassed for all this protocol as I don't deserve any of this, I am not here on official purpose and being retired none of this is authorised to me but this is army culture and more importantly this is how old comrades look after you if you have been fair with them in your official capacity. Major Afzal rang the Commandant Shahwal Scouts and informed him that I am course mate of the GOC which he already knew and therefore he should detail a person who should take me around, I wanted to interrupt Afzal over this because it can offend the Commandant but it was too late. Later Major Afzal drove me to the Commandant's office en route we made an halt at the view point which is just outside the gate which links the cadet college to the Shawal Rifles. View is good, cadet College has been shifted to Nowshera and all their accommodation is now lying vacant or occupied by the army units.

There was a rush of young school boys coming up from the

public school which the Rifles are running now. Boys in kameez shalwar light blue in colour shouting and joking with each other and climbing up, I saw young girls among them so the school is co education , girls of seven years of age clad in the light blue kameez shalwar carrying books in a bag and wrapped in a hijab were chatting with the boys, there was a girl in yellow colour shalwar kameez also, it reminds one of childhood, it was very refreshing and heart warming to see so many students getting education and this is the single most major contribution of Frontier Corps in resolving the conflict and creating an atmosphere for future.

Commandant shawal Rifles was very hospitable and courteous he narrated how he is changing the outlook of the setup which sounds quite monotonous as in military almost every one is giving the impression as nothing much was done before him this is again a part of military culture. I was put into the custody of the Subedar major of the Rifles a Khatak Patahn and another subedar who is now part of the band of the SR.

We four now walked the fourth one was the official photographer of the Rifles , Major Afzal left after making last minute arrangements for my stay. We walked through the narrow streets of the Razmak, on both sides were the old barracks of bygone days. Iron roof tops which are slanted because it snows heavily here, The SM told me that it is unusual to have such a hot day as today otherwise by this time it rains. Fruit laden trees paved footpaths and frequent sign boards indicating where a missile has been hit in recent years almost every tree and every building had the same markings. We first went to the library and I went through the books nothing extraordinary yet I found a magazine Balahisar of 1994 which had an article on Tochi Scouts history. From there we walked down and first saw the

military transport shed built in the early days of Razmak , on the other side were isolated huts and long barracks some in living shapes other declared dangerous all had corrugated roof tops, stone walls some plastered but majority left as they were, signs of demolished buildings, area is littered with trees and over all green, the view all around is god air fresh and crisp, the road in pretty good condition with stony footpath and drainage. I was taken to the Ali masjid which was hit by a rocket last year and now under repair, it is imambargah of the Rifles as well. From there we walked to the edge of the fort, the Razmak is not a classic fort rather it has a boundary wall which has been fortified and height increased and decerased over the years. Now we were in the eastern edge and all huts were in deplorablse conditions. Razmak after its glory period remained vacant till 1970 when it was under the Khassadars who were a native force and much of its deterioration took place then mainly because of lack of funds for maintenance. This is any case is the living area of followers the Christian sweeper colony. I inquired about the old Church and I was taken to a hut which had the sign of the Shawal Church with a proper cross and name of pastor as well , I asked the subedar to get the permission for our entrance and we walked in , a heavy dog was having siesta under the tree and two men came out from the huts and I shook hands , the church is not the genuine old rather a new one so I left. The SM told me that it has been renovated by the present commandant and on Christmas Commandant and other officers come here and take food with the Christians , this is not only impressive but heartening also. We reached the barren outskirts of the eastern boundary wall and stood under a tree and just absorbed the area . SM narrated me the rockets that have been fired the last one came yesterday. The band Subedar told me that there used to be a distillery here at the eastern edge, he also said that he once found a gold murti which was taken by the senior many many years ago, he

also indicated building rather a hut which was an Hindu Mandir but not any more as there are no more any hindus here.

There is an old post just on the north eastern periphery of the Razmak Garrison, the striking part of it is that it has underground pathway, now there is a road but still the troops use the old path. The SM then took me to show the water supply system of the Razmak, on the way when I pointed out to the old huts and also said that probably more huts were there and have perished, he narrated how just yesterday they found an old grenade of 1936 and also that a year ago they while digging new buildings foundation they found a cache of 260 hand grenades which later were destroyed, the water reservoirs are covered with sheets as they were in pioneer days, there are two water tanks which were clean and water absolutely crystal clear they clean these tanks after every three months, now they have their own tube well but the old water pipe lines are still in working conditions with their old markings, water is drawn from the mountains and drawn over miles. We then drove to rather we first walked to the outer perimeter where they have their firing range, the runway is just within a stone throw distance where a local shepherd was herding his flock of sheep and few cattle, this was the first time since my arrival in Waziristan that I have been outside the fence and was bit apprehensive but SM asked me whether I want to go till the end of runway and I nodded in affirmation and he then told the photographer to go and fetch the vehicle and meanwhile he narrated the life pattern that the Shawal Rifles have gone since 2001.

Initially we were having excellent relations with the natives, The Mahsuds live just close by rather the river or nullah is the boundary, we used to attend their marriages, funerals and invited them on sports functions and other events, we used to shop in the bazar and



at Makin the heart of Mahsud which lies just twelve miles south of Razmak rather behind that ridge line in the south he pointed out, in 2005 the relations started deteriorating and it reached its apex in 2007 when no less than 1900 rockets were fired on the Razmak from the adjoining mountains day and night, on eid in 2007 we fasted the whole month with nothing but lentils as there was no supply none had the cigarettes and even we ran out of naswar, on eid we did not had any sweets to celebrate believe me sahib. The people who were working here and living outside in the country side were threatened and many were slaughtered for working in the Scouts, but none of the men deserted except one odd. Meanwhile the double cabin came and he sat on the driving seat and we drove towards the northern end , he further highlighted that these villages on the periphery are friendly these are the summer abode of Wazirs who have started arriving as he indicated a truck at one of the village, these people or the Wazirs are not that hostile as the Mahsuds . The band subedar narrated how the Premier Bhutto came here in 1974 and landed here at this spot there was a huge gathering of the people and somebody fired in air and then more firing and Scouts in apprehension for his safety wanted to take evasive measures but Bhutto stopped and went to the people and promised them electricity and school and all of sudden the mood of people changed, he was highlighting the effectiveness of a politician in understanding the people, the SM then narrated that how President General Musharraf came few years ago and there was a local Jirga assembled for him and one of the Malik got up and said how I accept that you are the head of state if you cannot provide electricity, incidentally the Bhutto promised was never fulfilled in totality and Musharraf was dumbfounded and it was the governor who got up and said we will provide the electricity and open up hotels provided you guarantee that there will be no fire and weapons will not be carried and malik replied I cannot and governor

said till then the president also cannot guarantee the electricity, how far is this true I cannot comment but the point was my initiating the discussion by saying that the political agent and politicians are the best means to combat this menace and these were their comments.

We reached the northern post , a tower like building with iron and steel gates and similar structure protruding out from four corners at mid height to allow the sentries to observe and fire, all around are well dug trenches which were not there in past but have been made now for extra protection. Beyond the northern end where stood a high mountain lies Datta Khel. The post commander took us around and SM pointed out to a large mud complex with iron gate and said this is the house of a nephew or grandson of Faqir of Ipi, it is on the northern edge of the village, the whole village composed of mud compounds and houses was absolutely quiet and there was no movement what so ever, weather fine and air fresh and crispy. We were offered Rooh Afza which was not that cold. It is a different feelings to stand in the Wazirs country knowing fully well that any time a rocket can come from any direction. All the adjoining peaks are under occupation by either army or the Shawal Rifles. SM also showed me the Alexandria Picquet which is there on the northern ridge, he further narrated that they used to walk to Miran Shah on foot and it used to take a day and almost half day to Datta Khel, beyond Alexandria lies Gardei and Dossali posts.

As we were driving back a group of young boys numbering around ten in which two were carrying weapons with long hair and caps were walking across the strip, the SM made me wise by saying that they are friendly but now every one is in the Taliban dress code of long hair with a cap and weapon in hand. I looked at those young men with amazement as one watches lions on a jungle safari not

knowing when they will get furious. Later we walked back and I inquired from the SM whether he is living with his family and he nodded in affirmation and I glanced at my watch it was three o'clock so I just cut the tour short and despite protests from SM send him forcibly to have lunch with his family and my self went to mess and in my room which was the first one and void of any curtains, ordered a cup of tea and ashtray, the attendant which Major Afzal had detailed came and then I also sent him back to the unit as I really did not need him the mess waiter was enough. After lying down and thinking of John Masters his initial days in the mess also of Major William of Gilgit Rebellion fame, the first ladies which came here in 1935 and things related to them I decided to search the mess and later found that there is no mess library and thus I went for a walk on the clues of the John Masters. I first entered the present governor annexe where the foot prints of two ladies are preserved in a glass covered mosaic with adjacent markings. The corner of this annexe is being pulled down which I later learnt to make room for a monument. Grape vines dry and a neglected lawn yet the cemented marking made for guard of honour and flag post, almost all head of states at least of Pakistan starting from General Zia have been here and this was the place where some even stayed otherwise the governor used to spend few days of summer here. I ventured towards the rear of the annexe and found a large garden with a tree in the centre the sun room is now a neglected gymnasium but offers a good view of the whole building, probably this is the oldest structure standing with a functional layout. The adjacent rooms which in past were used by the governor's entourage now occupied by 212 Brigade staff have familiar layout with the washroom bulging in the rear with its own door for sweeper, this layout was there at Cherat also and also in Rawalpindi there are also other buildings made of similar design but with concrete stone blocks and thus are of a later date.

Commandant's house is a fine building with brass insignias of the Shawal Rifles on both gates the sentry on the duty was rather suspicious of my taking pictures of the area but remained quite, I went till the end of the street and keenly observed the house on both sides, the house next to commandant is that of the wing commander and the house opposite was without any marking but had a sun room on the top, all the houses have iron sheets sloping, plenty of green trees of all kinds but majority of them are fruit bearing, the street has a white wooden gate at the end and I just sat there to see the vast open spaces , I noticed a plaque on the side wall and I went closer it was a recent one almost three years old marking the inauguration of something by the previous commandant's wife but now it was rather diplayed. In Scouts there is no tradition of any thing being inaugurated by a lady it is absolutely against their customs and this one was some daring lady probably her husband was like majority of army officers too scared to say no to her{ I myself falls into that category}. I walked back introduced myself to the sentry had his picture taken which he readily and with pleasant manners agree, majority of the scouts and rifles soldiers are too happy with camera. I took a different route and went through the lane opposite commandants house, the lonely street had plenty of greenery and huts were white washed the house belonged to the DAA & QMG or in short quartermaster, the round took me back to the mess and I descended down and reached the same library which I visited couple of hours ago.

A lone scout was going and I asked him can he tell the librarian to please come here and he happily nodded, these scouts are a much cordial and cooperative and more efficient than the army chaps that is my personal observation. In the meanwhile I just sat on the side wall and try to absorb the surroundings, what was this building

which is information room before, what was behind it, how was the life here almost 75 years ago. In front of me there was a she dog playing with her three puppies and my mind raced back five years ago when at Skardu I had carried out an experiment of rearing a wild puppy which turned out to be a female and gave nine pups after a year and meanwhile I had captured another pup which also grew up and thus after year and half I had almost twenty pups and grown up dogs including many lovers of that first female roaming around my mountainous house. Another scout was taking care of his garden , majority of the scouts at Tochi and here also are fond of gardening and this an excellent way of passing time positively. Meanwhile the same photographer came and said he is in fact looking after the library also. The walls of this soldiers school in which this library is established had quite an array of quotes painted, one deals with the status of mother, other highlighting the importance of education and another giving and highlighting the indication of downfall of man and nations and one of the leading cause was when man will listen and obey his wife more than his parents. I had a good time in the library and found few magazines and books dealing with my research on Tochi Scouts. To avoid drowsiness I had avoided lunch but now I was feeling starved and this was making me drowsy . Another ssoldier came and sat with me and I came to know that photographer had gone to fetch me a cold drink in this state of empty stomach I was in no mood to have a cold drink so I said to this soldier lets go to the café if you have one here and have samosas, which he agreed. I did not had a single penny in my pocket but I knew in any case he will never let me pay for it. His name was Imran an Afridi from Khyber Agency , we both walked and he narrated me something about the area but in my empty stomach state I was not listening to any thing.

These two scouts were trying their utmost to be as hospitable as they can running around, I was now understanding the proverbial hospitality of patahns and more specifically the scouts. I went with him despite his feeble protests inside the dark café which was frying the samosasa and putting them into a bowl with salad, the other scout the photographer in the meanwhile had grabbed a whole bench for me and I said firmly that I will not sit on the bench rather I took them to the green part of the open lawn in front and sat on the grass, the photographer was in line waiting for the samosas and Imran and I had a conversation. He asked me how many children I do have and hearing that I have to he replied he had four. He then said his younger daughter of ten months has a cardiac problem with a hole in her heart and it is quite depressing but God will be kind. We watched a volleyball game being played in near distance, there were three guns of Shawal Rifles deployed right in front of us, Imran said before this insurgency one required the permission of the inspector general of the corps to fire even a single round but now any observer or soldier can call for artillery fire and when 130 mm gun fires the roof shakes and debris starts falling. After the samosas which were good the photographer beg leave and myself and Imran had a tour of the area. He pointed to one of the house which had red roof and broken walls that this used to be the residence of officers but now the displaced people are living here. Many of the scouts were living in the nearby villages and quite a number of them were slaughtered by the Mahsuds in order to cause the desertion among the scouts but they have failed and commandant has allowed many such families to live inside the camp. Imran also narrated how from 2007 onwards the things went wrong and how now every hut and barrack has a dug out for protection against the falling rockets. I gave my point of view that we are loyal to our constitution and to our regiments and this is our honour. I have found that instead of

touching religion the best way is to stay loyal to the constitution of the country and to the regiment which we belonged and this is precisely what was the cardinal or centre of gravity in the British era. We walked for long time going through the hospital which is as it was decades ago and all military hospitals have similar layout, good flower beds and neat and clean walls, patients were playing something which I do not recall now , may be it was badminton. We also went to the auditorium which has the marking of 1932 and Queen Victoria's Own. This is the only building left with any British marking here there is another hut which has the year 1922 written on it. In all military buildings all over the Pakistan the British had the wisdom to write the year of construction with cement in a round circle, it is there at Karachi in army aviation squadron mess and adjoining houses, in Lahore in Peshawar in Quetta every where but it is only at Miran Shah and at Razmak that this aspect over the years has been neglected . There are number of mosques four to be precise here . All over one comes across stray dogs moving around but these dogs are very beautiful typical mountainous and winter bred. Imran told me that these are Powindah's dogs which are off shoots of their parents doings they roam around here and fed upon the cook house left overs and as such are totally harmless. It was pray times so I bid farewell to him and thanked him for his hospitality and reminded him about the books which he had to deliver me in the morning on a loan voucher.

I had a look at the mess lawn and the first thing which caught my eye was the tennis court and the badminton court, it seems that tennis is the official and traditional game of the officers of frontier corps. A row of trees with the palques in front of them recording the date and person who planted it , the very tree is palnted by General Zia Ul Haq in 1978 and next one not in chronological manner

was the bearing the name of Qayyum Sher Mahsud the deputy of Frontier Corps, he was my base commander at Multan a fine senior. I noticed the sentry taking off his shoes in the tennis court he placed his rifle in front of him and then sat down to take off his shoes and offered his prayers. The change of uniform at least in Scouts have failed to undertake the fact that all scouts pray come what may, and with old dress which had only chappals as foot wear it was simple and quick and now these shoes are time consuming and requires the person to sit in order to remove them. Many a times we have afiled to understand the cultural aspects in our desire to be modern and western looking, this change of uniform of the scouts is the biggest blunder that has been made in the name of efficiency without taking into account the real facts, the reality is that shoes atke more time to wear and take off as compare to the chappals more over they create smell in feet due to socks, chappals on the other hand is local and quick, regarding the efficiency it should not be forgotten that all the natives since British era have been wearing and fighting them with these chappals and they have the battle record to prove the efficiency of these chappals.

Major Afzal as per his promise was there and we sat outside, sorry I have mixed up, I was sitting in the room writing the very first line when came the Colonel Staff Colonel Riaz and we sat for some time, he had spent his youth in the Cadet College Razmak way back in 1980 and now he asid I am going to the college to rekindle my old memories, I have started liking his intellect and now I understood why Ali got him on choice with him, I was under the impression that Ali abbass is satying the night in the Razmak and as such made a mental note of taking shower in his suite because in my room there was no warm water and in any case it seems embarrassing to confess to any young officers that I need warm water with Ali it is ok.



I reached the dinning hall at nine sharp one of the few rare times in my life when I have been able to make it in time, the mess is generally okay not as wonderful as Tochi Mess, no old pictures no visitor book no books, few silver items , one tank replica which was very in thing in mid eighties when it was first made and presented to General Zia by the Armoured Corps Centre , a gun replica, an odd dagger the most eye catching item is a brass samovar, the mess it self is in layers with Television room a few steps down, a cooridor linked the main ante room to a bigger hall which I believe in actual design was meant to be either a dancing hall or banquet hall. I just mark the steps when Major Afzal came in and informed me that the officers are sitting outside and there they were the colonel staff the brigade major the staff captain and another officer which I learnt later is the deputy commander of the brigade, they all rose and I shook hand and took seat , this is quite an exercise because it is their courtesy that they rise otherwise they are not supposed to do so for a retired officer especially if he is junior to them in retiring rank but then this is what makes Pakistan Army so unique and special , my gratitude to them. Later the brigade commander Brigadier Babar and Commandant Shawal Rifles also join in and after some time Brigadier Babar complained of the chill and we moved inside, I occupied a side sofa and just remained on listening end, the initial conversation among them was regarding the Indian Premier League and Babar was especially praising Dhoni for his innings and the way he hit a Yorker for a six he showed with his wrist movement that how difficult it is to do so, the young ones then came out with all sorts of records and data to show the calibre of Dhoni and the latest rules regarding the teams for reaching finals. It is cricket which is the binding factor between Pakistan and India and also England, it is also the only time and subject on which a junior can differ with a senior in military especially in Pakistan Army. The Commandants of

both Tochi and Shawal Scouts are quite a fan of cricket and they have been spreading it to these remote corners as well. The other topic was the forthcoming Volley Ball tournament between the scouts and the army. Mess Havildar came saluted and informed that dinner is ready this is also quite a drill. I thought Ali is taking food in the room unlike of him but I kept quite. The talk on the dinning table was casual and Babar seems to be well informed about the area, he narrated how he met Bait Ullah Mahsud in 2006 as a lieutenant colonel, I inquired about the physical features of Mahsud and he said that he is around mid thirty , normal height and slim body frame with a beard. Food taste was same as in any army mess. Colonel riazat narrated how when he visited Razmak in 2004 for a college reunion , he saw next to Alexandria Post the big writing on mountains with white lime on stones that Mullah Omar is our leader and Babar agreed and narrated his experience of similar pattern. Babar being a Punjabi has that sublime hate for Mahsuds and for all these tribes who considered themselves invincible, he is not alone in this feeling because almost all Punjabi officers and men have same mind set, I also had the same idea when I was in army and it is only while travelling and living among them that I change my thoughts yet it is difficult for any army personal to think that any one tribe or area can defy the power of military or army. Another issue that was broached on the dinning table in connection with the invincibility of tribes was their history and how they helped British in their rule, Brigadier Babar gave the example of Fort Munro where the treaty of Baloch Sardars with British is preserved in the shape of seven direction figure then somebody puts in the name of Tiwanas and other, I remained silent because to correct the history on a dinning table with a host without having the support of my course mate Major General Ali was fatal. The history which army officers have read and understood or taught is very basic and not analytical rather it is stuff which is published

in digests of commercial stuff. I at one time shared the same beliefs but now I see it in different perspective, the tacit support of tribes to British should not be construed as treason rather as part of forward policy further more on the same yard stick almost all of our national heroes falls into similar allegations because they all went to England for education and remained on the pay roll of them as government servants either as lawyers, judges, teachers and military personnels. This crisis of identity are not unusual as all similar nations which have got freedom or so called independence which in any case was nothing more than transfer of power are at odds as to whom they should call traitor and whom as freedom fighter. The easy targets are the tribes especially the Baloch and political big names of Punjab who remained in opposition to Mr Jinnah thus opposing the political thought and policy of Mr Jinnah has become a symbol of treason. The case of Dr Afridi also came under discussion who was sentenced for thirty years for helping Americans to catch Osama, almost all the officers were of the opinion that Americans will take him out. The officers entirely follow what the mind set of the senior is and Babar was anti American anti Benazir Bhutto, I think anti is bit strong he was naïve. This pattern I have seen and have been a part of it where the political ideas of a senior are adopted by the junior officers in these mess talks which in any case are prohibited by army rules but they are there. When a senior officer makes fun of the head of state and the institutions then one can expect little mental grooming of juniors. The proper way is to do so in a professional manner where the ideas and current affairs are dealt in a mature manner but these passing remarks are dangerous. It was only after dinner that I came to know that Ali is staying the night with 11 Frontier Force on the post

Afzal and myself went for a walk we sat at the view point and watched the sky full of stars and the surroundings, the posts all

around were well lit and even the tracks leading to them were bright with light it seems as one is sitting in Islamabad and looking at the Minal Restaurant, I do not find any wisdom in so much of brightness because even if any Mahsud who is coming for an attack on these posts can hardly lost his way. Afzal told me that today a Schweizer helicopter has crashed at Rahwali killing Major Zahid Bari and another student while they were flying over the river Chenab at low level. Later we had a cup of tea in the mess and he further narrated his flying experiences , it was very refreshing to hear and talk about flying after so many years, Major Afzal is one of those pilots who fly by the rules and as such have survived although we both had narrow misses in the aviation school, he is simple and very efficient.

When I slept I had my wife in my dreams and my children as well. Night was peaceful and no rocket fire. Next day I had a tour of the area with Commandant Colonel..... he took me around and we climbed to the top of the post close to the helipad it is under construction. Commandant is simple and trying to create some kind of history but in that process the real history and heritage of Razmak is getting obscure , he has named the streets and blocks after the pattern of Islamabad thus his office is in F Sector and Mess is in G sector it quite confusing.

Puma came at 1100 hours and before that Ali had arrived in his jeep, very kind of him that he received me with an embrace and stood up; he picked his own small bag over his shoulder and the young officers had looks of admiration. This seems trivial in over all context of military life but in our military culture even these natural things have lot of implication where senior officers seldom carry their own diary even. I intentionally sat in a way to have a view of the area from the different angle then the one which I had

while coming towards Razmak. Not much of change in the scenery, barren mountains with green patches mud tracks going and linking the valleys over and through the streams and dry beds of numerous ravines. Population mostly on the dry beds it is clear that at one time it was a flourishing civilisation as long as there was water flowing but now there seems to be scarce cultivation, an odd car running around other than that there seems to be little change in them in all these centuries. Miran Shah itself is the centre of all the communication and trade hub, the town is spread over the wide banks of the Tochi River which is mostly dry.

### **Miranshah- Back**

We arrived and landed safely back to the Miran Shah from where Ali went to his office and I had a talk with Major Zaheer who is flying to Bannu thus I gave him my camera to take aerial pictures of Mir Ali and also that of Miran Shah. I went to the waiting room at the tarmac where there were no less than sixteen aviators, eight from Cobra, two from Puma and rest Mi- 17, the Cobra crew is being changed today and I just sat there listening to their talks and jokes, only one officer Major....knew me then another Major Musharraf came from 4 Squadron my old squadron. I just tried to find old faces among this new cream of army, I could see my old friends and characters among them, in flying cover all they all look same they talk in same language they crack same jokes their cribs are similar to what I have been listening and cribbing my self for two decades, I knew what is going on in their minds. My ears were catching various noises, someone was narrating his solo experience how he got away with the forced landing other explaining to another the intricacies of an altimeter. Like good ole days the flight commander had gone to the division to get the claims signed and now the mission was

waiting for him, constant telephone ringing and getting weather, few were talking in Pashto others in urdu mixed with English I just there for an hour enjoying this humming of aviators full of laughter. Lieutenant Colonel Riffat commanding an Azad Kashmir Regiment was sitting next to me and we did not talk a word but then he ran out of cigarettes and I offered him the last one and we started talking, he is from Bunji and I told him about my thesis and luckily he had met few survivors of the 1947 living in his area and we exchanged numbers.

I then went to the Tochi offices on foot and was offered lift by the regimental police riding a motor bike which I gladly accepted, later I briefed Lieutenant Colonel Tariq regarding my visit. Major Zamir also came, they are having volleyball tournament or match and he was quite excited about this. A thunderstorm came in the evening, I just slept and thought about the history. In the late I went to Ali's room sat there for some time and shared his food. Later met Major Zaheer and he narrated the mission which he undertook two days ago when at Peshawar they were informed about the two casualties at Timurgarh where two soldiers while carrying out mine laying operation had accidentally blown themselves thus aviation or Major Zaheer planned the mission sitting under the helicopter and by the time they reached the spot it was dark and they had to carry out night flying in the mountains, Zaheer explained that since there is no mountain or obstacles between Malakand and Peshawar thus he was comfortable at 3500 feet other than that he was critical of the way helicopters have been utilised, he disliked the fact that helicopter was used for the dining out of the colonel staff to fetch the brigade commanders from Razmak, he was appreciative of Ali Abbas that he carried his own bag at Patch Ziarat and commented that this is the way the senior should behave and conduct.

Late at night I took him to Tariq's residence and we had food there, by and large the conversation despite my best efforts still flung towards the politics and the pathetic situation in which our country is in, the sad part is that this conversation or remarks are without any solid substance and mainly based upon idealism.

**Friday, 25<sup>th</sup> May 2012.**

Went to the Political Agents office straight to record office where Amin was sitting there, in the agency offices one comes across men attired in traditional dress with long flowing Pagri and one is reminded of the excitement which early British settlers must have gone through, presently knowing fully well their tribal past and culture the feeling and apprehension remains the same, in one of these days I am going to approach them sit with them and just listen to their talk which I can understand little bit.

Went for a long walk with Havildar Shah towards the north eastern edge of the perimeter towards the College Post, the post commander was a Bhattani who was very hospitable and helpful, we walked towards the last post held by a Afridi Subedar as post commander, I walked out of the gate with him and a guard for few steps, in front is Machis Village, a seminary in front with student boys standing, a mud hut shop and regular flow of one odd car and motorbike. Bullet from a sniper expected anytime yet as an officer although retired I cannot just walk back or show that fear so just stood there and I was watched with same intent by those boys as my dress was different.

**Saturday 26<sup>th</sup> May.** Brunch in the morning, same taste, Ali gave a little talk to the officers on the professionalism which I apparently think will make no difference at all on any of us.

In the evening went for walk with Major Zaheer and Havildar Shah, it was first opportunity for Zaheer to be so close to the troops and see the town from the post, he got engaged into a theological and idealistic approach and debate with the post wallahs, nothing unusual as almost every one of the officer from army on his first contact and visit or trip thinks that he has the perfect remedy for this problem. The troops need motivation and when you get yourself into a debate of theological substance than it can be harmful for instance Zaheer raised the issue that our constitution is unislamic therefore we must follow the quran and our government is corrupt, I cannot take this beyond this thus I had to interfere and said it firmly that it is Islamic and there is a shariat court and federal court as well, the regimentation is the last word for us and we as soldiers must only obey the orders and should not think beyond that. The post commander a Turi from Kurram was himself quite philosophical about the end result. One common result which I have deduced is that almost all are questioning that why army is not striking at the militants, according to Turi subedar it has lowered the standing of army, he also narrated that they are under orders not to interfere with Haqqani group as it is carrying activities inside Afghanistan only. I raised the issue of friendly casualties and tried to make them understand why we are not taking on militants, although I myself is not clear about this yet I cannot let the troops get astray in mindless thoughts about why it is not being done, as soldiers one needs to keep the brain almost empty.

Similar queries in the evening in the mess lawn by young aviators whom I praised for flying Cobra, their point of view was not much different from what I or majority of young aviators had, to think and debate something beyond our rank structures. I had pleasant talk with these young pilots my theme was that state is there to look



into the matters and your task is to fly and hunt the militants and this you should enjoy and do not think that what will happen when these Cobras will get old and you there will be no spares.

**Sunday 27<sup>th</sup> May.** Met the commandant and dgave him a brief an enjoyable talk at his residence, quite regal and majestic yet serene, as he came to see me off at his gate he casually mentioned something about hasish and laughingly said that intelligence here has to supreme otherwise these people will sell us in the Miranshah bazar. I nodded in agreement.

In the evening I sat outside on a bench and tried to write when Zaheer came, they had gone to Razmak from there to Bannu and Peshawar and back, they have the freedom to travel which we do not, there was a humming noise in the air and Zaheer said it is Drone and I did not know it before and we talked about drone attacks for sometimes. Later at night I saw on television that a drone attack has been carried out at Mir Ali killing four.

**Monday.** 0845 hours. I better start getting ready for PA office, lets see what they have to say about drone attack.

2030 hours. England is just one run short of winning the second test also, cricket is a good past time much better than watching and listening to the non stop pessimistic views aired on channels all predicting a collapse of country.

Day was good, at the agency I searched through files and files and found the original border and administrative report of 1896, 1930 and 1942 apart from going through or scanning a whole history of the agency and the frontier region. There are files on the film censorship dating 1952 onwards highlighting long lists of the

films available and approved for screening. There are instructions on the censorship giving the exact sentence and scene to be deleted. One example is about a dialogue of Aslam Pervaiz which has been deleted in which he says that 'I do not believe on the god sitting up , he is only god for the rich' in another a scene is to be deleted where the camera has shot a heroine purely from her buttocks, in another a bathing scene is deleted. Our media has often been critical of censorship as against the creativity but the hard fact is that media is a pure commercial venture but sole aim of making money irrespective of the cultural consequences, a sentence about god can take thousand lives in a night here in frontier. I also saw the old newspaper of 1953 in which Governor General Ghulam Mohammad is tipped to be the first president after the approval of the constitution, in another news the Pakistani Premier has dubbed that relationships with India cannot be friendly unless the Kashmir and canal water dispute is resolved, at least one issue is solved that of canal water. There were lists of closed holidays to be observed in 1954 and new year and easter were gazetted close holidays then apart from Juma tul Wida. In another letter dated 1948 January the correct nomenclature of addressing Quaid I Azam is given in details. In some of the old letters there was one correspondence between the political agent and a firm in Bombay for the purchase of second hand liveries for the poor employees of the agency. There are files on the irrigation and forestry improvement in the agency, an advertisement for special short commission in army, another for recruits with height of five feet six inches with an education of three classes. Petition by the locals for construction of houses and gates. Report on the education standards of the agency there were over two thousand rupees of stipends for the students, there was one student from Miran Shah who went to Australia to attend a conference. Hospital works, fines on tribes and their agreements signed with

thumb impressions, the 1939 fair in Miran Shah when a merry go around was first introduced and tribes went wild with fun ultimately it broke down due to sheer weight of the men.

I was sitting on the mat scanning the files when a tribal man of around sixty with a beard and heavy turban came in, he was sitting outside when I walk in so I was pleasantly surprised to see him , he had three papers in his hand one original and two photo copies of the same. He spoke in Pashto and handed over the papers to me and I could make out that he wants me to write something on it. It was an application in which this syed was asking for monetary help in lieu of one Kalashnikov and two rifles which he claimed were destroyed on 11<sup>th</sup> May incident in the bazar. I was in a hopeless situation and I called Amin clerk and he came and said that this old man wants you to write favourable remarks on this before he put up to assistan political agent, the old man by virtue of my trouser thought that I am an official and this is what he conveyed me through his Pashto. I wrote one sentence ‘ I do not know this man but I have to write it so please look after him’ and that man shook my hand and gladly went away came back after five minutes and insisting that one line is less I should write three lines and I did, and he walked away gladly .

My laptop is still unable to connect to a wireless connection. In the evening Havildar Shah came with another Havildar and I ordered three cup of tea for all of us. Talk generally moved around Faqir of Ipi and faqir of shewa . I said that present situation is no different from the 1930s and then gave a general run down of the situation then and now with very precise selection of words, my aim was to inculcate the loyalty towards the constitution of the country and presenting this war not as a religious conflict but between those who believe in the rule of constitution and those who does not. Khattak asked

me rather painted a scene that if his wife or sister elopes away with another man then he would rather look into the circumstances which permitted this close contact. The tea came in at this precise moment so I was spared the answer. He seems rather educated and bit open minded although he confirmed that he is part of tablighi movement. Coming back to his question I painted another scene , for instance you are going on a journey and the bus meets an accident and your sister, mother, wife or daughter sustains injuries and nearest lady hospital is two hundred miles so what will you do, will you let them die or being operated by a male doctor. I painted another scenario in which mother is suffering from breast cancer and only a male doctor is qualified to carry out the operation. He enjoyed my scenarios and laughed. His next query was regarding the adultery, his point was that there is punishment for forced adultery but now they relaxed the conditions for consensus adultery which in his opinion was and is against the Islamic law. I said that those who made these laws are educated people and thus we must trust them in this case also. Further in my arguments I said rather he came up with the narrative that what about the female slaves of early Islamic era in which sexual contact was made with them and he was wondering whether that falls into adultery and I agreed that it logically is but then the life and laws have taken new dimensions with passage of time, for instance the slavery is abolished and more than that I show him that where as in the Battle of Ditch the Holy prophet {pbuh} elected to have a ditch we today preferred a wall around the Miran Shah camp because this is what suits us now more than the ditch. Thus in pure classic terms we have deviated from the original Islamic concept of warfare but then this is the liberty given in the religion, he agreed smilingly.

While telling them the historical background of the Tochi Scouts I said few good words about the British Officers ‘ they were

able to command respect because they were also ahle kitab or people of book. This he differ and I reminded him that when Muslims were being persecuted than it was King of Abyssinia Najashi who gave asylum to Muslims so how can we as a nation forget their kindness , it is against the culture of tribal society, he enjoyed this example the most. He narrated an event where in one of the books he had read that some religious scholar mentioned that if you even touch a woman then your wazoo is broken and in next breath he said that where as another religious scholar has objected to this by highlighting that in case if you touch a woman who is holding a child and you are picking that child say from your sister and so on.

Later he remarked that almost seventy percent of people of England are atheist and they have no moral values. I gave him personal example of my stay in the Glasgow University where I saw huge crowds of people attending the church, I told him that I have been regular visitor to the Church & Gurdwara, I explained the concept of nuns and he asked me why they are called sisters and what is the difference between them and the sisters of hospital. I narrated him how the soldiers till 1850 had no proper medical look after in the field and many died due to poor medical and sanitation conditions , the Florence Nightingale worked for them and this is how the Red Cross started. I further highlighted that look at the sisters or the nurses working in hospital looking after our parents and children washing them dressing them giving them medicine which in majority of the cases even we may be unable to do so there fore out of sheer respect for their noble work they are called sisters. Naik Khattak asked me when I came back from America and I replied just few months ago, he was inquisitive about the security check in which women has to go through a scanner and termed it a violation of modesty. I narrated him an incident how a woman in hijab

was checked by American female police and why it is necessary for security, right here in this Miran shah in 1919 a gang of six men were able to over power the sentry by pretending two of them as women clad in burqa, I further said that 'will you allow a women wearing a veil and totally covered in burqa to enter the Miran Shah complex from civil gate and he said no. My point was that security is not a violation of modesty or a religious beliefs but a necessity of time, and it is only the present time which has made us realised that we cannot allow a woman without scanning. His other query was regarding whether in foreign countries Muslims are allowed to built mosques and I said yes , in United Kingdom the number of mosques in 1947 were fifteen and now over three hundred as far as France is concerned it may be different but in England and America Muslims have complete religious independence as much as we have in Kurram Agency where every day there is some incident of religious instigation and entry of certain religious preachers is banned from time to time.

Khattak & Shah enjoyed this discussion and after some times we bid farewell . Now at this time there is a dinner going on in the Mess by the divisional staff , I do not know the occasion but since my course mate Ali Abbas is not here , he has gone to Peshawar to attend the promotion board so I have not been invited. Today I asked about Laiq shah a prominent historian of the area who has written a volouminous book on Waziristan in Pashto, I had this book with for last wto weeks and was thinking to call him because he lives in the city but when I inquired in the agency office, the Clerk Amin after asking from his next seat clerk duly informed me that Laiq Shah died two weeks ago.

## **Tuesday 2315 hours**

The power is off but generator is on, tonight aviators gave a dinner in which they invited Tochi Commandant and wing commander apart from assistant political agent so was I, in fact I gave this proposal to Major Zaheer last week to interact with the divisional staff and Tochi scouts reason being that I never saw any aviator not even the flight commander being invited on any party which to me is quite strange because an aviator is the one officer whom the whole division should know and whose coordination and participation is vital for the success of any operation. While writing the Royal Air observation Post I after going again and again through the draft realised that pilots ego and way of working is different and he either is too extrovert or too introvert depending upon his flying grooming thus he has to be approached and then he will mix up with the officers, all my commanding officers especially Lieutenant Colonel Azam always used to stress that as a pilot one must go and meet all the divisional staff so it was passing on that to new generation. Good food especially the sweet dish Rabri excellent. Green tea under a starlit night with humming noise of drones flying overhead ends the day.

My day at political agency was good went through certain old files. The government officials in 1933 were not allowed to attend any farewell entertainment without permission from deputy commissioner. In 1961 Niaz Ali Khan the nephew of famous faqir of Ipi was the medium of conduct and contact between the political agent and the tribes thus he was on the payroll of the government to counter the Afghan propaganda for Pakhtoonistan, he was supplied with money and propaganda material apart from rations to woo the tribes. In June 1961 the government imposed duty on timber

and tribes threatened to assemble at Razmak on 1<sup>st</sup> July and on 30<sup>th</sup> June government took back the decision and averted a fight, thus political solution remains the best way to ensure peace here. In 1960- 61 census the population of Wazir Tribe was 91239, Daur 58328 and Saidgi 5040. Wazir have three main sections namely Ibrahim Khel, Wali Khel and Mohmit Khel. The Ibrahim Khel has three sub divisions namely Madda Khel settled in Datta Khel where the area is known as Madda Khel even on map. Manzai Khel they reside in Kanirogha, Mannirogh, in summer they migrate to Shuidar and Mazdak, Shuidar is the area above the runway at Razmak. The third subsection is Tori Khel the hardest and most turbulent they live in lower portion of Khaisora valley upto Kaikowan at the south of Shaktu and aroundabout MirAli and Sherstallah plains they also migrate to Razmak in summer.

Daur they live along the banks of the River Tochi they are regarded as the most advanced tribe mainly agriculturist, their area is from Pai Khel to Khajauri except the Hamzoni area which is the name given to tribes occupying the area between Boya and Darpa Khel. Saidgi are not to be taken seriously the old man who met me yesterday asking to write something on his application was a Saidgi.

Another observation about the litigation is that Wazirs seldom settle their scores through litigation rather they do it in their own way but Daur are quite into litigation system, generally Wazirs are poor and Daur are rich, the original owner of the fertile lands were Wazirs who sold their land to Daur and later it were Daur who were robbed and attacked by the Wazirs thus they the Daur asked for British protection this is how the British were able to make an ingress here. Powindahs in 1960 were stopped from entering into Pakistan for the reason that their presence would increase the price



of basic commodity at Miran Shah the simple equation of supply and demands as a result the files indicate that many powindahs lost their lives due to harsh weather in Laghari Wara area near Miran Shah. Electricity came to Miran shah in 1961 and it was hoped that it will hasten the speed of civilisation . There were four civil hospitals twelve dispenserries and four veterinary hospitals in the agency apart from five Tochi Scouts hospitals at Miran Shah , Boya, Mir Ali, Khajauri and Spinwam. 6100 animals were treated in the year, there was one donkey stallion, one stud stallion and ten stud bulls and 119 rams studs in the agency. The rams won second and third prize in the national horse and cattle show . In 1960-61 under the basic democracy there were ten members elected from Miran Shah and six from Mir Ali. Malik Jahangir Khan a Wazir from Madda Khel was elected for provincial assembly and Malik Daryaa Khan a Wazir Tori Khel for national assembly but he is from South Waziristan, the Daur member Subedar Akbar Khan's papers were rejected thus the honour of being the pioneer parliamentarians goes to these tribal leaders. The movies that were not given censor certificate in the year included Expresso bongo, La Viertie, David & Goliath, Town without pity, Girl Fever, Baghdad after midnight; majority for nudity and some of the urdu films were based upon their socialist dialogues and other on religious reasons like the Private lives of Adam & Eve.

I later left the office and went to Tochi Scouts offices had cup of tea rather juice with Commandant he is always very courteous. Later had a nap in which I remembered my children when they were toddlers nad I could hear their voices.

In the evening went for a walk with Major Zaheer and talked about Osama, Shakeel Afridi and NATO supply routes, he generally agreed with my observation that in army the officers by and large

do not think logically about these events rather they go with the mind set of the senior, I in my arguments highlighted that if only the foreign office is left to decide these issues then they can always get a good bargain but there is always a solution to all present issues but only if tackled logically and not emotionally. Osama bin Laden raid was no doubt a violation of our sovereignty but before that we were so goody good with the American having lunches and dinner parties and giving away presents on farewell which Zaheer agreed and added that yes same was the pattern at Tarbela , so where we or our relations went wrong, the answer lies in Osama, but we have acted as Osama was not our enemy rather a friend, if American did not shared the information then purely from military mind one can accept the logic because even in army at times data is not shared with others so in the end the operation proved successful. To my mind we should have stick with the idea and propaganda that we have provided the information and have helped in making it successful and in lieu cash the good deeds because in the end it is the commercial gains which matter. Now the hard reality is that liberals and moderates have lost or are on the run and hardliners are dictating the foreign policy because no one is allowed or is even willing to put forward the other side of the story and there are always two side of a coin. Here we are now in an economic mess because we cannot afford the cost of these military operations which in any case are being conducted as a result of Osama hunt. Today none is remembering General Musharaff but only few years ago there was none to say any word contrary to his policies thus army as a thumb rule simply follows the line of the chief which is a good thing and it should be like this but then chief is bound to follow the political leadership which he seldom does. General Aslam Beg in 1990 Gulf War went against the policy of Nawaz Shariff and resultantly every coalition partner got its loan written off except Pakistan. The world

also works and live the same way the way these tribes are living, Daurs were weak so they called in the support of the Government, Wazirs as a whole are not that hostile but if one clans commit a crime then the others looks after their own interest first.

Visited the Pakistan Air Force radar setup within Miran Shah a MPDR 45 type, the weather hot and the corporal who took us inside had to first vacate the radar because four other air force soldiers were lying on a mat playing cards with air-conditioned on and chairs being kept out. They showed us the screen and there were six drones in the air and he said at night the strength increase to even twelve, now this is something strange on one hand military especially the army is shrieking about these drones but on the other hand own air force is silent about these, thus this is creating confusion among masses and the political government has to bear the brunt of these allegations from so called patriots. Visited 149 artillery regiment and got the briefing on their deployment, they are moving to Bahawalpur after a stay of two years here. The two young officers Capatin Adeel and the other whose name I am forgetting now explained how they have devised new and practical methods to conduct shoots here, I appreciated their work and narrated how my generation saw the Afghan War but certainly yours is more lucky to have such a wonderful combat experience here. It is times like this which actually makes a regiment an regiment in pure sense. Men and officers sharing the hardships and good times the ever constant threat and fear of Wazirs is something which removes all kind of laxity and casualness among the officers and troops. It is easy to talk in mess lawn with a cup of tea about war but this is reality the first real war that this army has fought since birth, in which there is no Geneva Convention to bank upon no mercy from the opponent and no conspiracy theories for failure although America remains the easy scapegoat for any eventually.

After dinner no few words about the dinner itself, the Commandant is an icon of courtesy at least for me and I am getting deeper and deeper into debt of paying back to Tochi Scouts and this is a worry matter for me. He is naïve about aviation and as such he was inquisitive about how the helicopters work and there was no dearth of technical flow of knowledge from aviators especially Major Zaheer, the discussion ranged to Osama and wisely I remained silent and on listening end, as a thumb rule a retired officer should avoid making any comment which are contrary to the expression of a senior especially in front of juniors on topics like this. I appreciated the sweet dish and after dinner when again discussion went on to lament the social fibre of the country I just gave facts and figures which shows that our education standards has improved in last decade, I highlighted the fact that in 1953 a boy from Miran Shah went to Australia for a study tour .

Tomorrow Major zaheer has given me an offer to fly with them towards data Khel and Boya area they are taking some mineral research team there lets hope I can make it in time for it.

### **Tochi Scouts - 1922**

In 1922 the North Waziristan Militia was renamed as Tochi Scouts although Shakespeare had written ‘ what is in name call rose by any name and it will still be a rose’ but in case of Tochi Scouts it was not mere change of nomenclature rather a transition to a new role with enhance capabilities and organisation. The background of all this dates back to Third Afghan War which terminated in 1919, British had suffered massive casualties on the central sector or more precisely in Waziristan specially in North Waziristan ; Tochi Valley.

Militia by its very name and essence conveys and stand for

armed people of the area who have been trained and organised in a manner that they will stand for their property and honour against any foreign aggressor, a kind of tribal lashkar droused in a military discipline. In case of North Waziristan or for that matter in the entire tribal belt the military command remained in the hands of British officers who were foreign and alien in terms of culture and religiously stands on the verge of hatred. These officers deserves credit for being able to cultivate that loyalty among the militia purely on the basis of those common attributes of a warrior and honourable men which are universal among the tribes. Majority of these officers were well versed with the tribal life style back home in England and particularly in Scotland where similar virtues were common. Among the militias along Durand Line the add nature of tribes are as such that they are more independent individually than any European or African tribal society. Among these militias the tribes of North Waziristan and South Waziristan are notorious for their self eccentric behaviour. They seldom listen or give themselves wholly to any one individual hereditarily. The Afghan War was the test of leadership and the honour code of men, in the end Khyber Rifles was disbanded because of mass defection among the men similar occurrence took place in NWM but Subedar Darim Khan saved the honour of his qaum by stead fasting with his pledge of loyalty to his officers.

North Waziristan Militia was raised, organised, commanded with an aim that that the regular Indian Army will come to the rescue in case of an attack across Durand Line and these reinforcement forces in the form of Indian regular army units were stationed in the area at Mirali, Idak, Ladha and Bannu but despite all this firepower the notion of victory remained with the Afghans and Waziris and reinforcement remained a fallacy.

In August 1921 Captain F.S. G. Campbell a Scott and Commandant North Waziristan Militia wrote a paper to the political authorities

*‘effective occupation of the Upper Tochi is essential as this alone will enable the political agent to exercise such control over the Wazirs as to ensure a minimum of raiding in the settled districts of the province...thus roughly speaking the problem here is the garrisoning of a stretch of country from Miran Shah to Datta Khel or preferably Sheranni , say 30 miles, partly in and partly surrounded by virile, lawless, reckless, well armed and very poor, though not, in ordinary times very hostile Wazirs. In the Thal – Idak tract the same problem arises regarding the line of 40 Miles all in Wazir country but in a sparsely populated area in the winter and almost deserted in the summer’.*

In the areas mentioned by Captain Campbell the requirement to have a force strong enough to camp out for two to three nights at a moment’s notice in order to intercept an raiding tribe was paramount. The memory of 27<sup>th</sup> May 1919 when the Wazirs of the North Waziristan Militia mutinied and ran away to join the intruding fellow tribesmen thus brought forward the inherent risks of having transfrontier recruits and sepoys in the militia. The Political Agent did not agreed with the instincts of the Militia and strongly favoured raising of another company of Wazirs , the commandant was of the opinion that the composition should have more recruits from the tribes that are more settled on the eastern side of Durand Line.

North Waziristan Militia at that time had a strength of 1600 which was deployed in two wings, Wing A responsible for Datta Khel with 200 men, Spin Khaisora 60 men, Tutnarai 60, Boya 50. Headquarters

at Miran Shah was looking after the Ahmed Khel 30 men, Towers between 23 – 30 with 170 men these were small piquets on Miran Shah – Idak Road, Thal with 40 men and Idak with 50 men where as the Wing B was responsible for Spinwam and sinews with 300 men. That was the operational deployment of the North Waziristan Militia in August 1921. This deployment left very little manpower for training ‘ this is too large a percentage of the total strength to be on command to enable a practical system of training to be carried out’ . Captain Campbell suggested to organise the occupation of the above mentioned posts on the basis of groups which he named as Group A & B, where as each group to be relieved after a period of nine months but with a condition that the towers on Idak – Miran Shah Road be taken over by regular troops thus relieving 170 men.

Between 6<sup>th</sup> January – 24<sup>th</sup> January 1922 a high level meeting was held at Delhi over the future of Waziristan. There were many options on this issue, the first one was to vacate the whole of the country as it has become ungovernable due to the militant Wazirs who now have Martini smooth bore rifles in their possession and further more have adapted themselves well in the art of mountain warfare the military cost of evacuation amounted to almost 154 lakhs of Rupees which was equivalent to the amount sanctioned by the council for the Waziristan in 1921, another factor was loosing face among the tribes and that would benefit only the Amir of Afghanistan ‘ Afghan agitators will loose no opportunity of telling the other tribes that Afghanistan has forced the British to evacuate Waziristan’ . The second option was to keep the regular force in close military districts like Bannu, Kohat and Dera Ismail Khan ready to carry out punitive action against the hostile Wazirs it was fundamentally reverting to the 1890 position, the third option was to maintain a larger regular force at key points within the Waziristan and there by

intimidating the tribes another option was to have an enhanced local force comprising of militia, Scouts and raising of Khassadar force. In the end a compromise was reached in which military occupation of Razmak and enhancement of troops including airforce at Miran Shah alongwith regular army units at MirAli was reached. Resultantly the meeting agreed to increase the strength of North Waziristan Militia by 500 men and to make it a scout organisation rather than a militia the key difference in this change of nomenclature was the tacit approval of Captain Campbell's arguments to have a force comprising of tribes other than purely relying on the local tribes which was the casus belli of North Waziristan Militia. Amount was sanctioned for the construction of a new cantonment at Razmak , Razmak was primarily selected for its close vicinity to heart land of Mahsud Tribe at Makin. To link it with Bannu a road was approved from Bannu – Idak- Isha and Razmak . Tochi Scouts was given the responsibility of keeping the lines of communication open , to inflict military fury at the insubordinate tribes , thus a three tier organisation emerged in the Tochi Valley , the Khassadar took over the role which North Waziristan Militia were performing earlier and Tochi Scouts became an potent force in the area to resolve all the issues less asking army to intervene.

Almost in the same time period if not in the same month a similar meeting took place in London where the very future of Royal Air Force was hanging in balance as both British Army & Royal navy took out the knives for either the reversion of this air force to them as it was at the beginning of the First Great War or failing it , to dissolve it. Air Marshall Hugh Trenchard the RAF chief was rescued by the events in Waziristan as he proposed that the RAF can look after the tribal insurgencies in Iraq and Waziristan in a much more economical manner as compared to Army, RAF was given



a lease of life. The very first RAF aircraft BE-2 was employed in December 1915 in the vicinity of Peshawar against tribes. Miran Shah became an active airfield one of the very first RAF station in Sub continent. It is worth mentioning that RAF was operating in India more specific in North Western Frontier Province only , Karachi was the sole exception as aircraft had to be unloaded and assembled there at Drigh road.

Miran Shah attracted aircraft man Shah the famous Colonel T. E. Lawrence alias Lawrence of Arabia who volunteered to be here as he was trying to run away from his past and it was at Miran shah that he finished his famous book Mint.

Miran Shah was a small mud fort but after the events of 1919 it was being fortified and now with the advent of RAF the pace of work started increasing . Razmak & Miran Shah became the symbol of British military in Waziristan .

Tochi Scouts numerically were too large to fit in wholly inside the Fort, thus a serai was established at Miran Shah where Scouts family quarters were built, the rest of the force was billeted inside the Fort. Razmak was completed in 1930 .

Miran shah Fort had the landing ground on two direction one facing North and other on a West – East alignment , this was to cater for the landing and taking off for the aircraft which is dependent on wind direction. Hangars were built for the aircraft , a gate was made which remained closed at night but for aircraft operation will be opened and aircraft then taxied to the tarmac. Tochi Scouts had the accommodation on the southern side of the fort. There was only few buildings which were pucca even till 1938. The Fort was also inhabited by the mountain battery which later on came under the Tochi Scouts command.

The life at Miran Shah had its own colour, on 20<sup>th</sup> May 1922 the 101 Grenadiers lost 22 rifles, four pistols and eight thousand rounds of ammunition when its patrolling party was attacked by the tribals, Tochi Scouts were sent in pursuit and after a day's gasht the tribe was identified and from then onwards the political agent took over the affairs and resultantly the tribes deposited back the stolen arms and ammunition, this was the frontier way of working. The population of Tochi valley in 1921 was 1,44,379 where as in 1911 it was 1,39,415.

Tochi Scouts adopted its own way of life which was independent and clear of the regular army bureaucratic system. The first and fundamental step was to recruit a proper scout thus in 1922 the induction of bad class, wrong class and religious class were sternly discouraged to an extent that all those who were even recruited before this but now termed under these classes were released from the Tochi Scouts and those who had served for a period were restricted for promotion up till only havildars. A sepoy was enlisted for three years after which he was free to leave or keep on serving as long as he desires. The composition of the platoons and companies were based upon the class {qaum}. Marksman ship was strongly patronised and no class three shot the lowest standard was eligible for promotion. British officers had to pass a basic test of Pashto within three months before they were entitled for leave. Durbar was held on every Wednesday in which all the larger matters that affect the Corps and all subjects of general interest also, Commandant would address in Pashto. All enlistments and discharges required Commandant's approval less that of followers, similarly all promotions were his discretion other than promotion to and in the commissioned ranks of Indian officers which were made by Chief Commissioner on the recommendations of Inspecting Officer Frontier Corps which was

raised in 1907 at Peshawar. Powers of Commandant were defined in the Constabulary Act of 1915 which was extended to Frontier Corps in 1925. Commandant Tochi Scouts delegated certain of his powers to substantive Wing Commanders and post commanders the power to give 28 days rigorous imprisonment, deprivation of Lance Stripes or forfeiture of three months Tochi Allowance. Tochi Scouts standing orders required that all cases or men transferred to Miran Shah for settlement should be accompanied by the evidence and no man placed in arrest may be released even by British Officer without the permission of Commandant to ensure uniformity all cases were handled by the British officers when putting up to the commandant.

Each wing had three companies and each company having three platoons there was one headquarter company and one Machine Gun Company which remained under control of commandant. Machine guns at posts were normally for defensive action and they were to fire only from the parapet of the posts, they were not to be taken out of the posts for action against an enemy except by orders of a British officer. The reason was that Tochi Scouts machine gunners were not taught tactical handling of indirect and overhead fire. They were however master in mounting gun for action fire and maintain it in action. It was stressed that post commanders must look upon machine guns as a reserve of fire power in his hand and should only use this fire power when the rifle fire power is not sufficient or effective. A machine gun team usually consisted of a gun commander and three other ranks but even at times two were also sufficient. On alarm at the post one machine gun complete and ready paraded with the post reserves platoon. One gun complete comprised of one gun with tripod, six belts in boxes with rounds and one tin of water for cooling, one condenser tube and bag, one spare parts box, one cleaning rod and one belt box carrier. The machine gun crew were

given extensive training and not more than eight men were paraded with one gun. During training only dummy rounds were used and live ammunition was not even allowed to be taken on the training ground.

Discipline was strict in Tochi Scouts, sepoys were bound to have haircut in accordance with their custom and Indian Officers were responsible for ensuring this. Gambling and lending money among sepoys was prohibited so was shukrana which was normally given by the prisoners to the havilat guard on release, no Fakira or religious mendicant of any sort was allowed inside the post day or night neither they were allowed to accompany the parties on tour. No regular man was to be appointed as mullah during Ramadan at the post or at any other times yet religious liberties were fully given but no mosque was to be built at the post or at any other place without prior permission. Same holds true for entertainment which was termed as 'Tamasha' however permission was granted if applied through the subedar major. Any sepoy or man wishing to have a guest was bound to report in Miran Shah to the subedar major and at post to the senior Indian officer. No guest was allowed to stay for more than three nights, particulars like the name of guest and his father name, tribe sub section, village and name of malik and finally the name of man responsible for the guest had to be furnished. The number of guests at Miran Shah were limited to four per company or total not exceeding twenty, in posts not more than three. The rifles of guests were lodged at the quarter guard. No malik or civilian was allowed to enter into the posts unless accompanied by a civil orderly or accredited Khassadar, in case if the Naib Tehsildar requires more than five men at a time inside the post then prior permission of the post commander was required, similarly without the express permission of political agent not more than five

tribesmen were allowed to be admitted into any fort or post and they have to be without arms and that includes daggers also. It was forbidden for the tribesmen to carry firearms within 1000 yards of the posts. Tochi Scouts were repeatedly told not to pluck fruit from the trees and neither they were allowed to enter the villages except with the permission of British Officers and it was sparingly given. Loss of rifle or its being stolen had a fine of 1000 Rupees, loss of bolt carried a fine of 600 Rupees and loss of revolver a 400 Rupees fine. The fine was not liable to remission even if the weapon is found later. The fine was collected from the class as a whole present on the sheet roll. A subedar had six shares of fine, Jemadar four, Havildar three, naiks two and sepoy & lance naiks one.

Armed party of Tochi Scouts proceeding to Datta Khel, Boya or Spinwam where the posts were usually in strength of 25 rifles with an escort of another 25. There were two medals in Tochi Scouts one was long service and other good conduct both these were awarded annually and only havildars were eligible for these. No scout under three years of service was encouraged to get married, the usual riwaj of the area is to get married at early age. There was a Scout Serai in the Miran Shah where family or married men were allowed to keep their families, scouts under three years of service were not given any accommodation in married Serai. the usual riwaj of the area is to get married at early age. There was a Scout Serai in the Miran Shah where family or married men were allowed to keep their families, scouts under three years of service were not given any accommodation in serai. This Serai had its own rules for living, it was Corps property and a rent was charged for its quarters and bill credited to Serai Fund, sweepers and bhisties were provided for the Serai out of this fund it was administered by the quarter master. The Mullah of the corps was exempted from the rent. The normal period

of stay in the serai was restricted to six months. There was a strict rule which forbid two families occupying one quarter either single or double. In 1923 soon after the raising of the Tochi Scouts there erupted a minor issue which by itself is of very trivial nature when seen from present perspective but it throws light on the working of the agency. Miran Shah had a water shortage and by 1922 it was not fully resolved, the main components in the Bazar were the civil Serai, Tochi Serai, general hospital and few shops which were dependent upon the water supply apart from civil garden. On 23<sup>rd</sup> May 1926 an application was given to the political agent by a native named Shah Jahan who requested and brought into the notice that the Scouts have put up an one inch water valve on the main water supply connection resultantly the supply of water has diminished in civil serai which is causing a lot of difficulties to the women folk. Within six month this simple letter resulted in a full file with correspondence between the Tochi Scouts, Political Agent, Garrison Engineers Razmak and finally Bannu also. Sketches of the bazar were made which incidentally is the only sketch of the Miran Shah bazar of 1923 and by itself is a historical sketch now. In the end a new well was dug to furnish more water to the bazar. Just for the record in August 1936 there were 32 scouts who were residing with their wives who also numbered 32 having 55 children, in September the strength decreased to 27 males and 30 females with 42 children and in October the strength was 22 males, 27 females and 40 children and in November it rose to 31 males, 36 females and 51 children where as in January 1938 the strength was mere 13 males and 14 females having 18 children.

In 1930 a census was conducted on all India basis in which Tochi Scouts also participated by carrying out the census duties, mostly the Hindu Clerks were employed in this regard however as a result

the population of the Miran Shah Fort in 1930 was 1206 scouts with one female, at Boya 64, at data Khel 209, Dossalli 365, Khajauri 180, Mir Ali 62 and Spinwam had 190 Scouts, thus over all strength of Tochi Scouts was 2361 out of which 2360 were male, the lone female employee was a Hindu sweepr. RAF had a strength of 66 at Miran Shah. The civil population of Miran shah numbered 1239 males and 130 females, Razmak had a population of 8273, Idak had 1237

Miran Shah is not a very healthy station especially in summers that is one reason that majority of the tribes particularly the Wazirs migrate to highlands. In 1925-26 Tochi Scouts lost eight men due to sickness where as in 1924-25 they had lost 24 men due to malaria, scurvy, dysentery and jaundice the improvement is mainly due to strict observance of anti malarial precaution that included mosquito nets supply and issue on reduce rates and wearing of long sleeves after sun set.

There were three types of holidays in Tochi Scouts which correspondingly relates to three religions, Islam, Christianity and Hinduism. Although there were no fighting manpower other than the native Muslims but all the clerks and contractors were Hindus. Even among the tribes in the villages there was always one Hindu employed collectively who was responsible for all written work of the tribe which included writing and preserving pacts and petitions. The tribes always regarded education as a menial task. There were five occasions which were declared as parade holidays it included one day for Shab-i-Barat, two days for Id-ul-Fitr & Id-ul-Zuha and also two days for Muharram and one day for Bara Wafat; on these days the office took place thus other than Muslims every one else worked. The office holidays were one day each for Basant

Punchami, Shiv Ratri, Holi, Janam ashtmi, Dewali, Solona and two days for Bisakhi and three days for Dussehra; on these holidays only one clerk was supposed to be in the offices. The general holidays were Sunday, New Year' Day, Christmas day, Good Friday, King's Birthday, Armistice Day { 11<sup>th</sup> November} and Empire Day which was 23<sup>rd</sup> May.

### **Fakir of Ipi 1936**

History repeats itself is an old idiom and it seems that North Waziristan is one place where this theory has been repeatedly proven to be true. In 1890's it was Mullah Powindah who became the focus of British Empire because Mullah Powindah was able to stir up an uprising against the British among the Wazirs on the basis of religion. In 1936 a similar uprising took birth in North Waziristan where again it was the religious sentiments which spread like a wild fire and for next decade and half British Empire was engaged in a manhunt. This uprising is peculiar because it was not a planned event rather an innocuous event at Bannu acted as a catalyst. From an historical perspective it has many lessons the foremost being the volatility of the region when even a rumour of an attack on Islamic values can erupt into lava of violence, binding the independent tribes to a common cause; something unachievable in any other circumstance.

### **1936 Islam Bibi & Mrs Simpson**

Love is a powerful factor in human relationship, it is an abstract in nature, it can be very creative and similarly it can be a destructive & disastrous event also. Helen of Troy initiated a war in ancient Greek history, within the sub continental perspective the very first Muslim Empress Razia Sultana's love affair with a black slave



proved fatal not only for her but also for the slave dynasty. Emperor Jahangir's love bite with Anarkali ended in a death mausoleum for her, and his son Emperor Shah Jehan made an expensive mausoleum of rare marble as a monument of his love Taj Mahal for his deceased wife Mumtaz Mahal at state expense.

In 1936 two love affairs hit the headlines. Both involved British citizen, one involved the King of Britain Edward VIII when he abdicated his crown for Mrs. Simpson. Another affair took place far away from London in Bannu City{ North Waziristan} which almost exterminated British rule in sub continent. A Hindu girl of sixteen years of age Ram Kaur fell in love with a Muslim Wazir tribesman Syed Noor Ali Shah, she embraced Islam, both got married, she adopted the name of Mirjina, {Islam Bibi this name was given to her later on } on 3<sup>rd</sup> April 1936, all of a sudden it became a communal affair. This was almost a replica of an earlier love story that took place in 1910's which involved Mr Muhammad Ali Jinnah and Ruttie Dinshaw, Ruttie was also non Muslim and underage. Islam Bibi's judicial battle led to a tragic end not only for the two lovers who were separated, imprisoned and later she was reportedly cremated at Hoshiarpur and Noor Shah also vanished and spent his rest of life wandering in pain. This love story also initiated a chain of action which lasted for a decade and a half and in the process took almost two thousand lives apart from causing British exchequer 7500£ a day in expense. Mirjina became Islam Bibi and this became a battle for Islam, this was the start of Islamic renaissance in modern time or more specifically in the Western Frontier of India

## **Fakir of Ipi**

***Mirza Ali Khan Tori Khel of Uthmanzai Wazirs alias Fakir of Ipi*** was born in 1897 in Shankai Kairta Banda which is located near Khajauri post of Tochi Scouts in North Waziristan . He belonged to sub tribe of Tori Khel Wazirs. His father was a religious man named Arsala Khan.

Mirza migrated from Tochi Valley to Bannu with his parents in 1905. Where he received his early religious education from Maulvi Ahmad Khan. In 1922 Mirza's father expired and he returned to his native Tochi Valley and bought land at Splagha Village and constructed a madrassah and started imparting religious education. Mirza was rest less soul , he set upon hajj and also travelled to Syria en-route to perform hajj, he stayed at Syria was married and bought property . He came back to Tochi Valley in 1928. His mother expired and Mirza could not bear the sadness, every place reminded him of her, thus he migrated to Bannu where he married the daughter of a religious person Qazi Sherazad, who had migrated from Bannu to Afghanistan during Khalafat movement and later came back thus Afghan connection took birth. Haji Mirza came back to Tochi Valley {Spalga Village} with his wife. In those days not many people had the resources or blessing to perform Hajj and since Mirza was one such person thus he was taken as an authority on religious affairs He performed his first Hajj and as such was known as Haji. Mirza also travelled to Afghanistan in September 1934 to visit Syed Hasan Gilani alias Nazqeeb Sahib.

Mirza was not present at Bannu when the Islam Bibi case started, since case took time to reach any decision and within that time anti British and anti Hindu feelings reached a fervent zenith,

many Hindu girls were abducted especially by the Bhattanis. A Jirga of Lower Tochi valley Ulemas gathered on 11<sup>th</sup> April 1936 in which it was agreed that a joint action must be undertaken on this issue. The political administration of agency was also keeping an eye on the affairs and through intimidation they were able to create a split among the ranks of the tribes of Dauris ; a punitive action was undertaken by the No.2 Wing of Tochi Scouts in which the lashkar raised by Dauris to support Haji Mirza was dispersed without bloodshed. Tochi Scouts must be given the credit for dissolving such a potential dangerous situation amicably. It was not the overwhelming numerical superiority of the manpower or the fire power rather the subtle art of negotiations so important in Frontier Warfare that was employed. The subedars knew the people by face and therefore their advice had different impact on the natives.

Mirza left his village in depression and for all practical purpose was heading towards the Afghanistan when the elders of Ipi village located not far from his native village requested him to stay with them, take care of village mosque. From there on he became immortal in history as Fakir of Ipi. Ipi was in any case among his own blood line the Tori Khels who occupied the surrounding heights

Mirza Ali Khan was able to convince the tribes that he should be accepted as a leader in this cause, initially the motive and aim was only the Islam Bibi. Mirza despite being a religious person does not belong to the hereditary religious families of the area and thus his achievement of uniting the tribes stands out in history. There is a very strong historical resemblance of Haji Mirza with Omar Mukhtar of Tunisia of the same era, also with Imam Shamial of Caucasus and above all with Hasan Bin Sabah. In year 2000 Osama Bin Laden also tread on the similar paths of history.

The conflict spread over next eleven years till British finally transferred the power in India to Muslims & Hindus. It will not be out of context to state that the Pakistan Movement and Two Nation Theory started from Bannu. On military level there were three distinct phases of the conflict.

In first phase which lasted from 1936 – 1938 Mirza operated in the lower Khaisora Valley among his tribe Turi Khel, which is **South of MiranShah**, Mirza's followers also hit back in North of Bannu. In phase two that lasted from 1939 – 1947, Mirza had Madda Khel as his base, which is **North of MiranShah**, and his opposition to the regime became more disciplined and organized in nature. Also in this phase the other Mahsud Wazir tribes also joined in with Fakir of Ipi and Tori Khels. It engulfed Razmak and South Waziristan also. Resultantly more and more military power was poured in the Waziristan

There were no less than three infantry brigades and an air force group which remained committed in hunt of Mirza for a decade despite the start of Second World War. Tochi Scouts seems to be a minor force within such an over all order of battle which includes Duke of Connaught's own, Prince Albert Victor's own, Probyn, Cokes, Wildes, Rattaray's, Scinde's Queen Victoria's Own, King George's Own and a host of other units yet it was the Tochi Scouts which had the most intimate knowledge of the area and were really the eyes and ears of the force. The conflict and the operations have to be analyzed within the back ground of 1919 affairs. This time around there was no mass desertion and no mutiny in the Tochi Scouts or for that matter in any of the Frontier Corps units. In terms of phases of conflict there was another dimension, in the first phase the political administration of the agency remained in charge of the

operation and it was brought under control by creating a dissention among the tribes and forcing Mirza Ali to be on the run and then there was a phase when the military took the complete control of the area with devastating results. This very much was the last act of Frontier Warfare for the British and it was again in 2000 that similar operations were under taken in the same area against the same tribes on almost the same issues thus these years of soldiering at Frontier Warfare are quite relevant even today.

### **1936. Biche Kashkai, {Lower Khaisora}**

Before the Islam Bibi incident the Tori Khels had reached an agreement with the political administration to allow the construction of a road from Mir Ali down south into the lower Khaisora Valley for which the tribe received Rs 7500 annually as Khaisora Allowance. Fakir of Ipi now linked this construction of road with the Islam Bibi, the road became a symbol of the oppression and a matter of ego also. Tori Khel now refused to allow the construction of the road, simultaneously the scouts of Tochi Scouts were kidnapped while coming or proceeding to Bannu, Bhittanis also started abducting the Hindu girls, the law and order situation became worst. It was now once again time for the show down in Tochi Valley.

There were two infantry brigades in the area one at Bannu and other at Razmak, for operational purposes forces when ever operating in Waziristan have been termed as column, one reason was that they always included additional auxiliary and ancillary services. Collectively there was one Waziristan Military District responsible for all operations in Waziristan.

The plan in simple words was a 'As strong as possible gasht'. On 25<sup>th</sup> November 1936 Razcol (The Razmak column) accompanied

by the district commander consisting of one British and three Indian battalions and three mountain batteries was to advance down the Khaisora from Damdil , covering a distance of twelve miles. Bannu Brigade known as Tocol {Tochi Column} consisting of two Infantry Battalions, one only recently arrived in the Frontier, and with no Artillery, was to move 16 miles on comparatively easy ground, due south from Mir Ali which was the army base camp. Both forces were to join each other at Biche Kashkai by the sun set, spend the night and return to their respective stations next day.

*In both Columns Tochi Scouts had vital tasks, With Razcol eight platoons would provide flank protection and six platoons would operate in front of the advance guard { total 14 platoons} with Tocol four infantry platoons as right flank guard and two platoons of mounted infantry as distant left flank guards.*

Commandant Tochi Scouts Major Felix Williams was with the Razcol. Political administration had their intelligence operators within the tribes and ample warning was given to Major Felix and also to Razcol about the likely opposition. Captain Prendergast was the Wing Commander of No. 2 Wing associated with Razcol. Whereas No 1 Wing was under Captain Tim Taylor acting as flank guard to the mounted infantry he was also commanding the mounted infantry with him was Captain Victor Wainright commanding the foot infantry which was acting as the right flank guard. Medical Officer of the Tochi Scouts Captain George Graham was also accompanying the force.

### **Faqir of Ipi {1936 – 1960}**

**From August 1936 on wards Tochi Scouts remained engaged in man hunt chase which almost sixty years later reincarnated himself into another man hunt. A trivial incident in Bannu where a Hindu girl fell in love with a Muslim boy and embraced Islam, however the local Hindu population registered a case of abduction on the point that girl is minor and court ordered the girl to be handed over to her relatives . The girl adopted the Muslim name of Islam Bibi and with this a communal colour was added to it. Haji Mirza Ali Khan a Tori Khel of Uthmanzai Wazirs; a religious person aroused the sentiments of the tribes over the issue and he was given due respect in Daur Tribe of Tochi Valley. Daurs are not as war like as Wazirs but religiously more fanatic on the other hand Tori Khel owned large tracts of land in Tochi and Khaisora Valleys.**

Razcol (The Razmak column) accompanied by the district commander consisting of one British and three Indian battalions and three mountain batteries was to advance down the Khaisora, covering a distance of twelve miles. Tochi column consisting of two Infantry Battalions, one only recently arrived in the Frontier, and with no Artillery, was to move a similar distance across the grain of the country, due south from Mirali. Both columns were to be assisted by strong detachments of the Tochi Scouts who carried out light protective duties to the flanks and acted as advance guard. Tochi Scouts were also ordered to occupy important tactical grounds enroute and to establish picquets. The Britishers expected no opposition enroute but it was wrongly estimated. Both the columns suffered heavy losses of men and material.

On November 1936 the advance guard of Razcol (Razmak column) had covered about four miles when Khassadars reported a position at Tangi ahead of them. This was brushed aside but increased further and four hours later, at 1430 hours the column was still only halfway to camp. At 1830 hours the head of the column eventually reached Bichi Kashkai although the rearguard did not arrived till 2130 hours.

Information had reached Tochi Scouts Column headquarters that the Faqir of Ipi had given orders to allow the Tochi Column to advance well into the hills before being attacked. Some Turi Khel Maliks who had joined the column confirmed that about one hundred strength of the Lashkar had spent the night in the foot hills. By 1000 hours opposition was increasing, and by 1430 hours, the Lashkar was putting up a determined resistance. Casualties had been heavy. What little news that had come in from Razcol showed that they also had been held up. The Brigade Commander decided to press on as he felt that it was important to get more troops from the rear. He halted for a short while but when the advance was continued the column was at once heavily fired upon at short range. The transport suffered heavily, and a second attempt to move on, after a malik had brought in news that Razcol had reached Bichi Kashkai, suffered the same fate. The column commander now realized that it was hopeless to try to go further and by midnight the column had established itself in camp. Razcol sent two battalions and a mountain battery to their help in the morning and by noon the two columns had joined up.

The situation at Bichi Kashkai was very far from satisfactory, the force was rationed only up to the following evening, ammunition was short and there were many casualties to be evacuated to the hospital as early as possible. The district commander decided that both columns would return to Mirali on the 27<sup>th</sup>.



The Faqir of Ipi attacked the rearguard consisting of four platoons from Tochi Scouts with great vigour in the early stages of the withdrawal, but the move went through without further interruption.

According to local estimates during this operation of November 1936, almost 20 British officers and 1800 soldiers were killed. 16 platoons of Tochi Scouts took part in this operation and provided advance and flank guard duties to the Army Brigade, taking part in the operation. Tochi Scouts suffered 7 killed and 16 wounded. On the other hand Faqir of Ipi lost 50 Mujahideen. The moral effect was considerable and prestige of the Faqir of Ipi increased enormously.

Thereafter the troops in Waziristan were on active service continuously for the next twelve months. It was in effect, a war against one man, the Faqir of Ipi, but for him the fatal mistake was made of under estimating his influence. If he had been hit by one of the many bombs of the Royals Air Force aimed at him, or if he had been captured, the ribs and backbone of the opposition would have been removed.

Wazirs, Mahsuds, Daurs, Bhittanis and Afghans from across the border, they were all one to him. All Waziristan from Spinwam to Wana was his camping ground, and as soon as trouble in one quarter had been put down there would be a fresh outbreak somewhere else. One of the difficulties which confronted the political and military alike was to determine tribal and territorial responsibility. Much of the fighting in the Sham plain area was done by Mahsuds from across the Shaktu or Afghan tribesmen from Khost. It is equally impossible to establish a coherent pattern to show that operations progressed to a predicted plan. The initiative was with the Faqir, his tactics always

entirely opportunist, pursuing with single minded determination, his only aim and purpose of stirring up the maximum of trouble for the British Government.

**Khaisora Operation 28 November to December 1936.** British Government lost its total respect in Khaisora war (25 to 27 November 1936). To regain their respect and honour lost, it was decided to carry out another immediate military action against the Faqir of Ipi. It was decided that Turi Khel Wazirs should be punished. Government also decided to construct a road between Mirali and Bichi Kashkai. To re-enforce the present troops 1 x Infantry Brigade (Rawalpindi), 2 x Infantry Battalions, and one light tank company were transported to Mirali. General Colarge Norven himself took over the charge of operation on 29 November he also assumed the political control of entire Waziristan.

Air strikes were conducted in the area and tribes were forced to vacate their villages. On 30 November construction under Lower Khaisora-Mirali road was undertaken under the protection of Razmak Brigade re-enforced by 2 x Infantry Battalions. Tochi Scouts provided advance guard and flank protection. No major battle between Tochi Scouts and Faqir of Ipi took place. However during small operations one British officer got killed and one soldier wounded. During air strikes many innocent tribesmen were killed. On 24 December road was constructed up to Bichi Kashkai.

On 9 January Razmak Column marched from Damdail to upper Khaisora and Tochi Column marched from Jaller camp to Dhakai Kaskai village. One Tochi Column was establishing one of the picquetes, when one of the “Lashkars” of Faqir of Ipi attacked. After a heavy fight, 4 soldiers from Frontier Force Rifles got killed and 8

wounded. On 14 January Razmak Column reached back to Damdail and on 17 January it came back to Razmak Camp. On 17 January 1937, seven platoons from Tochi Scouts took over the Bichi Kashkai Camp.

Once again it was decided to conduct a military and air operation against Faqir of Ipi. On 22 Apr air strikes were conducted. On 23 Apr Army supported by Royal Air Force started their advance in Khaisora valley. Elements of Tochi Scouts performed the duties of advance guard and flank protection. The operation was required to be completed in 9 days. In this operation Army suffered 5 killed and 54 wounded. Faqir of Ipi suffered approximately 200 killed and 57 wounded.

On 18 June 1937, information was received that the Faqir of Ipi was hiding himself in the caves of Gulza Mirkot. On 20 June a column consisting of 8 x platoons from Tochi Scouts and 8 x platoons from South Waziristan Scouts were sent in search of Faqir of Ipi and his arrest. This force supported by light tanks reached Garhum Camp. Tochi Scouts surrounded Aarsal Kot in the North and South Waziristan Scouts surrounded Gulza Mirkot, located south of Aarsal Kot. By 0500 hour on 21 June, all the troops were in their positions. The operation started. Tochi Scouts arrested 11 tribesmen including Aarsal Khan Madi Khel who was the owner of Aarsal Kot and handed him over to First Brigade. Later on, the Tochi Scouts came to know from Aarsal Khan that Faqir of Ipi had left the place prior to the arrival of the Scouts as he was informed about the operation.

## **Datta Khel Operation**

In 1938 the Madda Khel Wazirs became very aggressive. They were sniping the convoys, booby trapping roads, blowing up

culverts and even poisoning Razani water tanks. Still the Faqir of Ipi was enjoying the freedom of movement in the area. In summer 1938, at Saplatoi in South Waziristan one of the allies of Faqir of Ipi named Mullah sher Ali Mahsood attacked one of the Tochi Scouts posts. One British Captain and complete party was killed. After a few days, Faqir of Ipi surrounded Datta Khel post of Tochi Scouts and blocked all routes of supplies. Datta Khel post was in the heart of the Khaddar Khel country less than ten miles from Afghan border. In May 1938, Lieutenant Loopy Lerwill took command of the post with its five platoons of Scouts under Subedar Baz Khan Khattak. The road linking Datta Khel with Boya and Miranshah was blown up but life remained normal in Datta Khel. On 10 May a tribal cannon open up from about a thousand yards away and fired six solid shots on the Datta Khel Fort. At the same time sniping on the Fort also started, the snipers used to come closer during day and vanish at night. In the Fort was a 4.5 inch howitzer, manned by a gunner of Indian Artillery who was also training scouts for handing over the gun. This was brought into action against the enemy gun and after ten rounds the un-equal artillery duel ceased. The sniping however continued by day and by night for five weeks. The fort had rations for one month but the troops were deprived of fresh meat and milk. Anyhow the force of Datta Khel kept the Lashkar away from the post. Lieutenant Lerwill planned to ambush the Lashkar in a pre-dawn attack. He alongwith a platoon slipped from chigha gate and established themselves on a nearby ridge. Day break gave them a clear target of fifty men of Lashkar engaged in their morning activities. The Scouts took them by surprise and that was the end of raids on Datta Khel post for time being. Lieutenant Lerwill received MC for operation. Data Khel post remained surrounded till 6 Jun 1938, when it was relieved by third Infantry Brigade.

In early 1939 a new camp was built at Khar Kamar to fill the gap between Datta Khel and Boya. It was an un-lovely place. The accommodation was built of puddle mud and stone with no windows, which meant one had to choose between light and warmth, if the door was shut no light come in, if it was opened the savage cold wind gusted in.

In **July 1939** six platoons of Tochi Scouts occupied a Crocus Camp on the Razmak plateau where almost all the hostile elements had collected with the idea of harassing the regular troops, Tochi Scouts supported by Razmak Brigade surrounded the villages of Mirkhon Khel and Kharsin which were the harbouring nests of marauders sniping the regular troops. Tochi Scouts carried out the operation and the primary difference between the operation of regular army which had no soldier or seldom an officer speaking the native language and understanding the culture is obvious from the fact that ‘very villages which were rounded up have approached the political authorities with the request that the Scouts should again occupy the camp on the plateau in the summer of 1940’.

**Tapi Operation 1940** In 1940 a gasht of Tochi Scouts was sent to capture fugitives in Tapi Village at night. Tapi Village is an old town of Daurs. Major Russel was the gasht commander. In Tapi anti government elements were in majority. They joined one of the Lashkar of Faqir of Ipi and attacks the gasht. Major Russel was killed, his head was chopped off by General Shudi Khel Hamzoni and taken by the Lashkar. Tochi Scouts suffered heavy casualties. After few days with efforts of political authorities, the head of Major Russel was retrieved. It is said that Major Russel was brave man. He refused to hide himself, once he was advised by the Subedar Major. In this operation “Lashkar” of Faqir of Ipi was commanded by

General Malik Shudi Khel Hamzoni. He sustained serious injuries due to which, he was left in mountains near Miranshah alongwith one assistant and one local private compounder to look after him. After few days Army column consisting of two brigades was sent to Tapi Village. Boundary wall and the houses of all anti government tribesmen were destroyed.

### **Siege of Datta Khel 1942**

Datta Khel was a garrison of Tochi Scouts. The “Lashkar” of Faqir of Ipi many a times attacked Datta Khel post. In the summer of 1942, the Faqir of Ipi once again made a supreme effort to capture this most exposed Tochi Scouts Fort. At that time, it was commanded by Lieutenant Sharif Khan and its post Subedar was Muhammad Lal Din. The “Lashkar” closed around it on 1 May 1942, beginning a siege, which was to last just over three months. The harsh reality was that neither in Razmak nor in Bannu were there enough trained troops to relieve a column.

At first Lieutenant Sharif was not much worried. He was aware of the fact that Datta Khel had been besieged before for five to six weeks, and he had three months supplies, also he had two Vickers guns and a 2.75 inch mountain gun. He also had plenty of ammunition.

The lashkar had intensified their shelling, one aircraft was shot down and flying Officer Moses was buried where as his co pilot or observer Flying Officer Larives was badly burnt, when Lieutenant Sharif visited him after burying Moses, Larives was greatly worried about the fate of Datta Khel. Ipi’s lashkar knew that no air sortie can come after dark thus their firing and shelling intensified adding an hour to their pattern. Next day the commandant came overhead in an

aircraft and dropped the message promising of reinforcement. After a week lapse Sharif got the intelligence report that Ipi is planning to launch an attack either on Datta Khel or at Akhtar Picquet. The archives at Miran Shah had a copy of a hand written note which was sent by a spy on the pay roll of political agent regarding the activities of the Ipi's lashkar.

‘at around 0030 hours I went to bed after planning for all eventualities and having a final round of the watch towers, at around 0110 hours I was awakened by mighty crashes, one after the other, both shells having blown my bed room sky high. I leapt out and saw the bombardment of the fort by three guns at an estimated range of 1000 yards. Myriads of fire volley were flying in our direction. The Junior Commissioned Officers Mess , the pigeon loft and hospital cook house simply disappeared while other parts of the fort were only grazed and a good number of rounds were only ‘duds’. The fearful ‘whoozh’ of the approaching shells at less than 500 yards range from blazing battery of guns terribly frightening. The machine guns from the north and south towers of the fort fired belt after belt to boost the morale of the troops positioned on the parapet and then even Akhtar picquet also joined in from extreme range. I also ordered to fire 50 rounds rapid by three inch mortars. As I came down the steps I saw Larive hobbling about and yelling for help, he was fast asleep when the shell hit the hospital cook house, he narrowly escaped.’

After few days Faqir of Ipi decided to launch a proper attack on Datta Khel Fort. He fired several shells from his Gorwekht Artillery, out of which one landed on “Pathan Officers Mess” and another shattered the bunkers on the west. Lieutenant Sharif estimated correctly that this is preliminary to an assault, so he ordered to fire

three inch mortars which were recently acquired. A rain of mortar bombs were dropped down on Lashkar by Tochi Scouts which disconcerted the Lashkar and the assault planned for that night was called off by Faqir of Ipi.

After about two days Miranshah urged Lieutenant Sharif to engage the “Lashkar”, but as the man on the spot, he was knowing that with an average of twenty –five men down with Malaria and having to leave enough to defend the fort, he could not allocate a gasht of more than seventy five Tochi Scouts boys, and the enemy numbered at least a thousand. However at three ‘O’ Clock in the morning, Lieutenant Sharif left out with three platoons and at first light, he was within sight of the “Lashkar” who were getting up, stretching and saying their prayers. At the same time two air crafts from Royal Air Force flew over. Tochi Scouts fired vary lights to show them the location of the “Lashkar”. The air crafts swung round and headed towards the “Lashkar”. One of them was probably hit by the “Lashkar” as it suddenly started losing the height and crashed to the South. The second air craft headed back for Miranshah.

Lieutenant Sharif on the suggestion of Subedar Lal Din left one platoon as a lay back party and took the other two to rescue the crew. The pilot and the observer were still alive but severely burnt. They were evacuated to fort by stretcher party and escort. While they were doing this, “Lashkar” of Faqir of Ipi started approaching the Scouts. Lieutenant Sharif ordered to withdraw but then it was too late. “Lashkar” by then encircled the Tochi Platoons from three directions. Subedar Lal Din ordered both the platoons to take defensive positions. Suddenly two more air crafts appeared. They were flying very low, dropping bombs and strafing. Both the platoons started withdrawing while using the technique of fire and



moving back through the first encirclement. After few minutes they were encircled again, but at that time they were within the range of the third platoon which was left as a lay back party. With the help of their supporting fire, the scouts broke through again. Ultimately all the platoons reached the fort. In this action Subedar Lal Din showed extreme amount of bravery. Tochi Scouts lost seven dead and many wounded. The pilot also died the same evening.

Two days later a gasht of sixteen platoons from Tochi Headquarters came alongwith the Commandant Tochi Scouts, Lieutenant Colonel Rupert Taylor. Next morning Lieutenant Colonel Rupert encountered the “Lashkar” about five miles south of the fort. It was an indecisive sort of action with both sides shooting at one another from parallel ridges, neither being able to gain an advantage. In the afternoon Rupert broke off the action and Tochi Scouts came back in the fort. In this action Tochi Scouts again lost seven dead and many wounded. The same night Rupert went back to Miranshah.

Tochi Scouts were besieged for six more weeks, hoping everyday for re-enforcement but there was none. After three months the siege was suspended, once Sharif got a message that Tochi gasht is leading the Razmak Brigade and heading towards them for rescue. Faqir of Ipi failed to capture Datta Khel garrison. His failure to take Datta Khel marked the beginning of decline in Faqir’s power.

### **31st May2012,1505 hours.**

I did not went with Zaheer yesterday because I slept and I cursed myself all day for this lapse, he in any case went and then flew to Razmak to pick up casualties that occurred due to IED. I spent the day reading old books and typing.

Today I have changed my guest room now I am in number four, I did not sleep all night because in the morning the Tochi School had its parents day and I did not want to miss it due to sleep. The days of my life when I have been able to make good in time are rare and everytime I curse myself for missing the innocent beauty of early day. I sat out on bench and just stare at the grass the birds fluttering around few pigeons roaming scot free, a pair of mallard were running inside cage which is good enough for their sprint and cross country races. The voices of the birds in this part of day were given the background music by a thumping generator but it was just the background base but otherwise these various kinds of birds chat so much among themselves that one feels like sitting in a Scottish pub on a week end night. I do not remember their names and types but they were everyday type of birds only more plentiful.

Later I walked to the school for which I took the path behind the mess which follows in front of commandant house and then after twenty paces turns left and then right , in front of the mud barracks and onto the main avenue of fort where you take a right turn and walk almost a hundred paces or less and you are out of the fort, this is the original path which runs in a longitudinal manner, there are two such paths the other is almost parallel to it but with a gap of hundred paces , the hospital is located on that path. The path which I have just followed was the RAF path and their area, the present commandant house was the pilots mess in 1923. This seems to be the extension of the original mud fort of Militia in from 1900 onwards.

There was guard on the gates of the school there were two boys with arm band receiving the guests, I had a chat with them, last time I had such an occasion was at Aitchison College Lahore as an

teacher and house master. I was met by the Naik Khattak the one who came to my room few days back, shook hands with him and other teachers and sat in the principal office which was the waiting and control room also. A native boy with a bouquet of flowers was sitting there , I said hello and he was studying in class three the other boy was almost double his age was in class one. I did not asked any question over this as this is how it works here, at times the parents realise quite late that after all there is nothing wrong in education. Meanwhile a girl of eight years old entered confidently she was in blue kurta and white shalwar with a scarf which she very smartly kept on taking care. She or Kashf as her name is charming and beautiful, I was keen to see the native children as how they looks like and what they think. I said hello to her and asked the usual question about her class, she replied and telephone rang which the boy answered and another teacher entered and then moulvi sahib. I kept my conversation with her but it was difficult so I invited her to sit on next to me. She had a lovely voice and what I pleasure it is to hear urdu from a Waziri girl it is similar to a Scottish girl speaking English. She is in class three, likes mathematics as nothing is difficult you only have to work hard. I was in a trance I was fulfilling my quench of love which I have for my own daughter. She did not like to paint she answered on my question , but why ? inquired , sir, she answered me all the time by the prefix of sir, I made one but when I tried to rub it the paper was torn so I left it. Who is your best friend was my next query, she name a girl who is studying in class fifth. How many girls are in your class I asked, only myself came the reply. I was baffled but kept quite. I saw you other day in the colony, she said. Oh the day they were playing football I replied and feeling a bit important now , no the cricket she replied. You like cricket , no came the reply. All her sentences starts with sir and had the imperfect grammar which was making it a treat to

listen. I told her that I saw two girls playing outside their houses on that day and Kashf said , she must be my sister. Now it is against the manners to ask a child what her father does and how many brothers and sisters she have. I cannot speak Pashto I confessed to her, what you can speak Pashto she was surprised, you are better off than me as you can talk in urdu I said. I do not exactly recall but I asked her whether her brother is also studying here or something like that and she said as amatter of afct that I do not have any brother but we are six sisters. Now it was my turn to get surprise but I took it as matter of afct as she was taking it. Do you have any younger sister and she said she had three, I hope they are not teasing you, no no they are lovely but sometimes I get angry with them. I am sure your elder sisters also get angry with you , no they are lovely too. My elder sister is studying in Bannu and when ever we go there she gets sad when we leave. Do you watch television , sometimes but the other day storm got our dish down and we have only one channel. My father works very hard, he goes to office then comes back have his food and prayers and then goes back to work, I write one page and my hand gets tired but he writes and writes but never gets tired even now he must be working. It was time to leave but I had fallen in love with this charming little princesses I wish that she keeps on talking and I keep on listening , in her I was talking to my daughter.

The programme itself quiet enjoyable and thought provoking, the boys recited quite a couplets from Iqbal in peculiar Pashto accent which makes it even more enjoyable. A welcome speech in Unrdu and then in English, few skits the most impressive was the one which five girls presented. It is hard to believe that here in Miran Shah the heart of insurgency there is this school where the girls are studying with boys although they numbered only seven odd now. This is the first line of defence against illiteracy and extremism,

had there been no Tochi Scouts School then all of these students were potential suicide bombers and even now there are half a dozen seminaries running around the town producing minds devoid of thinking anything else but only one dimension of life.

There were generous gifts for almost everyone for every position they gave almost two gifts and through this they have won the hearts and minds of the people, this is why militia and scouts are the most important key players in turning the tide of violence. Commandant Colonel Wajahat was sitting next to me rather it is the other way around and he whispered that I should also give gifts and awards but I regretted, kind of him. Later he spoke about the school, Tochi Scouts is running the school purely on its own resources, over 500 students are paying nominal fees and boarding is almost free on top of all this almost twenty orphan children are getting free education and messing, hearing and witnessing all this makes any Pakistani proud.

Major Zaheer has left and Lieutenant Colonel Salahuddin is the new crew of Puma, last time I saw him he was young and so was I. He has been to United Arab Emirates for training and getting instructor rating on the Puma. Later Brigadier Khalil Dar also came in he has not yet taken over the command of Qasim Base. Myself and Dar has quite a long association mainly revolving around history, military history and adventure. His wife happens to be the very first teacher of my son Salik in Quetta. Dar was commanding officer of the 9 Squadron at Peshawar in 2002 and later remained in Military Operations Directorate dealing with the area and as such is an eye witness of all that is happening now. He is also the very first officer whom I have met at least here who is logical in understanding the present scenario and does not believe in any conspiracy theories

thus it was quite educative. The 7 Division actually came here in 2004 mainly for the reason of ensuring non intervention by the tribes in the Afghan election of Hamid Karzai, they then got stuck here like British. Another brigade 217 probably has arrived from Kharian and if I go by the history then similar pattern was adopted by the British in 1920 when units and regiments came from plains of Punjab on emergency without any prior training of hill warfare and suffered badly. Later British opened up special Frontier Warfare schools at three places in India, Abbottabad was also one such place. The difference between the Frontier Corps or Tochi Scouts and army is starking in this area, in the morning the Tochi Scouts were able to show their support for the locals and vice versa, for army there is no such opportunity but in near future there will be many . Brigadier Dar also made a point to write an account of the war, his one point needs attention , he highlighted that for long we have been admitting and presenting with pride the fact that local manufacturing of weapons is of very high standards and wonders where that weaponry is going now. He termed the relation ship between army and locals as superfluous , army does not need permission and good will of locals to move about on road and the day army is able to dominate the bazar and surrounding areas that will be the first sign of victory; I agree with him.

2100 hours. There is a dinner of 7 Division about to start, I have not been invited, you never know all of sudden Colonel Staff remembers; I am comfortable here but I am missing sweet dish of rabri. General Ali is back but I have not been able to call on him, his presence is certainly a source of comfort , I have to give him the cheque.

## 1955 hours, 15<sup>th</sup> of Moon

Sitting in the mess lawn enjoying a glass of cold lemonade and listening to the chirping voices of multiple birds , few seconds ago a crow was yelling I am not sure whether he was male asking for food or the female cutting crow's ego by highlighting that is this all you have earned today. In the far distant two romantic sounds of newly wed couple birds, then a more romantic voice of some one bidding good night to each other, another one lamenting the destiny for getting stuck up with a lousy bird like you on such a lousy part of tree. These are free birds and there are birds in the cage which have no worry, they get best food and living environment, neat and clean nest, a man paid by the state looks after them , who is better off than the free ones struggling to make a nest of their own all the time living in a persistent danger of being shot by a friendly or wayward shell or the ones in the confinement. Same is the case of human . Living inside the fort is like the birds in a cage.

I have finished my glass of chilled lemonade, it is something very traditional to military messes, a glass or jug of it while sitting in the lawn is a perfect end to a day, only the mosquitoes are the irritant. This mess is apparently home to bats and ababeel, they fly very low and fast just like new pilots. There is silence except the that bird couple which is still fighting over petty issue. No moon so far , yesterday it was full moon and where I am sitting the angle was good because by this time the moon would be peeping through the lone tree astride the main mess entrance, however if I change my position and go back few steps and sit on the bench then it was high up, at midnight when I came out of my room and sat at the bench to stare at him, he was high and lone , its glowing golden light and corona had engulfed the whole sky diminishing the stars.

I stared it for long and through him I had a glance through my own life, I recalled when I saw it in Thailand on a far island in 1989, then the Skardu, Siachin, K-2 , Glasgow , Harrisonburg, Sargodha. So many people rather to be specific so many women associated with it, where are they now.

### **Saturday 2<sup>nd</sup> ODI**

Nothing very exciting has happened in last few days and I am getting rather feeling embarrass for being here because the same queries by so many officers, where is your family, don't you miss them, what you do for living, when are you going home, are you still here, I hope you are staying till next week. And so on. I just smiles back as long as Colonel Wajahat is not asking me this kind of questions everything is fine.

### **Boya Days**

I did not had a good sleep rather nothing, there was a constant rattling of machine gun fire which started around 0140 hours, its sound while sitting in the room sounds quite pleasant, there was a long burst then a small burst and then single round fire which I think the soldier was enjoying doing so. It is a routine matter on Saturday nights, see how it differs from the Saturday nights at Glasgow university club. The reason for firing on Saturday is that since Sunday is a road operating day thus the miscreants normally try to plant improvised explosive devises {IED} or lay ambush thus any movement seen at night is fired to keep the roads safe. It happened last Saturday as well and the intensity was more than today. However today or tonight my worry was that this may be an indication of something more drastic on Sunday. I could hear the telephonic rumbling of Ali Abbas. I have no idea at what time I



dosed off but I was up at 0600 hours because I had opted to go for Boya, small fort close to Datta Khel near Durand Line with the road convoy.

Had two glasses of lemonade and then again slept and awoke for umpteen times. I was not knowing at what time the convoy leaves, received a call from the NCO of 5 Wing which is located at Boya to inform me that the convoy will be leaving soon. I packed my stuff rather Afsar Khan had already done that. I wrote a note for Commandant which he is interested in having a historic note on the wall. Before leaving I wrote a note for Ali Abbas thanking him for lending me the lap top and also warning him that his laptop is no more an innocent and pious laptop rather I have taken him through a tour of dark alleys of the world so he better be careful. The vehicle was a single acbin Toyota the Scouts came to pick up my ruck sack but I carried it my self, in the vehicle was one rocket launcher, one machine gun and two more scouts with SMG's. The dilemma was that they all were wearing the bullet proof jacket and helmet and I was unarmed and had no such armour protection ,wering my bush jacket and felt hat. I felt vulnerable and truly understood the meaning of phrase unarmed into battle which was the title of official history of air observation post. Once the vehicle moved and left the Northern Gate and took right turn covered a distance of hundred yards and at the wstern gate there was traffic jam yes a traffic jam, because a convoy from Bannu has just arrived and its military trucks were anxious to make way. It looks like a Baddami Bagh Bus Stand with trucks crawling, few civilian trucks standing on one side and my driver keen to make his way through the chaos, military police was apparently helpless in this situation this was obnoxious, I told the driver how vulnerable we are now , a single rocket from Taliban can play hell with us. We moved forward and there were further

scenes of chaos, a soldier bending with a sack on his back , another throwing a last moment water bottle to the truck, few soldiers laughing majority silent with anticipation of future so was i. Over all the army discipline was poor in this matter no officer seen around. Finally we left the protective umbrella and acme out on the open road, the very corner whicjh I saw first time from the fort where a woman was wearing a bright coloured shirt and I had wondered who are these people now I was among them.

The road operating day is quite elaborate and what I have gathered from all the meetings and talk the gist is as under. A curfew is imposed in the city and in the area as well none is allowed to come out of the house and anyone seen is shot. Picquets are placed which are scouts who occupy the important key points with their vehicles and soldiers placed who normally stand behind a cover. In terms of Miran shah for instance Captain Hammad & Hamza would occupy the two petrol stations at the eastern and western end. A bomb disposal team in which a soldier from engineers walk on foot and physically clear the area he has another vehicle behind him carrying jammers on board, on suspect another soldier wearing a suit carry out disarming of the explosives, hats off to this leading soldier he has nerves of a lion to do al this. The IED's are placed in different manners. These IED's are made of urea the one used as fertilizers for crops, it is boiled and the segments left in the base are then made compact with flour and then bolts nuts nails are placed along with a circuit which is either timed or through remote control or by pressure. So it is very easy to made very lethal in nature and can be placed either by digging the road or in a shopping bag placed innocuously. On every ROD there are incidents of IED blasting and casuality. Last week one blast took place at Bannu where IED was placed in a wall , in Razmak area one was planted in a tree. The one

at Bannu was a master piece because the Taliban had challenged that they are placing one and you will not be able to locate it. The transmission of army and Taliban is intercepted by both as both are transmitting in air. The talibans interception are often quite amusing in which they will brush off the artillery fire as non effective. I knew about this procedure only in detail yesterday and now my eyes were on the road trying to find any shopping bag.

We crossed the bridge and were on our way to Boya, driver was driving as he is in a formula race and was duly admonished by the scouts standing in the rear to slow down a bit, now this vehicle became the leading vehicle and I got further worried because now we will be the first target. Road was good with occasional humps, speed breakers and pot holes all potential sites of IED's my breath was slow and so was heart beat. All around the area is full of ambush sites, on my right till Boya the mountains covers the site and on left the Tochi River with green patch in between the road and the dry river bed. The very first village is... a mud cluster of houses with towers we passed through the village and any one can hit us. I saw small children playing and watching us through the walls they waved to us and so did I, a bit of tension was eased. I started conversation with the driver he is Yousafzai from Mardan area. He asked about myself and I replied back. I have worked for an actress as a driver in Lahores. Now this changed the whole spectrum of this fearful journey. He also said that he had driven a van for a mohajjir in Karachi but then situation came to a point where that mohajjir said to him that in case if you are taken away by the Mohajjirs I would not be able to help so is you in other cases its better if you leave.

We crossed another speed breaker and my mind said now lets give up in calculating where all IEDs can be planted because every

place is full of these sites. There were shopping bags , there was an old woman walking with two donkeys, children playing in the field, waving, a man lying on a charpoy under a tree. All shops were closed, all gates were closed, there was another picquet two jeeps and soldiers standing , one odd sitting carrying water cooler and again I thought of water bottle. There was a soldier standing with flag but flag was in a bad condition.

Tochi River runs parallel and on both sides are mud villages of small size, some of the compounds were huge with towers, one had a tower almost like military tower. Trees of all kinds and almost invariably all are fruit trees. The water channels running, the primitive hand well in the open gives the look of most primitive era. Scenery invariably draws a comparison to travelling in extreme north in Karakorum and Himalayas. From Skardu towards Shigar or towards Ashkole. Here the river bed is full of stones another evidence of glaciated era. On the other side which is almost 5 kilometers or slightly less the scene is similar green oasis and mud huts. At no stage the river width narrows down to an extent that you can wave to one another. On the road we zigged zagged. A graveyard with old stony graves one had a flag fluttering around most probably a recent grave of a Talib who had died fighting . There was an advertisement for a school in which the most economical education is imparted. All signs were in Urdu. Another picquet and then we stopped to drop and pick someone a soldier. I was just thinking about our vulnerability/ Driver asked me if I would like to stretch and I said no I am fine but I insisted and came out in open. Took a few steps in front was the Tochi River and the mud town of Boia. From this point a track diverst towards Gharlamai and for Afghanistan and also the town of Dezgan the stronghold of Talibans. The old bridge runs parallel but in broken conditions. The valley narrows down like a funnel/

All green I was briefed about all the posts on the peaks . We sat and drove crossed the bridge and took right turn , now river comes on our right there is water in it but not much but what is there is clean and fresh. The bed cannot be crossed without a bridge. I wondered why the advancing parties do not walk through the centre of Tochi River it is bit rough but it is safest because you cannot be ambush. Boya fort has two walls one outer inside which is quite a large ground in which family quarters are also there and then an inner cordon where 1954 is written on the top it was burnt down in 1947 when military and scouts withdrew and then reoccupied in 1948. Brick built in 1957.

### **Boya Fort**

Met all the scouts shook hand and guided through a narrow alley when Capatin hammad came out , he had reached earlier. The residence is very comfortable cool neat and well decorated. Wing commander and his family had left in the morning convoy and hats off to thee military wives for braving such risks when even male officers are very reluctant to even come to Miran Sha even for a night stay and here these women and children have come out as far as Boya.

House is elongated with a verandah in front which is made flyproof with a small rather reasonable lawn in front, cricket bats and badminton rackets were placed in one corner. There are two rooms on each side of a hall with comparatively high roofs which is wooden. First room on the left is in disposal of hammad, the opposite room being locked as it must be the wing commander's personal room, then another room on left which is television set and leather sofa set with table. Mine is opposite to it a small room with

one window, a wooden almirah, a wooden bed two side tables two wooden sofas and two plastic chairs and a plastic centre table, an attached bath with blue tiles. From the window the only scene is of that Musa Khan Post.

There is another lawn in the rear with vegetables, a cat sleeping lazily but gave me a stare, few pigeons fluttering around. Later we both were invited for tea and chicken roast with Mountain Dew cold drink, I hate this drink but had to swallow it down. We both came and sat in lawn and Hammad narrated how he won the first prize in military debates at Risalpur. The time he was conducting officer with Turkish delegation at Karachi with Natasha & Salima both lieutenants in Turkish navy, the very scene when a lieutenant colonel came to meet these lieutenants after a day of flirting wearing tuxedo and that too with a hat which he took off at the table with a style 'my ladies I am here and then sat down took a cigar from his pocket and smoke'. Later we all youngsters used to go to him always complimenting him on his dress code and he would be flattered and ordering the special tea breaks and in the end we would get the job done. One time our commanding officer and commanding officer of another signal unit had somewhat bad relations adding back to the sports match that took place between their units when both were adjutants and now they revived the rivalry to an extent that both almost punched each other during a match between their regiments, we were ordered not to dine with the opposing unit and neither to have any social contacts with them.

At night we watched the French Open finals between Nadal & Djokovic, Hammad is a keen follower and good player himself, we had the dinner and went to bed early, this is the beauty of Boya.

**Monday 0900 Hours.** Having a cup of tea which is cold and I have just requested the Mamun the attendant to get it warm, none of his fault because I told him twenty minutes ago and then I went out to have a look at the fort wearing khaki shorts white shirt and chappals the old Scouts dress. The fort is small, the old fort which was built in 1906 onwards was burnt in 1947 and the post was vacated, it was reoccupied in 1957 and rebuilt, in 1958 it was attacked by the tribal lashkar in which one of the Subeadr of Tochi Scouts was awarded SJ and again in 1966 another SJ was awarded, but very little is known about these opeartions even in Tochi Scouts and one of the chief reason for coming here is to see first hand the area and to know about those opeartions through oral history. I have requested the SM to locate the old people in the village and in the morning he said he will do so and there are men over 80 years of age. Canteen is small and a kind of subsidiary of the main canteen at Miran Shah. Hamad is a very good company , he is captain with just three years of service he was promoted captain in March. So I am living a subaltern life through him, he is still asleep.

Around Boya , and Boya is a small valley the ground opens up here like a broad funnel and then closes down. The surrounding peaks are all having Scouts posts, for instance The Musa Khan post is over looking Boya from North and Zomani Post from South. On my queery that how you supply water to them the procedure is that 14 men are living there and every morning a team of two donkeys take the water carriers and follow a track , along that track there are small posts for protection also, the men come down daily for taking a shower in the river which is between the Boya Fort and the hill on which Mus Khan Post is located. The post is quite high and provides cover to the Boya Fort in case Fort is over run or comes under fire. It was built during British Era. The Oral History narrates that Musa

Khan was a shepherd and post is named after him it needs further elaboration.

Weather is hot but there is air in the air which makes it pleasant. The house in which we are living is the residence of Wing Commander and is nicely decorated and comfortable. Washrooms are tiled and floors carpeted, there are two lawns one in front and one in back, there are no less than three dish receivers and power supply is for few hours in which I recharge my lap top as well. Over all area is dusty, there is a detachment of air defence also here with four Shoulder fired SAMs all reaction of Salala Check Post. The usual squadron of pigeons is also present and are carrying out their routine flights . The odd cock is also loitering around.

**1500 hours.** Wind is blowing strong outside from the window I can see the north in front of my eyes there is a tree and in high distance The Musa Khan Post, a wall intervenes which was built by last wing commander Lt Col Gulam Hussain before that it was all open and only the original fort built in 1957 stood . This fort is not the original fort built in 1905 a mud cladded compound with watch towers , the one which I mentioned on the track or road coming from miran shah. It gives help in reducing the time of rescue. Anyway I went to the tehsil office which is another mud cladded compound . With me was the Subedar Riaz a Waziri and WHM we walked to the gate of own fort and I thought that it is the first time I will be going out , lets see it is too late and too absurd to think now , I had no weapon but I was wearing the white kameez shalwar and chappals. In the morning I walked around the fort in traditional summer dress of scouts which was khaki shprts and chappals with white shirt , Subedar Riaz whom I met along with Subedar major near canteen and I mentioned about going for the tehsil and he just telling him in



Pashto about me. Subedar Riaz did mentioned in Pashto towards my dress and I told him that I will change. Now we three were walking towards the gate , Riaz told me that old tower on the side was tehsil office till 1992, there was no boundary wall where the cricket pitch and volley ball court are now, there were colourfull graffiti on the walls which are there for the children because no les than thirteen families live here, officer's being the lone exception rest all of scouts. There are see saw and swing alongwith marry go around, there were air defence soldiers also with missiles , scouts with machine guns, all very aesthetic; On the walls the name of shaheeds ere there with a brief description of of the individual, Riaz told me that they have written the name of school the deceased attended. All done by previous wing commander. The last sentry shook hand wearing red barret and out we came. I steeped out first not knowing what to expect, what a feeling to step out into a new world.

A road with the gradual mountain slope and bushes al dry. No need to even look right and left while crssing the road but I did out of habit; picked in Glasgow and Harrisonburg. On my left a motor bike approached with men faces covered with scarf to cut off the heatt and carrying AK-47. I frose for eternity to see what happens , it had a bad cylincer and bursted near me and passed by the last one making an ye contact for last moment. Riaz was now near me and we crossed now I was walking astride the road when the second motorbike went . I had a full contact with the second passenger who had the barrel pointed towards us and passed by.. In the end of road is Afganistan , riaz said , how far I inquired. First Khar Kamar then Datta Khel and then border say around 60 kilometers , which was wrong its not more than twenty. A kind of hut was in the way from where two men came out both unarmed and locals, with locals I mean Daur. They shook hand and I noticed a very pretty boy about

whom the Zakhmi Dill song is all about. There is a concept among the Pathans where they have a kind of pet boy moving around ; but this was the first time I saw here. We entered the tehsil and later met Tehsildar a young man who looked too civilised to be here. The usual round of tea break and I inquired about the record and after an hour I realised that among all these I had more authentic knowledge about them and area. Nevertheless I still learnt a lot. The tehsil was made in 1984 and came to present office in 2004 and Tehsildar being too young had no idea that there is anything like border and administrative report yearly, it is no more written. A meeting has been arranged with an old man , a manuscript in Urdu is also on the horizon. I asked them to explain me the area but then I have to explain them .

Tochi valley does not start at this point rather it is another 100 kilometres where almost three major arteries of water join and form Tochi and it dwindles down the whole arm starting from fingers and going upward. Boya is the area wrist toward joint. Its importance lies in the fact that it is the first crossing point of Tochi in case if you want to continue toward Miran Shah. On the other hand Boya is important because it allows the crossing for Shawal Valley. This particular area is called Upper Daur the Ismael khel Wazir tribe in the north and Khnoir Khel in the south. Daur is an agricultural tribe , although they are relative to Wazir in a distant way but a kind of relative which Wazir seldom owns. They were the first one which approached the British to provide protection to them from the Wazirs and in lieu they agree to pay taxes and this is how all this started. They all agreed and added bit of here and there mostly about Fakir of Ipi. I asked them about Spins Khaisora and I need to check the account also. We all came out.

I again stepped out of the Tehsil gate first and stood to let other two through small opening, a motor cyclist went by, then a pickup full of talibans no second thought came, they had a good look at me for me it was like a girl standing alone outside the college gate with a pickup full of talibans passing in front. I did not try to have an eye contact with them but I still had one who was talking to another but there were no hostile eyes but then what is normal and what is abnormal here I quite different from the dictionary meaning of words. Now we all three walked myself again on the roadside. I said to Riaz these were talibans and he nodded, they can fire anytime I said, well they can but they don't because we have a pact we don't check them and they don't fire at us. I agreed and genuinely appreciated the pact. A Toyota hatchback approached with tinted glasses, I have just read the old faded signboard inside the tehsil office which had warned that any car having tinted glasses will roll down the glasses while passing in front of post otherwise it will be fired upon. This car had one window half rolled and I said to Riaz, Taliban and he nodded. I looked at Car there was nothing else to look around while crossing the road, in previous instances atleast I could see the Taliban inside but not now, they also passed, I was still wearing the khaki felt hat for safety against sun. I have no idea what went through all these men when they saw me as I thought about them so did they because I was different, had I been wearing a uniform I would at least be placed in any category of scout or army but now what. Without hat probably I might have escaped the scrutiny being one of the tehsil official but this head gear is the key. I must change my head gear to the local pagri otherwise I can easily be taken for a American agent. Recent trip to meet my girl friend Reena at Harrisonburgh will be the key evidence 'after all you went to white house, yes or no ? and I will say yes. Then you were in the Langely district yes or no and I will nod affirmative; what evidence will then be left. I just shiver on the thoughts.

The Mus Khan Post is shrouded in the dust layer as it is quite common to the Tochi valey and by it self s another evidence of how old and dry is the history of valley. This becomes even more extreme as one follows upstream. Thus the migration which took place is much older than the other riparian valleys. Tochi Valley is the opening of the all Central Aryan Plataeu , it is water outlet of the paltaeu which can very rightly be called as the Pathan or Wazir Plataeu. The old most ferious of all tribes were the Ye-Hu tribe that came down and Tochi is not a ntive word neither Persian nor English. The tribes came down and they did not seetlesd astride the river because waterflow was unreliable so they had their habitat on a bit higher ground. It is alos quite logical to expect that also had the most individualistic of them lal living on the high ground and Musa Khan Post has to be seen in that perspective. No doundt the British made this a classic warning post but if they had not done that some native might have done so or in past it could have happened. The nature of habitat also is a pinter of history where there is no phusical evidence in the form of ruins or documents taken the choice of posts are logical evidence of that continuous human living pattern in which high ground occupation is logical choice.

The local oral tradition runs on similar lines where long long ago Boya existed and it existed when Moen jo daro was there. A resting point for the caravans for the travellers for the tribes. The revenvue and ownership was with the Wazir Tribes the Ismael Khels. There were no individual owners or landlord rather every man a king in himself bounded with blood lines with others at times an extended family . It was like this since the human memory records and is still the same in every aspect. Live and let live as long the Riway and Shariah is being observed.

When I had crossed the road as bit mentally safe the last of the vehicles a nav approached, now I had calculated that if a fire has not come from cars or motorbikes than van is the last to expect doing the samw ethus I had a full stare at the passeengers. A woman in veil I mean full vein was sitting with the window open and in the last seat was agirl student of marriageable age. That measb life is going on normal if a girl can go for studies away from house ina wagon and than comes back to home than life is normal.

Later I had tea with Hammad and listen to spicy juicy and naughty tales of lieutants life in Karachi. It seems that nothing much has changed in the way of subalterns life at least in Karachi. Stories of fun , running after girls and thinking of new and novel ways to impress the feminine side. The golden advices of another subaltern who claiming a masters degree in these fields making the matter worse for youngsters. Commanding officers of varying nature some who would take the subalterns out for parties themselves other making them come to office in the evenings as well. All these making life here comfortable and historic in nature. Where will this young man is going to end up? He has already proven his mettle in this war facing bullets.

1730 hours. The dust storm is still running out, ligt came for brief period enough to recharge the laptop. I had a joint , a call from commandant the good news is that he has found old record of all officers dating from 1940 till to date; also the complete address of two SJs. Visinbility has gone down now the post is s asilhouutte thus best time to attack is during a dust storm in hot weather. Voice of crow is the only voice or the preeing of tabs other wise absolutely stillness

In 1754 the British and French troops clashed at Madras in the same year the first detachment of Royal Troops 39<sup>th</sup> Foot arrived in India as reinforcement it also brought into effect the Mutiny Act into India thus the forces in India were divided into Royal Troops, Company's European Troops and Company's Native Troops. In 1757 the first Indian Regiment was organised onto European pattern it had native troops but officers were all British it was known as 'Lal Paltan'

The clans of the Darwesh Wazirs in North Waziristan are as under:-

(1)	Madda Khel	}	Ibrahim Khel
(2)	Manzar Khel		
(3)	Tori Khel		
(4)	Titi Khel		
(5)	Baka Khel	}	Wali Khel
(6)	Jani Khel		
(7)	Kabul Khel		
(8)	Hassan Khel	}	Mamit Khel
(9)	Khaddar Khel		
(10)	Bora Khel		
(11)	Wazi Khel		

**Daur.**are an interesting tribe of the Valley for the reason that they do not seem to enjoy war as the Wazirs do, they prefer agriculture. The oral history generally treats them as outsiders who purchased land from the Wazirs. They are more docile and amenable to authority than the Wazirs.

The sub tribes of the Daurs are as under:-

- (1) Darpa Khel
- (2) Mohammad Khel
- (3) Hurmaz Khel
- (4) Tappi Daurs
- (5) Hasu Khel
- (6) Mussakai
- (7) Zairkai
- (8) WaziMuhammadi
- (9) Khadi
- (10) Idak
- (11) MubarikShahi
- (12) Hakim Khel
- (13) Arghund
- (14) Malkh

### **Tuesday 2340 hoours**

The day started in a normal day last noight myself and Immad were chatting till 0300 hours the topics ranged from the effective use of helicopters to the venture of Immad in a coaching centre after girls where another senior major was also after the same girl and so on. In the morning after breakfast at around ten and a joint I walked with Immad to one of the post in the rear of the fort facing the river, Immad narrated me his find that few rabbits ae also living here as pets. We walked to the post which does not have any name but a good one with two scouts one havildar and other a soldier , havildar belonged to the Oerakzai Tribe and soldier a Turi. The view of the valley is good and one starts to grasp the very concept of Tochi Valley it self. The time just frose, a river whichw as partly visible, a

green oasis and on our immediate face on the other side of the river on a track were two mud houses rather compounds I think mud forts or palace or villa is more appropriate word. Fantastic architecture in layers and tiers, it was a compound on a much grand level than anything so far. If you face the river which becomes the valley mouth also the space opens up to almost ten miles of width. From the left Shawal Valley joins in with the Tochi Valley coming from right with a huge hill in the centre and then the range of hillocks going in the far distant. The valley which turns right is leading to Afghanistan and at the bend is Kaamr Khumar but before that Pai Wazir with its white tower and as you follow the flow of water downstream from where the two valey joins in the Datta Khel is on left from where a track then leads upwards first to Tut narai and then onwards to Razmak.

Degan is the most notorious town or village here which is also situated in that vast green plateau which is rolling from south to north, Boya comes next and then the track goes on the other bank. I tried to put my geography in order and was briefed by the havildar that you cannot see Khar Kamar from here but it is visible from Musa Khan post. The over all picture seems to be that you can be standing anywhere from 1000 BC to well present day and it seems nothing has changed if you take out electric poles and black road, other than it could be Jerusalem of Jesus with Romans occupying it and Jews living under them, it was how it looked when Alexander marched through the area in 323 BC, it could be Nineva with people building mud tower to reach the sky, it was time of Hammurabbi giving his laws, a moen jo daro or Harrapa with Aryans living, it resembled Mecca before the last Prophet {pbuh} was born and well it is still resembling that town even after thousand years. It also gives the classic look of wild west with dusty road and mud houses orchards



and no law in the town. It all depends upon your imagination and it was never short of fuel because more I observed the mud villas and in far distant at Degan the more solid became my imagination . The havildar informed me that in far distant near Degan is a factory which is extracting chromite and there are strong rumours of gold present in the area. In American history it is the gold rush days, the hill behind the Degan all of sudden brought back memories of Mackennas Gold.

A tractor with a trolley behind it brought me back to the present time. I was trying to figure out how the 1958 and 1966 skirmish took place here in which Tochi Scouts were involved, did the invaders come from the valley mouth there is no other way less one which comes down from Gharla mai but it involved crossing of river. The invaders can come from any direction such is the layout of the area and the militant culture of the people.

Meanwhile Subeadr Riaz came and I asked him certain questions like how far is Degan, who own this house, who is living in that house which is next to the fort wall. He first pointed at Degan and showed a white building towards the left and said it is the madrassah of Gul Bahadur the man most wanted, on the right at the river bend is the white pillar that is a mosque which is being run by moulvi sadiqullah, all names are such which are stomach churning in present situation all having head money and rated as most wanted in the world . The very house next to the fort is owned by another Taliban leader who keeps an eye on our fort and they were the one who made sure in 2007 that no one sells us or bring any edible to the fort, we were left with only two sacks of flour when one day we just stopped a truck carrying 400 sacks to Afghanistan which we got off loaded and told the driver to go back to Bannu and get the sacks

from our supply store, meanwhile another truck came with almost equal number of ghee and we did the same to him , although we give them the fare but rest was given to them by the supply, thus we solved our siege issue. We all had a good laugh over this ingenuity of mind.

Riaz is well informed and updated me that 16000 rupees is given to each member of the Daur Qaum living here as part of their collective earning on chromite sale, daily 14 trucks go out down country. I was fully impressed with the utility of qaum system. We ordered tea and the scout ran down to fetch it from the mess, I inquired Riaz about the proposed meeting with local malik and the Taliban leader on the history issue.

Riaz later gave me and Hammad one aof the very useful insight into frontier warfare and aslo on this conflict. He recalled how in 2007 the Guearrilas of regular army and scouts conducted joint operation in the adjoining village and we ran short of water, in the end the villagers gave us the water during a respite in the war but not to the army because by ideology they hate authority. They will let you do anything in there area as long as you inform them and take their blessing. The concept of statae authority has different connotation in yhis part of Tochi valley. If you are besieged then you are at your own, as such I have to think first of all about the safety of my own qaum and the scouts. The feud runs here for generation we have to live among these people they are our own we cannot kill them without any reason.

Riaz narrrrtaed how he was the post commander at .... Where they had the generator for electricity and the very day they started operation the talibans came and ordered not to use it again, I gave

them my identity card showing that I am also Wazir, next day I did not sitched on the lights but power was there , very next day the same atlibans came and apologised for inconveince, they had showed my card to their commander Moulvi.... Who not only appreciate my gesture but also appointed me a local commander of the Taliban. The hard reality is that if you want anything done here it is through diplomacy and not through use of force. I fully appreciated his philosophy and agreed with evey word he said. Army comes here for a year or two and then another unit and another, so no emotions just raw killing but that is neither the soloution and above all army to date has not shown any muscles because there are no muscles at all to be displayed there fore these militia officers have adpted the approach of solving the issues at local level , Boya for all practical purpose is an independent state with its own riwaj and customs.

Riaz most explosive narrative was the one where a suicide bomber laden with explosives drove to .... In hunt for divisional commander who was on reconnaissance in the area, it was by chance that I opened the car and saw the death material , we were twenty men at the post and thee was no chance of survinig in case if he had pulled the chord. I chatted with him on being Wazir and persuaded him that his target is not in the area and he will be informed when that arrives so it will be better if he goes back now and try next time, the suicide bomber agreed and went back. Unthinkable but I agree that it must have happened.

Riaz's philosophy is simple live and let live. He undesatnds his vulnerability and also of the post. We help these people by letting them go out when they are in need to bury someone in a curfew day, they helped us with letting our scouts go to attend the funeral of mother on aday when thee is no curfew. It is mutual .Once a girl ran

away with a scout who was on a post and a feud started resultantly all the four platoons stationed at Boya were posted at other areas but I came back with a permission from commandant . The issue was much broader the feud would have lasted for decades and a war would have started among the clans. We finally agreed in a Jirga where the girl was allowed to marry the scout and never to be seen again in the tribe area. Our plea was that girl was beaten by her brother and she came to the post asking for ....which was granted by the individual scout as part of Pakhtoon honour thus nothing of riwaj was broken.

I was interested in the social pattern of the people so I inquired how you get married here. The boy's mother normally selects the girl and then girl's mother visit the boy's house and sees the situation and the boy and that is the end. Who pays who was my net query, well different clans have different riwaj normally the boy's family gives presently 4 tolas of gold and also pay for the dowry of the girl. What about women eloping away. Seldom was the answer because if it happens then the girl's clan is not allowed to wear the traditional Lung the paggri as long as the parents of the girl are alive. On the other hand majority of the men are abroad earning money and there wives are all alone and so is the case of many more whose husbands are driving trucks and they normally visits once a year so many have committed suicide I did not ask the number but I knew it is very less.

Meanwhile dust storm was kicking in the avley and winds became fast and wild thus we came down and walked back to the mess.

Saturday , tomorrow I will be leaving Boya and intend going to datta Khel to see the area .

## **2230 Hours room No 4 Tochi Mess**

All of a sudden heavy firing has started, I was just having a cup of tea, since there has been a kind of peace thus initially I thought that generator has started but then when the burst was long and a sound of rocket coupled it thus now I am convinced that it is firing. The problem is that at times army or scouts also carry out drills thus no one knows what has happened. Normally my course mate Major General Ali in adjoining room does make telephone call and it is always reassuring that he is around but now he has gone on leave . Lets see what happens next, tea is getting cold.

## **0130 hours 21/22 June night 2012.**

Well nothing more about the firing, by this time I have become used to firing, hold on there is a whistling noise as rockets are being fired, generator is also running but this definitely firing of rocket , much ado nothing. The electricity here is eccentric, I have no idea when it comes and when it goes, at times there is not much of power even to run a fan as now.

Let me start from Boya. I did not went to Datta Khel because there was no convoy going there and secondly I was not sure about the behaviour of army, not that that they would have said anything for the afct that my course mate is the general but they are always suspicious of everything and everyone. The Commandant Colonel Wajahat had directed Captain Immad to drop me to MiranShah in the Scouts veicle but that entailed a lot of administrative inconvenience thus I said that I will go back to Miranshah on the army convoy. The procedure is that the convoys from the the forward posts like Doi Toi and Datta Khel where army units are deployed leave their respective areas early in the morning on Sunday, a curfew is imposed but it is not observed in Wazir areas which starts from Boya onwards.

These convoys under protection reaches Boya Bridge where another convoy from Gharlamai which is located on the other bank of river Tochi also joins at Bridge and from there they move as one convoy, this area is daur territory and Maulvi Sadiq Noor is the war lord where as Maulvi Gul Bahadur is the uncrowned king of Wazir territory in Degan, the Datta Khel tribes are lords by themselves.

On Friday night at boya one person was shot dead by the Pawani Post at night because he had ventured close to the post, his dead body remained where it was shot and in the morning the Khassadars came and so were the talibans or the men of Sadiq Noor and were satisfied that it is not an aggressive act by the Scouts rather it was the afult of that man, the man had an identity card in his pocket and a Saudi passport as well. On Saturday the representative of Sadiq Noor acme and met subedar Riaz outside the fort unofficially to convey the message from Sadiq Noor that nothing to worry. Riaz at his own send the felicitation message and regads of captain Immad and in the evening the reply came back that sadia Noor is also giving regards. The talibans requested that the compulsory compensation which government gives for every person who dies of state's bullet may please be given. All this was narrated by the subedar Riaz.

I was now mentally worried lest this act of killing the person may braek this peace pact and I amy become a target of explosives or revenge. In this part of world everything is possible and nothing can be ruled out. There is no logic there are no questions asked simple killing is not enough it has to be the most painful death imaginable, they peel your skin off and then cut your head with which they play football. Myself and captain immad had been discussing this whole scenario every night that why we are not reacting to this, we are only reactive. However a week stay in Boya has opened new vistas of vision in understanding this convoluted warfare. I have seen

with my own eyes and also took pictures of talibans taking evening walks with a foreigner probably an Uzbek around the Northern wall of the fort, if you wave they wave back. I thought of why they are not being shot with a sniper rifle or a machine gun, that is the most talked about question every where but on ground realities are different and they are unexplainable , it is only by staying here that one understands them. Myself and Immad discussed many novel ideas of destroying the enemies. The dilemma is that there is no proper word even to explain them. Sitting in Harrisonburgh it is easy to classify all of them as talibans and just shot them and burn their houses, there is no morality involved because this what they are doing to us. But as I said it is convoluted .

On Sunday morning after breakfast, hold on let me add few more words about Boya. Captain Immad was a good company and I really enjoyed his subaltern tales which are no less than Venus in India. He has spent all of his three years of army service in Kaarchi and as such had plenty of tales to narrate. Not much has changed in army way of living or shall I say a subaltern way of life in these twenty five years. If I had not seen Immad on 6<sup>th</sup> May limping and smiling despite going through a hell of fire I would have classified him as a chocolate cream soldier but I now respect him and admire him. He is living the way an army officer should live which is have fun when it is there because you never know when you are hit by a bullet. The boy has proven that he is worthy of all the juicy tales which he has narrated.

Our routine was simple getting up late, at time I did not slept all night and went out for early morning walk within the fort. Taking pictures and cahitting with posts. I think there was only one occasion when it happened other wise getting up late, having a joint and then, one ady it was going to Tehsil , other day it was going there gain

to meet the local Malik, on day three it was long sleep , on day four there was a farewell lunch for havildar Ijaz who was going on retirement, on day five it was normal and that is it. First about that farewell lunch. The tradition in Scouts is that when a person goes on retirement his Qaum gives him a farewell food. We were also invited, Ijaz was garlanded and then we had food sitting on floor, I noticed that all scouts are very good in shall I say table manners. They use fork for eating or peeling the meat of chicken. This is a sign of civilisation. Then after assumptous food which was tasty, I had mutton and avoided chicken. Ijaz has spend thirteen years as gunman of the commandant, he is Yousafzai by tribe and lives in Swabi. I have got his farewell speech and list of gifts with me as a record, he was given thirteen tea sets, ten water sets, five sweet dish bowls sets, one water cooler, one umbrella, one blanket, six clocks, hot pot set, unstitched clothes and almost ten thousand rupees in cash. I was amazed, Ijaz stood and one man from his Qaum read the farewell speech in urdu with a number of Pashtu couplets which always were applauded by the guests and qaum members. Then he announced the gifts and they were presented to him and he received them in one hand and very next moment they were put on table and next gift was there. It was like a royalty, I have not seen this kind of excuberance even in marriages and mind you this all happened at Boya. Then Ijaz spoke and there were tears in his eyes over this show of affection. It is at this point that one understands the bond of Qaum. This is a cycle which goes on and on. The junior most soldier of his Qaum also gave him present and so were gifts from other Qaums and from canteen contractor from Tehsildar. The concept of giving cash is novel to army culture but quite common in Scouts, here everything is done in the name of Qaum, they may even take bribes from transporters for the welfare of Qaum. The bottom line is as long as it is for the collective benefit no one will report.



## **A Judicial Coup**

**21<sup>st</sup> June 2012, North Waziristan, MiranShah.**

Two days back the Prime Minister of Pakistan Mr Yousaf Raza Gilani has been disqualified by the apex court because he did not wrote a letter to the Swiss government asking them to initiate criminal charges against President of Pakistan Mr Asif Ali Zardari. The premier's plea was that the constitution gives blanket amnesty to the president on this the court gave him a punishment of 30 seconds. The opposition and all those lawyers who normally wait for such happenings very swiftly again went to the court and asked for justice that since premier has now become a criminal because he has been punished thus he should be disqualified. The speaker of the national assembly gave the ruling that it is only the parliament which can decides this issue and there is nothing wrong with a 30 seconds punishment rather it was admonished and not punished. The opposition and professional lawyers and sympathizers of the nation went back to the court to ask about the legality of the speaker's ruling. Meanwhile the son of chief justice was involved in a high level crime drama in which he went abroad on someone else money to Monte Carlo and stayed with women who was not his wife. The chief justice remarked that he has no idea what kind of job his son is doing and neither he has asked his son from where does this brand new Range Rover has come from. I have no doubt that the government had some kind of hand behind this drama but they did not manipulate the son of chief justice and very next day the chief justice gave this decision and now country is without a prime minister because since he was given 30 seconds punishment so he must leave the office.

Sitting here at MiranShah and going through all this, what is happening here one cannot resist but to recall the destruction of Baghdad by Mongols and at that precise moment the ulemas and scholars were busy debating whether such and such animal is permitted to be eaten or not. The Supreme Court has acted in most immature manner by disregarding and discarding the international environment, they are more concerned with the lacunas of law. Let it be kept in mind that civil war in America was started due to the ruling of Supreme Court which allowed the slavery in 1848. Also in 1971 the same supreme court of America ruled that orgy, gangbang, water sport, bestiality, BDSM and many other such acts performed by men and women not to forget animals should be treated as work of art and not as prostitution.

How can six or seven men can pass a ruling that is offensive to an overwhelming population of the world and now because of that judgment there are sexual crimes taking place all over the world but those judges care a hoot. In such environments as prevailing now in Pakistan no one in his right mind should come forward for investment or business. Had those judges be here they would have created a lot of lacunas in dealing with terrorism? Did you saw the man planting the explosives on the road? Can you recognize this man in turban as the same who fired on you from 300 yards?. Did you had the warrant to search his vehicle after you saw him firing on the crowd? And in the end any good lawyer can get Maulvi Sadiq Noor and Gul Bahadur scot free by declaring them insane and mentally retarded there by absolving them of all these killings. The state would end up paying more on the medical facilities of these men rather than spending the same amount for the rehabilitation of injured people.

On political front the best part being here is that one is saved by unlimited political talk shows that are going around. No one has been made premier rather Makhdoom Shahabuddin the nominee has been arrested on the orders of supreme court or words to that effect. Malik Riaz the man who alleged that the son of Chief Justice has been black mailing him is facing contempt of court, he is debarred from talking to media. No lawyer is willing to fight his case as all have been threatened that they will not be allowed to enter the Bar, two other lawyers are facing this scenario. In short it is a judicial coup and these seven men have made this country a hostage now plunging it into a crisis after crisis. No one can talk about them no riots no campaign, strange . I don't think it has happened any where else for long people have been talking about the Bangladesh Model in which military and judiciary runs the country with a subservient parliament and bureaucracy and it seems it has now been put in place here. The one change here is that gone one step higher with Judiciary taking the lead. In this scenario the army gets an open hand as they are allowed to basically run the foreign policy and this is one thing which Pakistan Army always loves to do. Now any civilian government who dares to oppose any policy matter can be taken to the task in a very polite manner by simply any one filing a petition in supreme court or even they taking a suo motto notice, the advantage in this system is no Western government can make any hue and cry , they in any case are always more comfortable in dealing with the military. The media gets a free hand on any one less the military and judiciary , this is what has happened now. No political government can survive in this manner for the reason that every act of them can be petition . Public feels contended in seeing all rich men being disgraced in court, just have a look at the Malik Riaz. Media gets free hand in making money after all media is a money making commercial organisation. This is new face of Pakistan and

there seems to be no way out. Chief Justice Iftikhar Choudhry is the man with a shallow ego who can even put this country's future at stake for the sake of his ego. He has nothing to loose, he is getting a handsome pay, house, chauffer driven car and pension and above all a reputation for being honest. He is after all the man who owns no car no house and does not know what job his son is doing and from where he is getting the money. He is still lauded by public and his lawyers for his stance against the General Musharraf in 2007 when he was sacked for alleged corruption. Now he is a free man, where as Media can put any man into disgrace but it is only Ifthar who has the power to even put the media into silence. He is the most powerful man and most dangerous man in the history of Pakistan.

Background of all this dates back to 1977- 79 when a military coup not only toppled the democratic government of Mr. Zulfikar Bhutto but also send him to gaol and he was hanged on a murder charge in which despite the supreme court giving a split decision in which three judges out of six acquitted him but then chief justice put his lot in making sure that he is hanged. From then onwards supreme court became a political tool in the hands of military always ensuring that Peoples Party the Bhutto's party should suffer in one way or the other. Benazir Bhutto daughter of late Z.A. Bhutto finally came to power in 1989 and soon her government was sent home on corruption charges and her husband the present president Mr Asif Ali Zardari was indicted in as many as hundred cases and remained behind bars as long as the party was in opposition, Benazir came back to power in 1993 and Zardari was released on bail again Benazir's government was dismissed and her rival Mr Nawaz Sharif the darling of establishment was again in power. In 1999 Nawaz Shariff dismissed the army chief Musharraff and instantly army took power and Nawaz was sent on exile and cases of corruption and criminal intent were framed.

In 2007 Musharaff tried to sack the present chief justice and unexpectedly the nation stood up led by lawyers and when Musharaff finally agreed to have elections , Benazir was shot dead. In the end Musharaff had to leave the country and People's Party came into power with Gilani as premier and Zardari as president. They under the political pressure which was led by arch rival Nawaz Shariff agreed to reinstate Iftikhar Choudhry as chief justice. Iftikhar in his very first moves put all those judges on trial who did not took his side during his days of suspension, he had judges of his own choice making sure that even judges who have completed their tenure been given extension in service, he made sure that he has judges loyal to him. In June 2010 he had an emergency meeting at midnight when president nominated the senior most judge as a replace of a judge who has completed his service; Iftikhar got the next junior judge elevated and appointed as judge of supreme court.

The judiciary in Pakistan as in other part of world is regarded as sacred and debate is still raging that who is supreme, Parliament or the Supreme Court. The combination and alliance of media and judiciary is now in place and Pakistan again faces an uphill challenge. Army is happy because its chief General Kayani is already working on extension of service which is due to expire next year. Thus it is also army high command which has high stakes. In case if the whole system is sent home packing then there will be no one to appoint a new army chief and both Iftikhar & Kayani will remain in power.

## **Friday 22nd June 2012.**

I have not been able keep track of the days , I thought it is Wednesday but then the muazzan first from the city side and then from the Tochi Mosque gave the Khutba and it was only then that

I realised that it is Friday. This day is quite important as almost everyone offers prayers. The khutba is short and to the point where as the Khutba coming from the city side is always loud. I have no idea what sermon the city Maulvi gives since it is in Pashto but from the tone it is not difficult to guess what are the topics. In Punjab the Friday sermon is long and to be honest quite vulgar at times , the maulvi tends to cross the limits, one time in my own village I heard the maulvi saying ‘ women who are atking abth now should hurry’ which is quite offensive but none dare to speak. While going to the Boya and coming abck I noticed the mosques design here, they are of mud and no high minarets, only at Degan I looked through the binoculars to see a white building which was madreessah also. Enroute to Boya the only way I could make out about mosque was through the slight curve in the otherwise normal building, this curve is Manbar. At Boya I offered the Juma Prayers and sermon was in Pashto. Women does not go the mosques here, in Punjab in certain villages they do go, my grandmother used to go but not my mother.

At around 1900 hours I was sitting in my room trying to make some sense of the Tochi Scouts during period of 1922 – 1936 which is by and large quite administrative in nature, the match between Greece and Germany in Euro 2012 was on television , out side there was private dinner going on , there were fiur or five officers all colonels and brigadiers with television set in the lawn which was not for the match but to listen to new political situation talk shows. All of a sudden there was a blast, the sound was terrifying as some thing has hit the mess building, my heart beat became abnormal, like the heart beat of a rabbit when you catch him. The Television went off the air and then there was another blast. The missile I later learnt had hit the mess barrack which is not more than twenty yards from my room. My first instinct was to switch off the room ligts as the

assassin is only targeting me, on second thought I switched it on and just sat there. The mind made an appreciation that whether I sit in the room or outside the chances of a missile hitting me are equal so I just sat on the chair. I thought of Reena and composed a message for her. In such a scenario it is natural to think of loved ones and I cannot think of any one else other than her.

The back ground of this attack goes to another incident which happened at South Waziristan where 41 Punjab tried to bring a compound not more than a kilometre away from there position under their control and almost a replica of what happened here on 6<sup>th</sup> May took place again, Army suffered a dozen casualties including an officer. The notion of victory has passed back to the Mahsuds and Army has again suffered a confidence shaking blood mayhem.

On Saturday morning the aviation contingent here invited me for a tea break, the colonel staff and G-1 Intelligence Lieutenant Colonel Umar were also invited, it was in connection with their room renovation. Major Adnan invited me when I met him I recalled that he is the same officer whose picture I saw in 2005 sitting at Tochi Mess, why I remembered him was because that was the first time I saw Tochi Mess pictures. He is in cobra and it was he who gave me an update on the Ladda Operation. I was invited to see the Tennis Final in the evening at the Artillery Courts .

I walked the one mile distance at 1700 hours, it is quite hot at this time still bearable, I wore my black shoes, last time I tried the chaplis/ sandal on the same track and was not comfortable as the stones start pricking your soles. The artillery is always reputed for its administrative arrangements and this was no exception. The ground a clay court was well marked with white limestone , there are

two types of lime stones used I learnt later a normal and liquid. The game is not serious one rather a shugal, but it is played seriously with little observance of rules. The players all officers. The first match was for third position between Brigadier Shahid and Lieutenant Colonel Umar on one side and Commander Logistics Colonel Akhtar and Captain Hamza on other side. Shahid is a cool and very polite person and same holds true for all, Akhtar creates life in the court with his remarks. Other than this they all are average players. There was a umpire a captain sitting on a high chair, two linesmen also officers and almost a dozen pickers. A dozen officers were there to witness the match, 45 Medium or Field is the new artillery regiment replacing the 149 which is going to Bahawalpur. The CO of new unit is a smart guy with a body builder body, he seems to be the fittest among all his officers a sad reflection of his officers, however I was disappointed to see him wearing an iron bangle which is worn by Shias, this clear reflection of religious sectarianism is no good.

The match was fun, later the final between Tochi Scouts and the Divisional Headquarters took place. Now this is in my opinion the most dangerous Tennis tournament which is played with guns all around and soldiers on sentry duty as well

### **3<sup>rd</sup> July 2012.**

Another full moon has elapsed, I saw it last evening when it was at its best glow, I understand that a full moon is a full moon, but what I want to highlight is that at around 2100 hours it was well above the lone tree at the entrance of the mess, this is my yard stick, at 1900 hours it is too early but still visible but at 2000 hours it is half visible through the dark and dense shades of the tree, its upper half visible and light pouring all around. At 2100 hours it is well above the tree and then all night it travels from left to right. This left



to right is in relation to my room and this bench which is placed outside other wise it is east –west movement.

The drones are humming above, they seems to be a part of life here, all the time present in air and their low humming noise. Since last full moon almost half a dozen drone attacks have been carried out, the last one was yesterday morning then on Sunday morning before that on Friday evening. The television normally gives instant news of the attack and the number of people killed, so I think they all have hit the right targets. I now believe that even the troops also look upon them as friendly because they are hitting the very men who are causing the problem .

Last one month has been the Euro Cup football at Ukraine and Poland, Spain finally won it . Mario Balotelli was fantastic and I think his both goals against Germany are classic especially the second one; but after the final I think he lacks sports man spirit, the greatness is even in accepting the defeat after all it is just a sports and better team won. Pakistan made a come back at Colombo, but test seems to be heading for a draw. There was a controversy about the Mohsin Khan and Ramiz Raja, I was fortunate to watch that programme on Geo sports. I have failed to understand the issue. Ramiz has passed some remarks about Mohsin and this Mohsin is a regular presenter on the Geo sports channel. No when in a country you can pass derogatory remarks about the president and prime minister all in the name of freedom of expression then what is the issue in calling a cricket coach as unfit to be so. One of the journalist called Ramiz Raja disgracer, I think Rameez should sue him. England has beaten Australia in both the one dayers, a sad affair but I think it has got something to do with the Queen's jubilee. It would have been preposterous to lose to Australia during the jubilee year.

Personally I am in a bad state of mind, feeling all alone and none to blame other than me, flashes of Azadeh, Salik and Samina comes to my mind on regular basis and so does Reena. I phoned her on her birthday, she at least has the courtesy to attend it although she has stopped sending meemails. She was the first and the last girl to be so caring. At my age and state of mind she is the perfect companion but here again I have to blame myself. At times I think what am I doing and what I intend doing next.

I have been doing the research on fakir Of Ipi and managed to reach the year 1945. Fantastic person, the most accomplished guerrilla leader, rather to call him guerrilla leader is not the very appropriate word, there is no word to describe him, he is not Omar Mukhtar although he has lot of commonality with him, he is above Che Guerra and Fidel and Mao. Lawrence of Arabia comes quite close but Ipi was not in politics, to him fighting was all that kept him going. Osama Bin laden is the one which comes most close to him in term of historical similarities, both religious and both wee hunted by the super powers of their time, Britain hunted Ipi with almost two division of army and group of Royal air Force aircraft but never been able to capture him, this is where Osama lacks the vision. Shami Pir was another historical character which emerged onto the North Waziristan scene for a brief period and created sensation. It seems unbelievable but it is true that a foreign religious person within months can have so much followers among the Wazirs.

Weather has been pretty good , frequent showers and not very intense heat, light remains available till 1930 because officers play tennis, oh I forgot to mention about Wimbeldon , Nadal's exit was unexpected lets see what happens to Andy Murray.

I have typed over 45000 words so far and I am quite please with myself but still I think I lack discipline and this discipline is only available at Reena's place in Harisonburgh.

It is half past five in the morning and day seems to have been started long ago, only the humans are sleeping although majority of them offers fajr prayers, this is the beauty of Fajr prayers or for that matter all the prayers that they divide the ady and gives an natural time period of the ady. I missed these Fajr prayers in Glasgow and Harrisonburgh where it is very difficult to start the day because there is no set time for starting but Fajr is the key to success. All our daily routines start with fajr prayers, now I can go and have a cup of tea from the mess because I know that the cook and awiters were up for the prayers and it is this thing which is lacking in non muslim countries. In Christian world Sunday mass is one which keeps your Sunday organised but here the whole ady all around the yaer is kept intact. Ramadan is also approaching and I have my apprehensions about it but here in Tochi Mess it would be fantastic, I think I will be able to keep the fast for the first time in my life in a proper manner; lets see.

## **24 September 2012**

I am sitting at Bannu Tochi Serai, I came from Miranshah in the morning with Captain Saad ina hired Toyota car an old model with the convoy. I met Ali in the morning at his room he was getting ready for the office , I thanked him for the tae break invitation and then at 1100 hours we left , Mohammad shah is also leaving for Bannu as he has to go for the promotion course at Jalozaï. There was a usual chaos at the Road operating day ground, a dusty ground with over twenty vehicles. The driver a Tori Khel Wazir of sixty years of age was talkative and disgruntled person , a cribber of highest

order and I had to give him ashut up call and also to check his speed. But by and large I talked to him and updated myself on the area. Contrary to my own knowledge the area down below Miramshah till Bannu is not inhabited by the Daurs rather on the west the area is under control of Wazirs, different clans and on east is inhabited by Daurs with intermingled pockets of Wazirs in between. As we left Miranshah the first town is Aisha Post, then Spalga the village of Ipi and then Idak , I was shown the high mud fort of NWF which is still functional it seems, then Mirali and finally we entered into Bannu Frontier Region which is all occupied by Bakka Khel { Wazir}. Weather was hot and dusty and as such I think the qualities of pictures might not be that good. FWO was all working and after having visit the Bandigar I am deeply impressed by them, I saw them working in excessive heat on the making of road and supervising it. Over all the entire road is broken and most of the time we travelled on the dusty track, luckily the tyres of the vehicles held their ground. Also saw the powindahs with their camels, these camels mostly the young siblings tend to travel in the middle of the road where as the mature ones were mostly busy eating the shrubs. Army was deployed enroute but still I think it is not enough. It was sad to see the troops sitting the rear of hired trucks without wearing any helmet and with their clothes hanging . We were checked twice but that took place in Bannu FR for the reason that we by that time became the leading vehicle courtesy of Driver's fast driving. But it was gain only customary and lone soldier saluted Captain Saad without even checking his identification, a bad and dangerous culture.

Subedar Hidayat a Wazir is incharge of Bannu Serai a very neat, clean and efficient person , he has a beard but without any moustaches. I requested him to get me Mazari cloth, which he promptly went and bought and also bought the Bannu Woollen cloth, but the Mazari is

not original and woollen cloth I am afraid is not enough for me to make a suit, but he will get it changed. Rang Ammad, Umar and Tiger. There was a miss call from father; it gives a lot of strength to know that at least he remembers me. In the evening I went for a walk with Saad to the cantonment.

Bannu cantonment as we walked past the rear headquarters of forward battalion, 12 FF, 28 Baluch and some odd Punjab Regiments, a sad commentary on their living, the area in front was abundant with wild growth, dirty barracks and even more dirty cook houses. This comes as no surprise because the area in the close vicinity of army chief's house in Rawalpindi presented the same scene in 2003; it has improved a little now. Bannu in good old days was supposed to be and was actually a recreation place for forward troops but now it is chaotic. It requires little effort to improve the living environments of the area but cutting the grass and planting the flowers and benches and overall having a more hygienic living. An army is not only known by the equipment it keeps but also through these aspects one can make out the morale of the troops. It was evening thus no need of light but I am certain that none can walk here at night and under any emergency it will be chaotic. Having said this the Bannu Cantonment gives the look of yesteryears of Peshawar cantonment, old trees wild growth of shrubs on path ways, vast expanse of empty grounds, old building structures. It was constructed in 1856 onwards and still few barracks are functional, although majority are of 1900 circa. We entered Combined Military Hospital area, a well kept and well lighted area, having a proper guide map with light, pleasant to notice it. My mind raced to my brother in law who served here in 2000. Area opposite the CMH is deserted in nature with two old barracks having verandah, these by their design looks to be the oldest in construction.

I had no intention of having the dinner but Subeadr Hidayat invited me have or rather joined their Dastar Khawan, these Scouts have very romantic names like Serai, Dastar Khawan and so on.. On the floor there was a long mat, with over hundred scouts sitting on both sides having their food, I was invited to occupy the head area. I am impressed with the cleanliness and standard of food, chicken and bananas with curd. I told Hidayat sahib that it is the best that I have seen so far in the Bannu cantonment and it is fact. Later after the food , he showed me the area, neat and clean washroom and above all a proper drainage system for the water waste of cook house, I am not off the mark if I say that it is the first time I have seen any cook house without cats loitering around and no standing water. He also showed me the room for the sweepers and believe me it has carpet and fan in it, something very rare in army.

Later I I read and still is reading Line of Fire by General Musharraf , I have read it before but reading it again to update myself with the war against terror time line. Interesting account, it is nostalgic in nature as I have seen all this very closely and by reading his narrative my mind raced back to Samina when we would both discuss the events of the day . It took me back to the rotary wing crew room where Khalid Rana and myself were the only officers who would cut joke at his modern enlightenment, it all seemed yesterday but years have passed by now. Azadeh and Salik raced to my mind as we were in Gujranwala and Rawalpindi during most of his tenure. Not a bad president but then he himself admits that one needs to have a unity of command to govern this country. Otherwise his account is full of contradictions of character and history. I am more interested in his account of Kargil affairs which I think he is quite justified in claiming as victory but then again it is the political leadership which has to decide whether a country needs to have a war or not.

## **Kurram-25 September 2012**

1145 hours, we are stranded at Tangai Chowk , short of Karak, because our troop carrier vehicle an Isuzu small truck has developed a fault, it is heating up and it is due to the dysfunctional fan, a mistri is now working on it and Captain Saad has coordinated with the rear for a replacement vehicle, benefits of mobile telephone; it will take almost an hour and half for it to reach here. We are parked next to Daewoo bus stop opposite a CNG pump, weather is not very hot.

The journey from Bannu up till now is quite fascinating, as one comes out of Bannu and travels on the road leading to the Indus highway the area is absolutely flat , as flat as a billiard table, initially it has desert like terrain with date trees also but then on both sides of the road it is flat, fertile with occasional trees and sparse population, the main problem is lack of water, it is mainly the bed of old water streams which are wide and vast, it is sufficient enough to feed the entire Afghanistan. On a historical note Bannu area has attracted old Afghan rulers from 1000 AD onwards and after seeing it with my own eyes I am convinced that it is true, Sikhs also ruled it for long. After getting on at Indus Highway which is a very good road the scenery remains the same and it gradually that the scene changes with area becoming greener with more orchards and area becoming broken. The mountains also become visible on the right of the road and beyond the mountains is the Indus. Last time I travelled was on the road leading from Bannu towards the Kohat on the old road where the visibility was bit restricted. Our vehicle is now rectified and we intend moving on it forward.

2230 hours Thall Fort. Lying in Alizai room, the very fort where I came in 1992, fond memories of good ole days, I came in Alouette

helicopter with Captain Rizwan Zalim, I was not qualified on the machine but acted as navigator, we picked brigade commander of Bannu and then came here and stayed the night or probably it was brigade commander of Thall Brigade I am not sure. I remember that I saw a tree planted by Fatima Jinnah , I saw it again, it has not grown up in all these years. Sat for hours in the mess lawn and watched birds of all kinds , ducks, peacock, pigeons, pheasants and also deer, beautiful wildlife caged and fed. Then came a horde of children of officers who played cricket and behaved not much different from the birds . Fun to watch them, mentally I saw Salik and Azadeh among them. Children are of all age and I travelled through the time line among them. I remember the time when I came here last, Samina was major then and we were staying in Corps Mess, wonderful memories of bygone days. I think I sat on the bench till darkness, when I was here last time I think I had hashish then but not now.

The journey from Karak onwards was uneventful , passed through the Lacchi home town of my friend Khattak, I have been here many times, then Kohat. We bought Guavas from a road vendor who were in line, Kohat is famous for them but I found nothing special in them. Samina's father was base commander here and I thought of her when must have been here and passed through the same road as I am passing now. Had a telephone call from tiger. The road is okay and scenery is good. The valley is wide and fertile with low level mountains running parallel. I passed through this valley in 1985 when I was a subaltern and my battery was deployed at Parachinar and today after a gap of quarter of century I am travelling again. Not much has changed in these years, the road was as good or bad as it is today and also the general layout is also same. One major change is the railway line, there used to be a narrow gauge railway on which I travelled then but now it has become extinct now. I noticed it from Kohat onwards, the track is broken and at places almost gone, a sad affair indeed.



We passed through the Shia and Sunni strongholds and these signs are visible everywhere, this area is always volatile in nature in terms of sectarian riots. The Shias have placed chalking highlighting their faith and equally I saw the Sunnis constructing grand mosques and tableghi centres being established this no way out, it will only enhance and fuel the fire. In Skardu and Gilgit similar situation prevails. The area is beautiful and its greenery and fertility is in sharp contrast to the barren nature of Tochi Valley. One is reminded of the early British era when Ross Keepels raised the Kurram Militia and moved forward, I thought of him how he must have rode in this area. The people are not that fiery or militant as they are in Tochi, the major tribe is Orakzai and Turi, Turis are all Shias and Orakzais are mixed in faith. We passed rather bypassed the Hangu the most violent city after Parachinar. The Shias have built a beautiful and grand mosque on top of a mound, it is similar to the Mormon Church near the Washington when one is travelling on Highway 81 towards Virginia. Population density is more but still bearable, all in all the area also resembles the Islamabad in scenery and I wondered that only if the security is improved then an excellent and beautiful place to live. We were not carrying our haversack a bad habit among the scouts and soldiers, it used to be a standard pattern in eighties and nineties but I have noticed that these scouts are casual in nature, they were not carrying even water. Thus a long day without any edible, in good ole days they would have stopped at any place and bought their lunch but that is not possible in present security environments. Anyway Captain Saad had a stop at upper Darwazai a small town with a bank and bought some sweets and Mountain Dew, I am fed up of Mountain Dew and prefer simple water which I am carrying in the vehicle. I hope Captain Saad will learn something from this venture, he is a technical graduate and have spent four years in a university and now serving in a corps signal unit and on attachment

with Tochi Scouts, I am sure this attachment will go a long way in broadening his horizon, it helped me when I was a subaltern. You learn what to wear and what to carry and more important what to eat in such areas and then what is important to carry. The driver drives fast and bit reckless, they have a habit of blowing horn unnecessarily without having any regard for the vehicle in front whether it has any space to give to let him to overtake, a kind of cultural mindset, same habit was displayed by that civilian driver while driving us from Miranshah to Bannu, it is risky and they have to be constantly reminded of this but it requires time and constant monitoring. I have forgotten to highlight that at Karak where we were repairing our truck, we were approached by a civilian driver in a white Toyota car, he introduced himself as a retired military transport havildar of Khyber rifles and offered his help, he bought us Pepsi, so this is the kind of bondage one draws among the scouts and uniform personals.

We reached Thall fort at 1600 hours, and Captain Saad left and I stayed here. The fort is impressive one of the most impressive in nature, it has lot of resemblances in term of layout and construction atleast in terms of entrance with the Cherat Fort and also with Razmak. This fort and Razmak were constructed in same time period also Khaiaosora and spinawam were constructed in same time period that is post 1922 or more precisely in 1932. It is not easy to destroy a fort of such magnitude and strength. I have seen it from air and now from ground too. In 1992 I had visited an outpost also {picquets} which is magnificent in nature.

The mess has been renovated in 2006, which includes tiling and layout, it has as a matter of fact caused more damage then good, for instance my room now has sealed windows and I cannot have any access to fresh air and this have to rely upon the air conditioned, high

ceilings have been done with false ceilings but over all you cannot renovate this mess, it was more classy in its original layout then now. Only Aitchison College in Lahore has the distinction of retaining the original layout from 1890 till now, rest all military establishments have become victims of personal whims and designs. I am not very happy with the Thall Scouts , the tea is not good, the attitude of waiters is pathetic, the flush tank of my room is broken and this speaks of only negligence of mess secretary. It is probably due to the high standards set by the Tochi that I am having such feelings otherwise in army aviation mess the sink which was broken in 2006 is still in the same condition in Room No 10 on ground floor.

I had a walk around the fort, this {Thall Scouts} does not observe retreat with a bugle. Another thing which I noticed is their faded insignias at their entrance, too many paintings of Mrs Wajahat Malik adoring the mess giving it a look of a restaurant rather than a mess. Pakistan has won the T20 match against the Bangladesh still Amir Sohail is having his sarcastic remarks , it seems the man cannot have any positive or good words and always see the dark side. Obama the Nigger spoke at UNO in which he said that no insulting speech can cause violence, it is freedom of expression that is why I am writing him as nigger, it is after all freedom of expression. He { nigger} is confused he cannot understand one simple fact that human reacts differently to different kinds of insult, after all the majority of homicides in world over are caused by the anger which we feel, it is this feeling which makes a soldier go and launch himself on an enemy. If I take his freedom of expression philosophy on its face then what stops the Wazirs to demand the expulsion of the Americans or the mullahs to instil the sense of jihad in people. But to the Nigger only the American version and principles are the only thing that are correct and rest of the world is ignorant and as such cannot decide

any thing of their own. It is this attitude which caused two great world wars and will surely led us to another unless and until we start respecting the varying cultures. The Americans can have freedom of expression by portraying Jesus nude and with prostitutes in more grotesque manner but don't expect the others to have same tolerance level for their prophets and unless we reach a compromise we will keep on having clash of cultures and civilisations.

**26 September 2012, 1855 hours.**

Sitting rather lying in the wing headquarters of No 1 Wing, it is a old room a proper old room constructed almost hundred years in the traditional pattern of the natives with mud plastered walls, roof is made of wood lumbers and sticks of local trees which I have been told is very strong and is used instead of cement, it is creaking , the room is like the Shigar Fort room but it is original , I had the option of staying in Lt Col Qaiser's room which is rather new construction but I prefer staying here.

In the morning I was up by 0730 the water was cold , tea luke warm and toast stiff. I gave my piece of mind to the waiter called for bill, paid it {Rs 192 for meal and service charges} and sat in the lawn watching the birds. Peacocks wee out and ducks fighting as usual as yesterday, pigeons were not seen. Ducks have apeculiar habit that all of a sudden one or two out of them will pick a fight among themselves and then they will run wild. I read in Musharraf's book that during his meeting with Chinese head of state, the Chinese gave him a piece of advice regarding the investors that investors behave like pigeons, on the first sign of danger they all fly away but when the trust is restored then they will come one by one. I observed it yesterday and found it absolutely correct. Later I went to the CMH

merely because the hospital reminds me of my wife Samina. I went to second in commands office a Major Raja , a courteous officer , I requested him that I want to the pictures of AMC badge painted outside the hospital. He candidly asked for my identification which I gave then he went to his commanding officer's office rather acting because the real one is in Peshawar, later he came and politely asked me whether I have taken any other pictures in the fort which I replied in affirmative. I was enjoying it because I knew that the classical military security system is now working, he has gone to his CO to inform him and get his permission who in turn had asked him to contact the brigade, as he rang DAA & QMG who was not in his chair, I cheerfully asked him that I don't need the pictures and then we both had a laugh and later after having a cup of tae I left , subedar ... was waiting for me outside I was happy to see a Tochte.

We later went towards the brigade to fetch the ration, subeadr was anxious and said that he can come agin as I am getting late but I assured him that I have all the time in world so take your time but I shouldnot be the excuse for you to come here again , he understood the message and later dropped the idea that it is not important. All the scouts wthout exception were busy in using mobiles, my driver said that since mobiles are not working at Sadd athus they all make full use of it here. I took more pictures of the fort and later we drove out from the Thall.

Thall was bustling with life vendors selling items on the roadside, rows of Suzuki pickup waiting for the passengers, food being prepared, nothing has changed here in last two decades. Scenary very green and area fertile and population quite dense. WE drove in a convoy one in which I was sitting other carrying scouts with a machine gun mounted {mine also had the same} and third

was the civil pick up carrying three mules and two donkeys. Road is fairly good, the valey opens up and is very wide, I could see the snow clad mounatins in the far distance, the very first snow of the season. The town are again classified as shia and sunni, some of the towns are built on the banks of the river and are raelly old and some on the side of road which have new construction. All along I noticed khassadars and levies at regular distance, system is working. I was keen to see the gate of Kurram Valley which is known as Kharlachi, I saw it on aold sketch with a note that names to be entered here but driver told me that it is still away. Boys and children coming back from school wearing militia uniform , I am again distressed at the change of Scouts uniform from militia dress, it looks odd in thi senvoinment. The plice aslo wears the same dress at certain places so quite a confusuion, I waved hands to all. The traffic is quite dense , Toyota hiace plying between the Kohat and Parachinar, quite a number of women among them. I have noticed that the women are more frequent in thi svalley, also saw few boards announcing the uplift area and projects of European Union but it is like salt in flour, surprisingly all the borads are in new conditions without any graffiti. On the other hand uncountable graffiti in favour of maulana Fazal Ur Rehman and quite a numbe of Pakistan tehrek insaaf flags. Graffiti and slogans of all kind but almost all are religious in nature less PTI which aims at corruption also saw few flags of PPP but no mention of the premier or president. One slogan aims and claims that we will instill the hate against americans in all the children. We finally reached the Gate to Kurram Valley an impressive gate with plenty of khasadras , they are mostly very young in age, fair colour and gives innocent looks but people obeys them. Our JCO was quite arrogant with the natives during road jams and bottlenecks, it is difficult to teach them that this is not the way to win the hearts and minds of people which in any case he is not pushed or cared

about. In the agency none is carrying weapon and all in all people looks quite docile in nature. We passed the Arawali Fort another fort of grandeur and having an air strip I believe. Arawali was quite famous during the afghan war, Captain rizwan Now brigadier stayed here with the newly acquired Stinger missiles in 1985. Now we were in Sunni dominating area after Arawali comes Sakhi Ahmead Shah Kalle then Shashu K, Shastu, Warsak Kalle, Durrani Chotta and finally Sadda. It is as usual as it was in 1985, the kebabs were being fried and I have only this memory of this town of old journey and I noticed the same today as well. The square in Sadda is named as Emir Mawaiyyah, a controversial figure in Islamic history , naming a square with a high monument after his name is like showing a red flag to a bull. Shias hate none more than him and to me it is inviting them rather throwing a gauntlet to them , inciting them and during Muharram it is like adding petrol to a fire. We turned right , there is vast tent city on the plains which used to be old Afghan refugee camp it is now being used as a camp for displaced people of Daddar. We had stopped at one of the No 1 wing post near the degree college. There is a road block with a female warden present alongwith a male, she was all covered in veil.

A classic road and track journey from Sadda to Daggar where the wing headquarters is situated. Mud plastered villages hosting the black and white stripes flag with one odd Pakistan flag in between. Shops were opened , the names changed here like Mamozai. I am not sure about the demographic nature of the area. We followed a road which runs parallel to Khurmana Nullah, road is at quite an elevation , area is lush green and fertile, occasional traffic comprising of pick ups and cars mostly non custompaid having FATA number plates. As we made ingress into the valley the area becomes more open, only one odd bottle neck but still plenty of ambush sites. Houses

are all mud plastered and we passed through them with children waving including small girls, it is almost similar to the area close to Skardu and beyond it. If only the security issue is taken away then this place is tourist paradise. We crossed the Khurmana Nullah at Dwa Toi and finally reached Daggar, it is situated next to the algal on high ground. The very first person I met was the subedar major Ashna Gul the same very person whom I met at Boya while he was unceremoniously being sent to the No 1 Wing. From road the track leads upwards in a steep ascent, I was bit scared but driver assured me and we reached the top. Parked the Toyota single cabin and walked further up where the Wing Commander Lieutenant Colonel Qaiser of 52 Cavalry was standing. A chubby officer with a short beard, he welcomed me I fully understand that any serving officer is always bit apprehensive about a retired officer who comes to his kingdom and is senior in service but junior in rank but after a smoke, thanks he smoke we talked about the project and I gave him a run down addressing him as sir. I found him a pleasant company, energetic and having positive attitude towards the life, service and what all he is doing here. He immediately took me on a drive towards the Dakka Pass which is quite near and we passed through the Daggar village. He was driving himself and we had a full escort, the village was once a flourishing place but now in half ruins.

This part of Kurram is known as Central Kurram and is part of Orakzai Tribe with Mamuzai sub clan inhabiting the area, the operation to clear the area is code name as Operation Mamuzai.

Qaiser took me to the edge of the road where it finishes and turns into a track with a pass known as Dappa Pass. I saw two old women walking on the other bank of Khurmana nullah, it immediately brought back the reflection of Skardu and adjoining valleys. We were



in the hostile area with chances of fire coming from anywhere quite bright, neither myself nor Qaiser were wearing any protective jacket but our escort was fully armed and they walked ahead and fanned the area. Qaiser showed me the Chile Sar peak , a major operation took place here in January 2012 in which this wing occupied the whole feature in one night a reminiscences of Iblanke Ridge operation of 1939. We stayed for time a quiet and beautiful palce, water is muddy and afst flowing. We drove back and from Daggar village we turned towards the Khurmana Nullah and crossed it quiet a feat with fast flowing water , a tribute to Toyota car manufacturer. We climbed up and followed a dusty track and drove up and up and Qaiser told me that how this area was cleared of insurgents and how he established hios post here in one night and later the post came under 22 attacks in a span of two weeks in which two scouts were killed and many more injured. We stopped near the Sammu killi post , it had started drizzling and I was amazed that all the scouts had the rain coats including one for me. Qaiser noted my appreciation and said that he had got 300 of these raincoats made from wing fund and then stitched them according to his requirement having a zipper and buttons as well. The post subeadr came down he looked in quite a high morale fully armed and dressed. I saw the bullets holes and later we all turned back and drove to our headquarters adopting a different track yet we had to cross the nullah. We passed through the village and reached our post which is known as three pimples. Had ahearty lunch comprising of rice and chicken curry and then green tea and a smoke. Qaiser offered his prayers while I just ventured upstairs and stepped into the field mess, The mess havildar Rafique introduced me to his staff and later I came to know that he had taken part in the Swat Peration of 1995 I shared some of my knowledge with him and we agreed to have a another sitting to get his personal views on that operation.

Qaiser and myself along with Rafique climbed up to the command post which is nothing more than a tent and few bunkers at the top from where I had a good view of the whole valley and later his one staff NCO who had taken part in the Cahlo Sar operation gave me the account. The valley is divided into two wings which both join together provided if you cross the nullah. The No 1 Wing was inducted here from Dir operation in October 2011 after travelling a distance of 550 kilometers, they had covered an equal distance from Miranshaha to reach the Dir and after taking part in Chitral Operations moved here. Initially they had one month training at Sadda and Tahl where Qaiser practiced the firing and other field crafts and then they came here at Three Pimples. It was the start of phase two of the operations. In the first phase the lower Kurram Valley was cleared from the miscreants rather the Orakzai Agency was cleared. The agency does not share any physical contact with the Durand Line. The miscreants actually gather here from Khyber and Kurram Agency and Daggar became their centre point. They started living here and offered resistance to any incoming force. The very first time when Qaiser's wing came here it was stoned by the locals still a far cry from the Tochi and Wazirs where the same welcome would have been in the form of small arms fire. Over all the area and agency looks not as militant as Tochi, they don't carry arms and weapons, houses construction is not as fortified as there, before the incoming of army and scouts there were schools but overall the agency remained secluded. I saw women folk walking or looking after the animals although covered but not in a shuttle cock burqa. Daggar village was the arms purchasing centre but now all the shops have been destroyed. No 1 wing had the responsibility to occupy the both ridges and high features astride the Kharmanna nullah. The features are not steep rather gentle and are in layers with thick jungle at places and also having the bald green patches. Taliban

were living and are still living on the high features and some of them have been cleared but not all thus there is always a chance of them attacking. The posts are at height in excess of 8000 feet which is the snow line. They got the first snow in januray 2012 by that time they ahd cleared and occupied the features.

Later at night I had the dinner at qaisers bunker, Biryani and curry alongwith potato cutlets and curd and ending with green tea. Saw the television but I requested him to change the channlel as I have no stomach for the Geo and other bizarre channels which have nothing but sensation and pessimisim. Saw pictures on Qaiser's comouter , only some of them are worth printing in the book.

My roof is constantly creaking and I am not sure where is the toilet and where is the awsh room. This bunker is reminiscent of old ack ack adys of Sargodha and paarchinar. Clothees hanging ona wire, books lying around, this is the bunker of a captain whi is on leave, same old stuff Dale Carnegie's 'How to win friends and influence people' a copy of John Grisham's ' The partners' a copy of religious prayers, few medicines. I cannot make out whether the occupant is married ora bachelor but this much I know that he is also from cavalry. A pedestal fan, a prayer rug, a small wall hanging mirror, steel helmet, telescope, bullet proof vest but no weapon is in sight. Two energy saves are hanging from the roof, room or buker has a green carpet an old mess of mass electric wires, a small window, two tubular cots , I am using one of them , sorry I have a wooden bed with foam mattress. The size of bunker is ten by ten, there is a adjoining room also and then stairs that leads up, all mud built and thenoutside stony sloopy ground. It was a local house which remained under use of Kurram Militia and now under Tochi. Outside weather is cloudy and chilly with drizzling.

## **27 September 2012, 0945 hours**

I was up at 0700 hours but remained in the bed , night was calm initially there were few sounds of firing and I thought here I go again but then I wandered into sleep, I had a thought that in case if the roof collapses then what are my chances of survival. In the morning I rang field mess on inter com number 812 for a cup of tea, the waiter brought it and spill it luckily the computer was saved. Then another attendant came and informed me that warm water is ready for a bath, I inquired about the location of washroom and he informed me it is next door. I went there it is a bright and sunny day, it is only meant for taking shower but not for toilet, I searched around and a sweeper in khaki kameez shalwar came shook my hand and then guided me to the toilet, it is bit far away, eastern style with corrugated sheets and semi open. The air was filled with the sounds of children reciting their lessons in near by school. Later I took shower and now had my shave in the bunker with just a razor blade no soap or water. I am waiting for my clothes which the attendant has taken down for pressing with the help of a coal iron

2300 hours. The power supply is off, there is electricity provided by the government but it is erratic but not as bad as in Punjab during summer. The wing operates its own generator from 1900 – 2300 hours same as in Boya. I just watched two fascinating games of cricket, Sri Lanka beat New Zealand and West Indies defeated England and it was in last match I saw a fascinating piece of fielding by Pollard when he saved a six by throwing the ball back into arena after jumping over the boundary line fabulous stuff. In the morning after I got my clothes back and I got them quick much quicker than in aviation mess Rawalpindi. I had breakfast with Qaiser under the fly, consisting of toasts and omelette and two cups of tea. We started recording the chain of events for which I have actually come here.

In July 2011 No 1 Wing moved from Miranshah to Dir and Qaiser took the command and on the third day of his command one of his soldiers died while taking bath in the river. The wing was asked to initially block the four passes leading from Afghanistan into Dir and they carried two search operations as well, nothing much happened but one platoon of 16 AK regiment was ambushed in which four soldiers were killed. Wing moved to the Thall on 16<sup>th</sup> October 2011 and after carrying out a month of training was tasked to clear the Daapa Valley in conjunction with 16 FF and 42 Punjab, corps commander and IGFC held durbars and raised the morale of the troops. Now this 42 Punjab is my regiment in a sense that I served with them at Siachen and their commanding officer of that time is working in Islamabad and I usually meet him quite often.

This valley is wide with the dead end coming at the Dappa Pass which is flat cutting and from here the track leads to Tirah the stronghold of Afridis. The village where I am sitting now is known as Tappi Killi and wing headquarters is located at higher ground known as Three Pimples. From here if I look on the west then the ground opens up with green fields and after a kilometre or even less it joins the Kharmanna Nullah, across the nullah is another built-up and then a low level mound which runs towards the south. In the east is rather high plateau which leads towards the south, across the dappa pass the Cheelo Sar feature starts which is steep from this direction, it has two parts, the lower part is known as three mounds and then it rises up and moves towards the west in a crescent shape and joins with the low level mound forming a saddle. No 1 Wing had to occupy the Cheelo Sar and that too at night. Qaiser formed two groups of fifty scouts each. Dappa pass was cleared by the 16 FF and low level mound by the 42 Punjab. Taliban were reported at the peak of Cheelo Sar. It was a tough climb at pitch dark night but they

managed to reach the three mounds by first light without suffering any casualty they were fired upon but not heavily. Next day they moved further up and cleared the rest of the faecture. Later they came under attack from the Taliban but not a serious effort yet they managed to hold the post and this is the situation now, wing has 24 posts scattered in 64 square kilometres area. This is the story.

The real stuff starts now as how these posts are fed and are supplied with ration and water, this is where the donkeys and mules come in who daily provides them with these items under a protection party but I am surprised that as to why these logistics run are not stopped by the talibans. The normal administrative activities are also managed like leave and casualty evacuation and holding of certain exams which are important for the promotion of scouts to next rank. Fresh ration is supplied after ten days which in turn is moved up the posts. In Boya it was stopped by the talibans for six months till peace pact was not signed there. I personally think that Taliban threat is exaggerated in this area as this area is not militant in nature.

Later we had discussions on wide ranging topics on which we differed. After lunch I had a cup of tea with the headclerk while sitting on a roof top. In his opinion the area is not that militarised, the people are not that hostile, he had been to Gilgit and he narrated me how he was impressed by the honesty of them. In his observation the women of this area are not treated fairly, they all worked in the fields look after the domestic animals and breed children. Majority of the men of this particular village are abroad and these who are here does not care much about their women to support his logic he gave the evidence that he has never seen the men while coming back from Satta carrying any fruit for their families even in holy month of

Ramadan. He had travelled many times in civil transport with them and had seen them eating in bazaar but not caring to bring the same for the families, another point which he arised was that there is no butchers shop between sadda and this village thus people have low nutrition diet. I am impressed with his observation.

Sitting at top I observed the village down below and saw women working in their houses , the houses are built very close to each other there seems to be no tactical consideration in this rather saving of space seems to be primary value. I also moved towards the two mules who were eating their fodder with a animal transport soldier listening to radion next to them. I inquired about the nature of mules as I have developed respect for this animal. Mule cannot reproduce, they are brought from remount depot Sargodha and are trained at Nowshehra and then they are allocated to Frontier Corps. These two mules have been brought from Miranshah day before yesterday, A Mule hasa service tenure of 15 years after which he is no more of any use, it very ahrd working , it ahs only only draw back that by nature he is stubborn and if he decides to stop in middle tah no power on earth can move him forward that is why they are always move under supervision towards posts. They are used for artion and carriage of ammunition upward to the posst/ There are three donkeys here as well, donkey are simple in nature, once they are shown their route once they simply obey the orders without any reservation or ego thuis they are send upwards independently and used only for carriage of water. One of the donkey is just a child now, I wonder is he the same whom I saw at Miramshah on Mothers Day, he seems to be quite attached to his mother.

There is an old man here really old he lives in the mud hut next to me and I saw him in the morning, it is asid that he is over hundred

years and took part in the WW1, I am looking forward to meet him tomorrow lets see . In the evening I saw a woman shouting to someone at quite a high pitch, something very unusual in pathan culture. Qaiser and myself had dinner together , rice and lentil with cutlets, good and simple food. I observed that one of the scout and his wife admitted in hospital for delivery he got leave, another was granted leave for the sickness of his mother and another three were granted the routine leave. All this were brought up by the BHM who also got signatures and approval on other issues.

## **29<sup>th</sup> September 2012**

1725 hours, sitting in the bunker, since the roofs are made up of trees and planks thus it constantly creaks with occasional fall of dust, my head has plenty of it now, on the upper floor I think the barber and other staff is residing, on entrance there is a room for the mules and donkeys. The space here is vertical thus the available accommodation is being utilised fully. Weather is neither hot nor cold contrary to common perception the September and October are quite warm not only here but also in northern areas of Pakistan. Today being Saturday is a non working day although the distinction between working and non working is very thin line in operational area. Yesterday being Friday was a quite day, I sat with Lt Col Qaiser in his room almost whole day, we had breakfast and in between there was a constant flow of telephone calls , some one asking or reporting about movement of troops, movements, shortage of ration or surplus of ammunition on a particular post, leave of scouts, rotation around the posts. Qaiser has a complete grip on the situation and is energetic and takes lot of interest. He called all the appointment holders dealing with uniform, the wing has received almost 400 track suits from Miranshah, they have been made by



Colonel Wajahat with Lt Col rabnawaz looking after the project, it is amulti million rupees project, half of the amount is being paid by the headquartrrs and scouts are paying only ahlf {rs 600} it includes track suit, shirt and a cap but no shorts. We aslo saw the Pakistan and South Africa match, at the end of south Africa 's batting the electricity went off and I came to my bunker. Shortly I received telephone call from the signal opeartors requesting me to request the Qaiser to start the generator but I politely declined, any way soon Qaiser on thevrequest of subedar major Ashna Gul gave orders for the geneartors to operate. The mess havildar and few clerks came to my bunker to atch the agme and I welcome them. Pakistan were 76 for 7 wickets when almost all left less three and miraculously Pakistan won tahnks to hard hiting of Umar Gul. This cricket is the major unifying afctor in Pakisatn, in this remote area with war going on the win lifted the morale, it crossed the boundaries, we all were one and passed comments and criticised the players but in the end the victory elevated us. During the match there are lot of advertisement and it is sitting wth troops and conservative patans that one realise how a advertisement can either have positive or negative impact. Any nudity or even touching of bodies among men and women, cosmetics, relationships all palys decisive role. Later at night India was thrashed by the Australia which added icing to the cake.

Today in the morning but first let me enjoy the dream which I saw, I was with my family, I saw my son and daughter palying in ice, I saw my wife cooking food but when I opened my eyes none was there. I thought of how last year I was in America with Reena at Virginia, the cold and chill in the air, the small window through which I would look at the Port Republic Road.

I sat under the fly with such mixed feelings, later Qaiser came, oh I forgot to mention that it is quite an exercise to attend the call of nature here and then shaving but both have to be attended. The toilet seat is eastern in nature with partial close door, open air from top and risk of shells coming any time. Shave I am doing dry just using the razor and nothing and that too without any help of mirror. There are few sweepers here thus no filth is seen, in the initial days of North Waziristan Militia the founding fathers made sure that every post should have a sweeper and cook. Later Qaiser took me on a long drive towards Jogi which is on other axis. We have to drive back almost twenty minutes and then cross the Sultani bridge and then drive on a dirt, stony ascending track with narrow width through an odd village amidst men working and women carrying water in blue plastic carriers up. One escort Land cruiser with almost half a dozen armed scouts led in front, there is jammer in our vehicle which jams all frequency thus remote control IEDs can be avoided but not the pressure operated. I had opted to sit in the rear seat in order to save Qaiser the tension of driving but then he also sat with me in the rear and despite my best he refused to sit in front thus I had to sit in front and he drove.

The Taliban had two strong holds here one was in Cheelo Sar/Dappa area and other on the axis on which we are driving now. The Taliban do not resist in a conventional manner rather they simply live with the natives speaking and sharing same cultural and linguistic values and attack the security forces in a guerrilla style with small arms and exploding bombs, no suicide bombing has taken place here. In my opinion these are not as ferocious as in Tochi Valley. The army moved on Jogi Axis and cleared the area which means establishing the posts and attacking those villages from where the fire was initiated. In the end army was able to clear the area and handed

over the pots to No 1 Wing of Tochi Scouts and also other wing of Kurram Militia is also operating in the area. These pots are often attacked by the talibans by using fire and closing up trying to find any weakness in the defence but so far they have no success and despite being under constant attack these scouts have held the nerves. In terms of firepower the Taliban are no match to regular or scouts but it is their psychological impact which is dangerous and I think in this valley the scouts have the better of morale and nerves. Qaiser halted at the fire base which he had established at jogi rather short of it. He has his 81 mm Moratr, 14.5mm twin barrel gun and 37 mm single barrel gun on a high ground from where he can provide fire support to his pots at Cheelo Sar and at Sammo Killi. He had almost spent a week during peak operations on this post sleeping under a open tent. I was interested in taking pictures of these weapons to put it into the Tochi History book and Qaiser is more than helpful in this regard. First a dummy drill of mortar group and then few snaps of 14.5 and 37 mm. Qaiser offered me to fire both weapons which I initially resisted because it has been long that I fired these two weapons and had that internal fear that something will go wrong during firing but then I agreed. I fired a burst of seven shells from 37 mm, The fire is through a foot pedal and one has to press it really hard to fire the shot. The noise of fire is not deafening but certainly loud and bit of smoke comes out from the barrel. I am impressed with their drills and above all the way they handle the very concept of fire, it was a routine for them. Later I fired quite a number of rounds from 14.5 the same procedure, the fire is by pushing aside a plate with your feet and then pressing the pedal, the fire is devastating in nature, burst of rounds and the sound is again not deafening but loud.

I was a different person after firing and now have more respect for Qaiser not for the reason that he has allowed me to fire but the

way he is taking this firing in real sense, a scout or soldier only gets confidence when he actually fires the weapon and not through long talks. When you give them this liberty when you trust them they respond. In my three years of military service with ack ack I never fire so much of these weapons as I have fired here in one day. This liberty of action was not there in afghan war and neither at Siachen . Thus the morale and out put also vary with the number of rounds you fire. I am convince that in regular army an officer must fire more of these heavy weapons . We get very high grades in weapon course but seldom an officer fires these weapons , even 12.7 is arare. There are always long safety drills, I can bet that very few officers of this army can actually assemble a 14.7 gun. This war has done good in uplifting these standards but still a long way to go. Another weapon of repote is RPG – 7, I have not fired it but what I have gathered about it in last three months speaks volume about it. It first came to lime light in 1973 Arab – Israeal War when it was used by the Egyptians to hunt the Israeli tanks. In our scenario it is the most common weapon held by the Talibans, a fantastic piece of weaponry. I had discussion with Qaiser and many others regarding the weapons, these weapons especially the 37 and 14.5 were declared obsolete by the army and new modern and high tech systems were incorporated but these weapons have proved their worth now. Their beauty and effectiveness lies in the easy and rough handling that they can take, for instance 14.5 was dissembled by the scouts and taken up to the higher posts on a simple Toyota land cruiser and same hold true for 37mm gun. One has to understand that arms manufacturers creates a myth through demonstration and papers in which countries are made to realised that their existing weapon system is obsolete and thus they are lure in to buy modern more expensive weapon system . Take the example of Oerlikon Gun System which simply cannot operate in such environments it requires a western battle conditions. Similarly

the tank or armoured cars is another example, we have injected heavy and big tanks and writing off small scout cars in entirety, the result is that the big tanks have become a liability here, one tank was overturned in Sammo Killi, it was a miracle that the crew survived and while tank had to be extricated a big operation. The net result of all this is that there is a dire need to have a separate corps for frontier warfare which already exists in the shape of Frontier Corps, only it has to be supplemented with suitable weapons. What stops this FC to have its own armoured corps comprising of small tanks, have its own aviation corps, medical and signal. But the hard fact is that army will not let it have all of this. The regular army is too cumbersome too staff heavy to have any worth mentioning results. The success it has gained has come at a very heavy financial cost and in the face of real resistance as in North Waziristan it has failed to have any worth highlighting output.

I am supposed to leave this area tomorrow and head for Thall and then Bannu and from there to move towards Dera Ismail kahn and then to No 2 Wing at Gomal Zam but the wing commander there is on leave thus I will be staying at Bannu Serai. The cricket match between Sri Lanka and West Indies turned out to be one sided affair, England defeated New Zealand.

There is a repatriation going on in the area, almost 65 vehicles moved back into the area which has been cleared by the army and scouts. Qaiser was bit anxious regarding the late movement of these people because it creates administrative and security environments. Most of the vacant houses are under the occupation of scouts or military and during hours of darkness this relief in lines is quite sensitive issue. Since this is Saturday thus the number of vehicular movement among the civilians is quite high and they all have one

excuse that they are taking their families for delivery cases. This is one aspect which works. In another case one person approached the Sammo killi check point requesting that tomorrow is his marriage and he wants to take his bride in a car beyond the check point , it was not granted. Tonight is full moon, it is a beauty, one can see the whole valley the silhouettes of mountains and tracks is visible. I saw and stared at the full moon while standing at the edge of a mound , by mere shifting of my position I can stare it through the high trees which are called ghghuna here. A sentry was also standing and we chatted on many issues, the beauty of the moon, its effects on the humans, how terrorist can also make use of it, his experience in Dir area and the strength of the tree. He told me that this Ghghuna is used for making Hull and in construction of houses. Somehow the other contrary to regular army troops one feels shy in talking about female to these scouts, it is something in the culture.

### **30<sup>th</sup> September 2012 Sunday**

1230 hours. The constant movement up on the floor is causing regular dispersion of mud on my head. A sunny day, we had a photographic session today , almost all the scouts present wore uniform and we had a good photo session, my thanks to Qaiser. Unfortunately all the pictures were wiped out from the camera but luckily I was using two cameras thus I avoided Murphy Law in totality. Qaiser gave me an opportunity to speak to the troops regarding the project which I did and had a clap from them. A Binjo car was seen approaching from Takht Sar are and Qaiser immediately gave the orders to have bursts of fire on both sides of car but explicitly ordering not to hit the car. It is these immediate, prompt and stern orders which not only ensure the safety of own troops but arise their morale and deter any adventurous undertaking

from the terrorist , I am impressed by this display. The movement upward on the floor is a constant torture and there is nothing else to do other than to wait for the cricket match between Pakistan and India which starts at 1500 hours.

**1<sup>st</sup> October 2012, Monday, 2100 hours, Bannu**

Lying in the Tochi Scouts Serai, reading the journal I wrote while travelling and staying in America and with that comes the Reena in mind, she has been very caring and loving since I have re-met again three years ago after a lapse of twenty years. It looks a fairy tale and it is indeed a fairy tale. I have the mobile lying next to me but I have switched it off , I have no call either with my father or mother or for that matter with any body, what is the problem with me, I run away from all the people who loves me, my heart is dead; it hurts , I have no idea what am I doing with my life other than spending and living on day to day basis. Just had a walk in the cantonment but it a dead cantonment, I wanted to see the cricket match but the waiter in station mess told me that TV had been taken to the Kohat for replacement, I don't believe him but then I simply walked away back to the Serai. Old haunted houses of british era, old trees and very few men walking. There is one house which is dubbed as Pride of HAT, 41 AK. I am not sure whether is regimental office or a residence. I walked and walked through the dusty road. I wondered that one time it was lively and full of life, incidentally I recently finished Mallam Leigh's account of Bannu he was a Deputy Commissioner here in 1930's. My mind was also occupied on the snakes because I think they are in plenty here and it was during this mental appreciation that I almost stepped on a frog , he jumped and jumped on my feet, I was wearing chappalls, luckily I did not shrieked.

Last night Pakistan lost the match in a pathetic manner, myself and Qaiser underwent lot of tension and stress, the food which included fish as well tasted badly in such circumstances, later we had a bit of talk on world history and then I walked back to my hut and slept restlessly. Qaiser told me that the bride which had requested for the car had walked on foot accompanied by fifteen men to her new house. He further highlighted that he had seen one of the houses from inside and these people have inbuilt bath system where the bedroom has a shower place with in it; quite a news , we both for some time contemplated on how it works. The telephone constantly was busy, he has a good telephone or communication system with all of his 24 posts, which are connected with Icom system working on VHF, he also has a HF set apart from a Sanao Chinese system which is linked with regular civil telephone system. There is no concept of post man, on my query as to what is the pattern of delivering mail to the posts , he replied that none writes the letters any more they use this communication system. For the delivery and receipt of official mail which either comes down from the brigade headquarters at Thall or from Tochi Scouts at Miranshah, he has deputed a despatch rider who collects it daily from Thall along with an Urdu newspaper ‘Mashriq’. Leave is the key issue with scouts alongwith pay. The pay is collected from National Bank Sadda and then distributed to the company pay NCO’s who in turn physically hand over to all the scouts at posts and get their signatures as well. The ration is another sour point especially during operation when the food was collectively prepared and then further distributed to posts employing mules. The scouts are not used to eating Meal Ready to Eat {MRE} thus these were used only once and emphasis is on providing fresh ration to every post, now all posts cook their own food. Qaiser is now working on how to cope with the forthcoming Eid leave which is less than month away. Every one wants to spend



the leave with their family but this is not possible thus he is working on the issue. Eid leave certainly poses a big dilemma and I am happy that I am not in Qaiser's foot.

In the morning after breakfast which for a change comprised of cutlets as well, two cups of tea, Qaiser presented me with a souvenir a shield and we both parted, I have high regards for Qaiser's professional abilities he is energetic and fair with a forward looking vision, a very religious person yet having a sense of humour .

The two car{Hilux} convoy drove out from Tabbi Killi at 1000 hours or slightly late, weather was fine, slightly hot, I was wearing a white T shirt and khaki trouser, all other were in full combat dress which includes over 100 rounds of ammunition, Small Machine Gun, light machine gun mounted on a tripod and fixed at the rear of our vehicle, wireless sets, all in all we were over a dozen. We soon crossed the Sultani Bridge and in this half an hour of drive we came across few civilian vehicles also in which invariably there was a female clad in full veil sitting in rear was present, few men working on construction along the road or track. After crossing the bridge we soon came across a horde of children which were going back home, I instantly looked at my watch it was half past eleven, other day while driving with Qaiser it was the same time when the children had the break, probably the school timings are only up till 1130. Boys of all age ranging from innocent looking toddlers to teenagers all wearing black militia kameez shalwar and black peak cap with a red badge, I am not sure whether this is provided by the state or they have to buy it at their own. The school bags also vary majority were carrying their books in shopping bag or in hands but few had the proper bag as well. The strength must be over two hundred, I instructed the driver to be extra careful because now and

then the boys would cross the road . In my opinion these boys have to cover over 2-3 miles daily on foot one way for schooling. They all stared at our convoy, the very young ones invariably salutes and other merely stares with smile or wave hands. For next half an hour till we reached Sadda the flow of school children remained constant. This is the generation on which we needs investment, the state has provided the schools and is in the process of constructing even more but still there are few administrative issues that needs to be resolve like the transportation and provision of free meals to the boys apart from books. These boys in majority of the cases had very little to eat in the breakfast and have no money to buy anything from the shop which in any case are very rare. Their parents needsapplause for sending them to school for their better future. In my opinion the retired personnals of education directorate from Frontier Corps are very ideal to be employed as school teachers and certainly the FC can play an important role in this long strategic uplifting of the area. I did not observed any NGO working in the area on this issue. The area is very similar to Gilgit and Skardu but where as in these areas the Agha Khan Foundation is working quite diligently on many projects no such venture or personality is visible here. There were quite a number of small girls also coming back from school near Sadda, their uniform consist of blue kameez and white shalwar with white scarf, they move in groups among themselves and no boy was allowed to walk with them. There is a boys hostel at Sadda but what little I could peep through the open gate it looked pathetic in condition. All along the Levies and Khassadars have their posts and one striking feature about their small posts are the flowers that they have planted which gives very tidy and artistic looks.

Sadda as usual was bustling with life, same aroma of kebabs. From Sadda till Thall which we reached at 1300 hours, my eyes and

mind were looking at the students, the colour of uniform changed into khaki and I noticed few young students wearing even trousers and shirt too probably coming from private school which are also here, housed in simple building with signs of teaching English. There are few English teaching centres also although the very spelling of what they intend teaching are incorrect. Transportation of children is the greyest area in almost every part of my country. Time and again I wish for the old government transport service which was in use in last decade and half to be operative again, it can serves the purpose by providing free transport service to students only, no political party has even thought about it, they all are more concerned about greater philosophical issues. At Sadda the scouts arranged a private taxi for me to take me to Bannu, there are two more scouts going with me on leave one uptill Kohat and other right till Bannu. After saying good bye and shaking hands with all I bid them and our journey started in a Toyota taxi driven by a mid sixties driver.

For almost quarter of century in my mind and memory the beauty of that journey in 1986 which I undertook towards Parachinar was symbolised by the old trees on both sides of the road with shade covering almost every corner of the road, I searched for that picture and soon realised that all those trees have been cut down to expand the road and instead popular has been planted which gives partial shade. I remained quite as other three were talking in Pashto which I can understand partially, there was Pashto music as well which are normally a copy of Indian songs and highly irritating in nature. The driver as usual was fast and casual thus I was under stress to keep an eye on events. We made a halt at a CNG pump and one of the scouts went to fetch a Dew Mountain Cold Drink, I had enough of this yellowish stingy drink and as such politely declined the offer. Now I had conversation with driver and asked him about those trees

and he nodded in agreement that there were trees and that have been cut down. However there are still few patches of that beauty still surviving which I noted. About the train and track I felt sad as it was a good mode of transport. Road presently is under repair and construction { it was same in 1986 too }, driver asked me about the present situation which I simply stated is good and it is just a passage of time. Driver now narrated his tenure in Iraq couple of years back, how he went there in search of work, how he was badly treated by the Salman an Arab who was more concerned about his vehicles than their safety {drivers} and so on , this driver had good words about the Americans because in the end it was they who actually rescued him from the clutches of that Salman. At this point he tried to overtake a van which was already overtaking another van and resultantly we barely survived a crash, it was a close shave, now the two scouts in the taxi were adamant to have a fight with the van driver but I simply told them to forget the incident and move on. I was now even more cautious about the safety of myself in such a rash driving environments. We reached Bannu at 1600 hours and all along the driver kept on cribbing about the way other drivers were violating the rules and constantly breaking them himself, at times overtaking on a climb, in a curve, on a bridge. It was a hot day; we refuelled twice enroute and safely reached the Serai at 1600 hours where I had a sigh of relief.

## **2<sup>nd</sup> October 2012**

Woke up early in the morning the digging is going outside for the boring of water well, read my journal of America and thought of Reena she had done maximum for me there and she is right in labelling me as ‘beqadra’. There are chances of a helicopter movement thus I better get ready, my small bag has got a broken

arm, my head is still suffering from heat. I had a long conversation with Lt Col Jawwad, he is the only friend that I have and it is quite refreshing to have conversation with him, he is trying to adjust in his new task as commanding officer and as such his under command are having tough times.

1630 hours, Miranshah. Wonders of modern world that I am sitting in my room No 4 in Tochi Mess having a cup of tea. Commandant Colonel Wajahat gave me a call and we had a chat, he had brought the pigeons from Lahore and intend experimenting with sending the messages as in old days, he had four such pigeons and he informed me that experiment has failed miserably, he had taken all the four to a nearby post and set them free hoping that they will fly back to his residence but three of them after a short flight sat on a nearby house and fourth one is untraceable. Wajahat also offered me that in case if I want he can arrange transport to bring me back to Miranshah, I declined the offer as it is highly risky and only last Wednesday an IED had been blasted on a vehicle killing four army soldiers, in retaliation drone attack was conducted on Friday in which two miscreants were killed. There was news that a helicopter might fly to Miranshah from Peshawar and I was informed by the attendant of this. He later confirmed it at 1355 hours and aptly I was ready and reached the helipad which is next to the old Bannu Fort. A Puma came but there were quite a number of soldiers in waiting thus I remained idle having no hope of getting a seat but one of soldiers signalled me to come forward and then it was the pilot's discretion to allow. Major Babar was the captain rather co-pilot and he instantly recognised me although I failed to do so and I was in the Puma, he was very courteous indeed.

Flight was uneventful but I scanned the area trying to make out

of geography. The Tochi River joins and flows rather south west of Bannu with Kurram flowing on the north. The Tochi is forced to adopt this path because of low mountain ridges that forms its southern boundary. The area is green and after few minutes of flying the air field of Bannu becomes visible and then the town of Mirali. We were flying over the eastern end of the Tochi valley , it is rather plain but what a contrast to the Kurram valley which is fertile and green , here only the adjoining areas of the Tochi are fertile rest is barren, valley itself is narrow, the river is also not very wide and twisting becoming narrower and narrower as one looks at the western end {Afghanistan}. Soon we were over the Miranshah and landed safely, my last concern was the rather fast approach of the Puma for landing but then it was put under control, the heli landed very close to the mud hangar which is not a very good sign , many accidents have taken place mainly due to this last second casual attitude but then pilot in command is the best judge.

Australia and Pakistan match is going on , Pakistan has scored 149 and victory seems a distant reality. My regret is that I have not been able to call my parents or Reena but I did had conversation with Jawad and Tiger. Sitting here is like sitting in home but now I must complete the book.

### **9<sup>th</sup> October 2012- Miranshah Library**

I am sitting in the Officers Mess Library at Miranshah surrounded by a galaxy of writers, ideas, philosophies, travelogue and above all history. I will not be off the mark if I say that I am having a company of killers because in these over four hundred books at least there are description of over thirty million human killings, how to do it, why

to do it, how it was executed, why it was executed, how to do it in future, why not to leave a single individual alive. There are accounts of heroics, I like 'Sky My Kingdom' by the German female pilot the one who flew the Hitler; Hanna Reitsch translated by Lawrence Wilson, a 1955 edition. She talks of her childhood how her father used to love music. Another book which I scanned last night was about Dr Goebbels, he suffered from a disease in the childhood, was physically weak, a propagandist of highest order 'one who rules the streets rule the country'. Then there are speeches of Winston Churchill in two volumes. In recent times I have developed a dislike for him yet his command of English language is extraordinary. I just glanced through them and surprisingly I found that these are not mere speeches rather a history of war itself. Forward from Victory are the speeches of Field Marshal Montgomery the most over rated general of all time, I have read his one book which he wrote after his retirement and is about travelling in China and other parts of world his observations' were valid, however at present his speech on morale is fantastic because I have gone through it when I came here in May, how fear paralyse you, how shabby appearance is detrimental to good morale.

Pakistan lost the semi-final to Sri Lanka, India was out early thus the pain was gone, I made a call to Lieutenant Colonel Qaiser as per promise. In the final Sri Lanka lost to West Indies but the day Pakistan lost the match it was very tense and as soon the results became obvious I started working on the book and till to date have finished till 2005. Nothing extraordinary about the chain of events in that period. There was friendship with Americans, combined raids were conducted in the valley to apprehend the Talibans but without any success. The valley agitated not because of this but due to load shedding and electric bills in 2002-2003. There was a tribal war

between the Madda Khel and Khaddar Khel Wazirs which paved the way for the scouts to occupy the inaccessible areas at Dwa Toi, Kazha Valley and Bangidar area at the beginning of 2002. In 2002 and 2003 there was an increase in activity across the border and very close to it by the Americans but somehow the other they were confined to the territory of Afghanistan , there were instances of border violation but these should not be taken seriously because in certain cases they flew for seconds inside the own area and in other cases they flew less than a kilometre in terms of distance. It was only at Alwara Mandi that a serious violation took place in which they landed inside the own territory for minutes and searched a house, in majority of the cases the fire work also remained confined to Afghanistan at times however one odd mortar shell did land in our area. Now if one compares the situation between the Turkey and Syria where a single mortar shell landing inside Turkey has provoked the parliament to an extent that war has been authorised on Syria then one has to give credit to Pakistan, America and Afghanistan for maintain a peace among themselves. Pakistani troops did not like the Northern Alliance troops who are not Pashtuns and majority of trouble erupted from this lack of confidence. In my opinion Pakistan managed to walked a tight rope in a very balance way and Americans also played a key role in it. Both these countries conducted joint search operations as well in which American troops wore the Scouts uniform also, they were housed in a barrack not more than hundred meters away from Jalal Ud Din Haqqani's home where his family was living, strange world. When I look back from here the I can recall the days when these both countries were very close buddies, own Army Aviation pilots went to America for training , Americans were teaching them at Dhamial where a special school was also opened up for this. Every day there were American military flights taking off from Chaklala, I have pictures of post 2005 earthquake



when Americans came to our rescue at the end a grand dinner was given in their honour at Qasim Base, smiling pictures of officers and troops. In 2008 there was a ceremony held at Qasim Base in which American ambassador was also present and I struck a conversation with the public relations officer of American Embassy because I was keen to have photographs of the ceremony for the Aviation History book and we both agreed to meet each other at Serena next evening. She was quite bulky but pretty, I gave her the book Great Game as gift and she handed me over the pictures; those were the times. Officers were against them then also but they were the one whom we call fundamentalist, who were taking the side of Talibans rather than the state in the conflict and exactly this is what is being highlighted in the books I have referred above. If the state has waged a war than one must fight till the end irrespective of its morality.

I have met another very fine officer from Army Aviation Major Jawad of 25 Aviation Squadron, he likes fountain pens, leather shoes, books, collects junks and have a positive attitude towards life thus we both are friends, above all he is a good listener and nothing pleases a retired officer more than this. Colonel Ghumman also from aviation is here but he talks more, I like him because it was in 1992 that he walked into my room at Gujranwala with Captain Jeidi my platoon mate and since then has been very courteous and now is a professional senior officer. He has been flying throughout the last ten years in the tribal area with occasional breaks, he has plenty of stories, he is the only one who is trigger happy in Cobra which is a good sign, no pain of conscious on killing the innocent, no regret on firing rockets on assembly of people, this is what war is all about. Above all he has juicy and spicy tales of his adventures in the Peace Keeping force at Sudan and Italy.

Had a splendid brunch at Colonel Wajahat the Commandant at his residence on this Sunday, a royal menu, dishes for which I was yearning, nihari, brain masala, batair, paneer palak/saag, but the dish which was sensational was 'date halwa'. I am now part of Tochi Scouts, I go much before the guest arrival time and leaves when all other have left, it is now a friendship with Wajahat, I like him, he has a sense of humour, uses foul language the way an army officer should use and spends the money the way a commandant should do, above all he does not pend anything for later. I wish him success in career but I doubt it because he is very open mouth about the policies; let's see what happens. Another officer who has caught my eyes is Captain Bilal a very good officer indeed.

### **11<sup>th</sup> October 2012**

It is 2100 hours and awiting for the dinner, I am taking dinner in the mess, there is no lunch and at times there is no breakfast rather a cup of tae, not that there is any shortage of food here but the timings are such that there seems to be no time for such frivolity. Today I had a track suit from Tochi scouts and it seems that only thing missing is the uniform now otherwise I am a tochte . Routine is haphazard , late awakenings despite my best effort to be early, every night I go to bed with solemn thought and pledge to be up early but every ady there is a regret. Than time in the clerks office, meeting and raeding old files then a cup of tae with young officers at adjutant Lieutenant Amin of 38 Cavalry's office then some work in the library, off to tennis where I am still practising with marker, neither I have been invited to play at the clay court and nor I have any desire but I spend most of time sitting outside having cup of tea and little weight lifting. Tennis is addiction to watch here, standard of agme not very high but the reamrks and the spirit in which it

is played is the act. Commandant Colonel Wajahat and Major Zameer are always on one side with colonel Riaz the colonel staff and either Lieutenant Colonel Omar or Amir on other end, Brigadier Shahid is on leave and expected to be back after two days. The discussion after tennis is interesting and a window into the minds of present day senior level commanders and staff officers. The issue now a days is the Malala Yousafzai, two days ago while having a cup of tea at the tennis the grade one intelligence officer inquired me that do I know Malala, I said no and then he narrated the firing on her, later I watched television and came to know about her. Three days back the discussion was about Imran Khan's peace march to Waziristan and these two are interlinked to each other in a cob web manner and before these two incidents it was cricket world cup but it is history now.

Imran Khan's peace march is clouded in mystery as none of the participants and all those who have been following his politics have ever been in North Waziristan or have any analytical approach towards the whole issue, his one of the party president Makhdoom Shah Mahmood Qureshi an Oxford graduate has been the foreign minister of Pakistan thus he must be well conversant with the international politics. There are two types of politics, one which revolves around real world and other around ideals and both cannot intercept each other. The army officers I sense have a soft corner for Imran for reasons that they all are fed up of other two parties for no reason at all; thus they were quite enthusiastic about his march. Indirectly it amounts to taking a side of Taliban and this is very strange because they are fighting against these very Taliban and yet supporting the very person who is having a soft corner for Taliban. Now after Malala incident the dynamics have changed because this incident has sparked a worldwide condemnation and

Imran Khan is not among those who have out rightly condemned it he has disguised his words but the general mood is now to go after the Talibans and an operation in North Waziristan may be on card because now the public sympathy is with the state. This was the discussion that took place and Drones are all time favourites for condemnation, but why? Colonel Ghumman had the logic of international law and morality although only yesterday he confessed of firing over the civilian people because to him it is difficult to differentiate between friend and foe, Colonel Riaz is in favour of them but he cannot express it explicitly. The other officers simply listen and pass one odd comment. In last three days there has been two drone attacks, my own observation is that these drone attacks takes place within forty eight hours of any strike done by Taliban and are a source of morale boosting for every person.

Last night there was an extravagant dine out of 103 Brigade Commander along with 20 and 36 Baloch Regiments. I was invited and before that I had a good conversation with Major General Ali Abbas nothing official just talking about the time when we used to buy the garlands of flowers for our wives from the road side vendors. Dinner had everything and in abundance which in my own opinion is wastage of food. Fish, mutton, chicken, kebabs, rice, qeema, vegetable and on top of it two kinds of sweet dishes along with a variety of salads and chutnees. I was made to sit on head table where as the commandant Tochi had to sit on a round table which I think is not on, and I have a strong feeling that he made this sitting reshuffle , he is too courteous in this aspect. I did not utter a word other than passing remarks about the good quality of food. Brigadier Raza was sitting next to me and he in military language locked horns with general over strategy, had I been in service I would have kicked him under the table but not now. The topics generally range on every

subject including politics but not women. Over all it was ok, later Ali spoke well to raise the morale of the young officers, he can speak very well although he still try to be humble in this aspect.

On historical aspect I have come across one more fantastic person Clerk Sabz Ali, he caught me yesterday in the clerk's office. The worst scenario is when you are confronted by a person who is educated but under paid, his complains are socialistic in nature, his views idealistic and his vision is impracticable in which all the wealth of the world is equally distributed among all people . The standard perception of own country going down the drain the corruption and safarish and on top of it the complaints against the character of president Zardari were there. I tackled it one by one giving him the example from the life going around him and me, I highlighted that the average pay of a scout sepoy now a days is more than what a lecturer is getting in the civil despite the fact that the scout sepoy is only under graduate and can hardly at times write his own name. I also highlighted the fact that even here in Tochi the people tend to look after their own tribes more than others, can we call it corruption or riwaj, then the fact that in our culture we are bound to accommodate our relatives or clan despite our difficulties but then this is what culture is all about. I am happy that he genuinely got convinced and we became good friends, his quality is that he has been marinating a diary in which every terrorist incident that has taken place in last ten years is recorded, he has data in his mobile whenever any drone has struck since 2007. I have found him a genuine lover of history, he has promised to get the diary from his home by this week which will ease my work.

Today I interviewed Subedar Sharbat regarding his account of Arsal Khan the gangster. Arsal Khan ' Gabbar Singh of Tajauri'

Arsal Khan was a notorious gangster who might have lived the life of his choosing which was mainly kidnapping had he not committed the cardinal sin of kidnapping two girls Fouzia and Sobia daughters of Sharifullah on 12<sup>th</sup> march 2004 they were going to attend a marriage with their father. Kidnapping of females in the North Waziristan is not regarded as a manly act and that brought the wrath of state against him. Readers might have remembered that almost a decade ago the Nowsher Fort was built in the area of Karkanwam to check the notorious and nefarious acts of anti - society elements and this time again the Tochi Scouts were in hunt for Arsal Khan. His abode was across and over the mountain that stood in front of Nowsher Fort. Commandant Tochi Scouts Colonel Ashiq Hussain himself led the expedition along with a wing of Swat scouts and one company of Khyber Rifles. Village Karkanwam comprising over 200 houses is a notorious area located at the junction of four agencies i.e FR Bannu on the East, FR Lakki on South East, South Waziristan Agency on South West and North Waziristan Agency on North West. Due to its geographical layout, it has always been a safe heaven for proclaimed offenders who harbour the dacoits, car lifters, kidnappers and other notorious people from down districts. No agency has ever been able to exercise control on this area. This operation against Arsal Khan was planned and conducted from 31 March 2003.

Arsal Khan belonged to the Shah Jani Khel tribe a sub section of Bhattani, his life is a strange paradox of good and evil, he was the uncrowned king of his area . Political agents had to pay him for every development in the area for instance he was paid 1.5 Million Rupees for the construction of road from Tajauri – Gabar Shadi Khel, he was also paid 1.2 million for the construction of civil dispensary at Gazbaba and another .6 million for the construction of women

teachers hostel at Chigalair. Hi son Wasi Khan was employed at a monthly pay of Rupees 3100/ as chowkidar at the dispensary; but all this changed after the kidnapping of the girls.

After preliminary reconnaissance the very first arrest was made on 14<sup>th</sup> April 2004 at Tajbi Khel then on 16<sup>th</sup> April the arrests were made at Azad Khel, Ayub Khel, Aram Tala and Paa Khel. This search and arrests continued till 11<sup>th</sup> May 2004 when last arrest was made in Shadi Khel. A total of 144 persons were arrested and 40 houses were demolished. One scout of Swat Scouts was killed and three other were wounded in this operation. Two 12.7mm guns, one light machine gun, three sub machine guns, thirteen rockets of RPG-7, 77 bombs of three inch mortar were recovered from Aarsal Khan's arsenal not to mention over five thousand rounds of varying calibres.

Subedar Sharbat Khattak was then a naik he narrates '*I was part of the commandant's escort then and we carried the reconnaissance, it required almost three hours of hard journey from Nowshehr Fort to Chigalair where it was reported that Aarsal Kahn is hiding. Major Bajwa, Lieutenant Colonel Zafar ullah Khan, Major Hanif our military transport officer were also with us, Subedar Yar Muhammad of Tochi Field Battery who later embraced sahadat in in a road blast was commanding the guns. We reached the Chigalair by afternoon, it was reported that Aarsal Khan is residing in the government dispensary. The dispensary was empty but when we were about to return we were fired from the nearby houses and from adjoining high grounds, we brought artillery fire and before darkness we retreated to our camp. Next day we went again and arrested few people and then on tips of local we raided few other places like Azad Khel, Ayub Khel, Aram Khel and Paa Khel on 16th April, we were able to arrest the family of Aarsal Khan including his daughters Chamroza,*

*Eman Bibi and wife Khair Bibi apart from his sons Wasil Khan and Kameshair. I remember that Aarsal Khan's mother was also part of this arrest apart from his two bhabis in which one was old and other relatively young which tried to outrun the scouts but was captured. Aarsal's mother pleaded that this is disgrace to the family's pride on which our answer was that the girls whom Aarsal had abducted also are some body's honour, meanwhile we got the news that one of the girl Fouzia has been killed and her burnt body has been left in open. On 19th April we got hold of Angoor Khan at Tajbi Khel, it was reported that this Angoor Khan is supplying food and water to the Aarsal Khan but Angoor flatly refuted this and took swear on the holy Koran and also said that if he lies then his Hajj may go waste, on this he was left. Later that night one of the abductee managed to escape from Aarsal Khan and he narrated that not only he but the other girl is also alive and they all were kept in a cave, "I saw your feet while you were searching and could hear your words also but Aarsal Khan was pointing a gun to our head and threatened that if any one made any noise he will blast his brains off". This person also confirmed that on same very day Angoor Khan had come and delivered the food. On this we again arrested Angoor Khan, his wife and six years old son, they all were kept in separate rooms, we started interrogation but none of them was willing to open his mouth, thus we played a tactics and threatened the wife that if she wants to see his son and husband alive then she must speak out and also fired a shot in air; the women became hysterical and pleaded that the life of her son be spared and Angoor Khan may be killed, she admitted that Angoor Khan is party to all the crimes of Aarsal Khan. In another raid we captured two brothers' one named Sikander and other .... We used same tactics on them, Sikander was very tough, he was given the beating of his life for the reason that one scout Lance Naik Zahid of Swat Scouts had succumbed to a rifle shot and other Nowshahr*



*was taken prisoner along with the weapons by Aarsal khan, Sikander remained defiant however his younger brother admitted that he has been acting as the driver of the Aarsal Khan and on his tips further arrests were made'.*

Aarsal Khan despite all the efforts of scouts remained fugitive, a combined Jirga of Marwat and Bhattani tribes was assembled on 7<sup>th</sup> May 2004 which imposed a fine of 1.5 Million Rupees on any one found guilty of providing harbour to Aarsal Khan or his friends. Aarsal Khan finally met his fate in 2010 when he was poisoned by his friend who had invited him on a dinner. The other brother of Sikander was later enrolled in Tochi Scouts and is now a proficient and disciplined driver.

### **11<sup>th</sup> October 2012**

It is 2100 hours and awaiting for the dinner, I am taking dinner in the mess, there is no lunch and at times there is no breakfast rather a cup of tae, not that there is any shortage of food here but the timings are such that there seems to be no time for such frivolity. Today I had a track suit from Tochi scouts and it seems that only thing missing is the uniform now otherwise I am a tochte . Routine is haphazard , late awakenings despite my best effort to be early, every night I go to bed with solemn thought and pledge to be up early but every day there is a regret. Then time in the clerks office, meeting and reading old files then a cup of tae with young officers at adjutant Lieutenant Amin of 38 Cavalry's office then some work in the library, off to tennis where I am still practising with marker, neither I have been invited to play at the clay court and nor I have any desire but I spend most of time sitting outside having cup of tea and little weight lifting. Tennis is addiction to watch here, standard

of agme not very high but the reamrks and the spirit in which it is palyed is the actch. Commandant Colonel Wajahat and Major Zameer are always on one side with colonel Riaz the colonel staff and either Lieutenant Colonel Omar or Amir on other end, Brigadier Shahid is on leave and expected to be back after two days. The discussion after tennis is interesting and a window into the minds of present day senior level commanders and staff officers. The issue now adays is the Malala Yousafzai, two days ago while havinga cup of tae at the tennis the grade one intelligence officer inquired me that do I know Malala, I said no and then he narrated the firing on her, later I watched television and came to know about her. Three days back the discussion was about Imran Khan's peace march to Waziristan and these two are interlinked to each other in a cob web manner and before these two incidents it was cricket world cup but it is history now.

Imran Khan's peace march is clouded in mystery as none of the participants and all those who have been following his politics have ever been in North Waziristan or have any analytical approach towards the whole issue, his one of the party president Makhdoom Shah Mahmood Qureshi an Oxford graduate has been the foreign minister of Pakistan thus he must be well conversant with the international politics. There are two types of politics, one which revolves around real world and other around ideals and both cannot intercept each other. The army officers I sense have a soft corner for Imran for reasons that they all are fed up of other two parties for no reason at all; thus they were quite enthusiastic about his march. Indirectly it amounts to taking a side of Taliban and this is very strange because they are fighting against these very Talibans and yet supporting the very person who is having a soft corner for Talibans. Now after Malala incident the dynamics have changed

because this incident has sparked a worldwide condemnation and Imran Khan Is not among those who have out rightly condemned it he has disguised his words but the general mood is now to go after the Talibans and an operation in North Waziristan may be on card because now the public sympathy is with the state. This was the discussion that took place and Drones are all time favourites for condemnation, but why? Colonel Ghumman had the logic of international law and morality although only yesterday he confessed of firing over the civilian people because to him it is difficult to differentiate between friend and foe, Colonel Riaz is in favour of them but he cannot express it explicitly. The other officers simply listen and pass one odd comment. In last three days there has been two drone attacks, my own observation is that these drone attacks takes place within forty eight hours of any strike done by Taliban and are a source of morale boosting for every person.

Last night there was an extravagant dine out of 103 Brigade Commander along with 20 and 36 Baloch Regiments. I was invited and before that I had a good conversation with Major General Ali Abbas nothing official just talking about the time when we used to buy the garlands of flowers for our wives from the road side vendors. Dinner had everything and in abundance which in my own opinion is wastage of food. Fish, mutton, chicken, kebabs, rice, qeema, vegetable and on top of it two kinds of sweet dishes along with a variety of salads and chutnees. I was made to sit on head table where as the commandant Tochi had to sit on a round table which I think is not on, and I have a strong feeling that he made this sitting reshuffle , he is too courteous in this aspect. I did not utter a word other than passing remarks about the good quality of food. Brigadier Raza was sitting next to me and he in military language locked horns with general over strategy, had I been in service I would have kicked him

under the table but not now. The topics generally range on every subject including politics but not women. Over all it was ok, later Ali spoke well to raise the morale of the young officers, he can speak very well although he still try to be humble in this aspect.

On historical aspect I have come across one more fantastic person Clerk Sabz Ali, he caught me yesterday in the clerk's office. The worst scenario is when you are confronted by a person who is educated but under paid, his complains are socialistic in nature, his views idealistic and his vision is impracticable in which all the wealth of the world is equally distributed among all people . The standard perception of own country going down the drain the corruption and safarish and on top of it the complaints against the character of president Zardari were there. I tackled it one by one giving him the example from the life going around him and me, I highlighted that the average pay of a scout sepoy now a days is more than what a lecturer is getting in the civil despite the fact that the scout sepoy is only under graduate and can hardly at times write his own name. I also highlighted the fact that even here in Tochi the people tend to look after their own tribes more than others, can we call it corruption or riwaj, then the fact that in our culture we are bound to accommodate our relatives or clan despite our difficulties but then this is what culture is all about. I am happy that he genuinely got convinced and we became good friends, his quality is that he has been marinating a diary in which every terrorist incident that has taken place in last ten years is recorded, he has data in his mobile whenever any drone has struck since 2007. I have found him a genuine lover of history, he has promised to get the diary from his home by this week which will ease my work.

**19<sup>th</sup> October 2012**

It is noon, outside it is drizzling, the day had started with a fire, initially I heard two rounds of fire which I thought that some officer had purchased a weapon and is testing it then there was along burst, few rounds fired on single shot and then another long burst of machine gun, it continued for some time. Now with passage of time the patience has increased and one does not tend to react as panicky as in early days . I all of a sudden then got up, I thought that the Talibans have attacked the prison which is next to the mess building and about which Colonel Wajahat has been mentioning for last few days. Outside the sweeper was sweeping I inquired him and he just gave a blank look, the waiter was walking towards me with a tray and tea, then I saw captains Saad, Bilal and Waqas in full military gear walking towards the vehicle , firing was still going on. I had a meeting with Brigadier Aqeel commander of 103 Brigade, the one who took part in the 6<sup>th</sup> May 2012 incident, he and his brigade is leaving for Lahore on this Sunday and I wanted to have his opinion about that incident. In my opinion one cannot do justice to the history without getting view point of all concern. I had to take the bath but now I was concern that in case I am taking shower and the miscreants walk in, it will be embarrassing. *{The breakfast is here, consisting ofa paartha and two kebabs and cup of tae, waiter has asked me, whether I should pour the tea, so lets have the breakfast first}*.

Good breakfast, very efficient mess, otherday I pointed to the mess havildar that kitchen needs cleaning and today it was clean, especially the door had inches of dirt and grease, it is dilemma all over the army. Coming back to Brigadier Aqeel he is from 28 Baluch {Jeidi's unit} very polite and courteous, he came to my room but I

took him to the library, it speaks of his courtesy. I wanted to ask him about the 6<sup>th</sup> May incident but always was concerned that he may mind it, but today I listened from horse's mouth.

In his words, there are certain walls of medium height which are all over the area and especially in the south of AminPiquet which cause irritant in terms of miscreants fire so he decided to demolish one of the wall and simultaneously near Isha almost ten miles east of the wall to plant mines to hinder the rocket firers on the fort. Thus on 6<sup>th</sup> May which was Sunday he alongwith the commanding officer of 36 Baluch went first to the demolishing site where the dozer was brought on a mover under protection, Sunday wasa curfew in the area. Amin Piquet is by the way part ofNo.5 Wing at Boya at wing commander lieutenant colonel Muhammad Ali was also supposed to be there and he did arrived there later. The process of wall demolishing went as per the plan, they had also plan to search a house which was close by. By noon they went back to the old site where mines were being planted , they met the Engineer's party who had already completed the task thus they move back and stopped en-route at the stadium gate for a break that is when they learnt that Captain Suleman of 36 Baluch is hit during the search, thus they rushed to the spot; which wasan orchard near the compound.

The compound was encircled by the company of 36 Baluch, company commander and 2IC of the regiment were there, the cordon party was approaching from the southern side and wasmaking no progress and that was not visible to the brigade commander and commanding officer from their spot. The party fired few rockets also but it made little impact on the mud brick walls of the compound. Brigadier Aqeel also moved two tanks from theAmin Piquet which had gone there on the same day, it took half an hour for the pair of

tanks to reach the spot and they also fired from the southern side but the rounds also made little impact on the mud wall but one round did hit the pillar and wall was partially breached. The first two rounds of tank went astray even at close range of two hundred yards, {25 Cavalry}. The tanks were scared of rocket launchers which were sporadically being fired.

Now another soldier of 36 Baluch was hit and was evacuated and then another but it was difficult to evacuate him from so close from the compound but it was done. Time now was mid-day and the intense fire was coming from all direction. At this time they called for the reinforcement and one more QRF came but it was hit by a rocket launcher, *all I saw was a fire ball at the southern side and then came to know that a truck has been hit by the rocket*, another QRF was called, later they breached the compound and captured three teenage Uzbeks and one elder person was killed while making escape, another miscreant died with an explosion inside the compound but own casualties were also mounting. The time now was evening and curfew was lifted as per routine and with this it was heard that thousands of people were marching towards the concerned area {actually around hundred}. Commander and commanding officer now both left the area and moved to the Amin Piquet and enroute they saw stranded vehicles, one was hit on the tyres and other had an injured driver. The tanks were also moved back. The performance of tank crew was below par, they had no communication and furthermore had closed down the cupola and Brigadier Aqeel had to knock it open by throwing stones on it, the crew was hesitant in crossing the ditch or algal in front, they had fired all of their ammunition without causing any damage. Cobras were called but they remained at very high level and only one rocket hit the compound. They in the meanwhile had vanished from the scene because the support helicopter Bell 412 had

gone to pick another casualty Brigadier Gull at some other sector, he had suffered heart stroke. Now the situation was that the both the brigade commander and commanding officer had gone back to the Amin Piquet and from there the young officers volunteer including Captain Changezi {he mentioned few more but I have forgotten the names} came down in APC to carry out the rescue. Lieutenant Colonel Muhammad Ali was also not present at the post. That was the situation at night which they all spent in anticipation of an attack on the post.

Initially there were reports of fifteen missing which later came down to seven. Next day they all moved back, the curfew was imposed but later it was lifted to allow the locals to pick their dead ones.

This was the situation when I landed at the Miranshah.

I asked Brigadier Aqeel few more questions regarding the overall infantry tactics, and he said they have to be changed in the context of this conflict, few pairs, less crowding, maximum fire power and minimum use of soft vehicles. He highlighted that maximum casualties he had suffered occurred due to the use of the vehicles. He admitted that the Talibans are highly motivated and excellent marksman. I had heard the term of intense fire coming but always thought that there are some traces of fire coming but on that day I experienced it without having any clue that from where it is coming from. The standards of individual soldier training needs to be improved. Above all aviation needs to be streamlined, here I am sitting three miles away from the site of conflict and helicopters had to be requested through division, corps and then to aviation channel and finally to the pilots, it is cumbersome. I fully agree with him on



the aviation aspect because right now I am going through the chain of events that took place in the valley from 5<sup>th</sup> July onwards when Tochi Scouts were made under the operational control of army {7 Division} and this point about the aviation is repeated consistently.

## **23 October 2012**

It is 2000 hours, sitting in the library and no reason to be depressed when in last three days over twenty people have died outside the fort including women and children and one inside the complex. I am not sure but firing can start any time because this is what the pattern is there since I had that cup of tea with Brigadier Aqeel. Should I go backwards from here or forward from that cup of tea, let me think. I better have a shower because in the morning the water was cold. It is difficult to explain how and why it all started, the two early shots which I heard on that day were in fact the sound of fire fired by a miscreant {Uzbek} and second later he exploded himself thus it was a suicide attempt. He had been walking behind a truck in front of the stadium post and as soon as the truck passed by he just walked towards the check post and before the incharge could say anything he fired two shots and killed him, but meanwhile another scout on the far side of the road fired a burst and killed him and then a mayhem was set in motion which lasted for over two hours, there was another person with this Uzbek and he was injured and all the efforts were to catch him. Colonel Wajahat the commandant rushed to the spot and so were the three officers I mentioned. Wajahat gave a cash prize of Rupees 50,000 to the two soldiers who saved the honour of Tochi Scouts.

Later in the evening when I went to the Tennis Courts he was sitting in office which was bit unusual, but I had a game with

Brigadier Shahid and Colonel Akhtar. During the end of set one we heard the Cobras firing and we discontinued the game and walked and later climbed to the Ifikhar Post from where we had a good view of the city, curfew was imposed and soon tanks, recoilless rifles, machine guns and Cobras started firing on the Machis Post Area, for half an hour it lasted and then artillery started pounding the positions. I had never seen such a display of firepower, Cobras were impressive and lethal, air was filled with the rattling sound of multiple weapons, dust, smoke and clouds raising from where they were firing and where they were landing the rounds. I was mesmerised, it was getting dark, the mosques from city and within the fort were calling the Muslims for prayers, it was emotional to feel that on one hand the mosque is calling us to come onto the path of righteous and on other hand there was no break in the shelling. City was deserted only few dogs were roaming around without any concern of what all is going around. The sound of RR is terrible shrieking, tank fire is loud, artillery whistling and Cobra is sexy, when it fires the sky is rattled , one hears the sound after a pause, I could see the tank firing and then after some time the bang of its shell landing at the target area which was not visible. I am a weak man and as such with every fire my whole body trembles, my brain and all nerves strained. But one has to hide all this. One feels powerful in such environment when one is sure that no retaliation can come. In asad mood I descended and walk back to mess, enroute I stopped at quarter guard to offer my sympathies to the troops for the loss of the jawan in the day, it was as if I had lost one of my friend whom I have not even met but such is the bond. At quarter guard I came to know that he was married and was living with family, it was even more disheartening, to picture how his wife and children whom he must have left probably in a good mood today promising to take them home on eid and all of a sudden he is no more there.

Later I had a shower and then thought of going to the Commandant's house for condolence, I am very weak and poor in this matter, I was feeling the genuine sadness creeping in me and wanted to sit with someone to take my burden off, I wanted to shed few tears but there was none and no place to do so. After some time I went to his place luckily he was not there thus I left a message and came back to mess, had dinner and went back to my room. All night the artillery pounded, I thought of the people on the receiving end, the one who are living under the flight path of shells, one wrong calculation on part of observer and shell can land anywhere. I thought of my daughter but then I also thought of the crimes these people have committed against us, the many soldiers and scouts not to mention innocent people who have died because of them. Wars are all over the world are bad. Laying on my bed the thought that these people cannot retaliate the way we do with our artillery was comforting.

Next morning there was a brunch given by the 114 Brigade, I was not sure whether it will be held or not but it was there and I hurriedly got ready and joined it, it was there that Wajahat narrated me the whole episode, on breakfast table it seemed as if nothing had ever happened here.

On Sunday which was 21<sup>st</sup> October 2012, Brigadier Aqeel came to say last words of goodbye and I am moved by his gesture for the reason that seldom I have experienced such gestures from others. This is either a shortcoming of retiring as a major or a positive sign that at least I have never gone through such rituals. I do recall Major Aziz Niazi in 4 Squadron at Quetta who once myself and my wife were being posted out to the Gujranwala, on permanent course gave us a dinner at Musketers restaurant, commanding officer Lieutenant

Colonel Ansari had pend it till I complete the course and then I should come back here with family to be dined out. Another time my friend Lt Col Masood arranged a good dined out at 27 Squadron but at last minute my wife picked a row with me or vice versa and I had to attend it alone. Skardu was another embarrassment, Lt Col Ubaid had put me under a military trial for possession of weapons the reason was something else but that was the excuse and later when Mueen took over he simply took over the house in which I had left my luggage and I was in Rawalpindi, another embarrassment, similar was the condition at Aitcheson College. Thus I never had a proper end at any station, probably Gujranwala was one station but no it was not, I was undergoing the court of inquiry, at Peshawar I had been awarded severe reprimand before posting out in 1993; what else is left. Thus the kind of courtesy which I am watching, observing, undergoing here at Miranshah and especially in the hands of Tochi Scouts is extraordinary in everyway.

### **Eid Day 27<sup>th</sup> October 2012**

It is eid day and it is sunny and warm, Local had the eid yesterday which is another strange paradox of our cultural clash. In my opinion the local logically displays a greater use of common sense than the state organs in determining the days of eid. All our Muslim festivals are interlinked with the sighting of new moon and above all it is in direct relation with the what is happening in Saudi Arabia, now that country is in terms of Greenwich time standards only three and half hours behind us, in terms of distance only 1000 miles away on our west, in terms of flying time it takes three hours to reach there. Today is 27<sup>th</sup> of October here in Pakistan and time is 1100 hours local or 0600 hours GMT, in Saudi Arabia it is the same date but time there is 0800 hours local, thus how can we have a festival a day later.

Above all how on earth we can say that the moon which was sighted at Saudi Arabia last night was not sighted here. The local of tribal agency still maintain one day gap but the state of Pakistan maintains two days gap. Thus eid was in Saudi Arabia on 25<sup>th</sup>, locals had it on 26<sup>th</sup> and state is having it on 27<sup>th</sup>, strange and weird.

Yesterday I went to the tennis court and Israr who is a local Daur surprisingly acme to the tennis court, wearing new clothes, he was celebrating eid, since there was none in the court except the ball pickers thus I had a good chat with him, I inquired about he and other locals celebrate eid. Israr told me that he and his two other brothers purchased sacrificial animals for 60,000 Rupees which includes one lamb and one cow. The eid is simple in the city and in the tribal villages, they sacrificed but all cannot do it because of financial limitations, but they in fact reared the sacrificial animal for a year. I remember the JCO I met at Butt Marka Post who had two lambs whom he was looking after for last four months. Thus in true sense they carry out this important ritual. The main and central eid prayers are held in the city; since it was Friday yesterday thus I also heard the sermon in Pashtu. There were few shops opened in the city as per Israr, people carry out sacrifice and then distribute the meat and also keep the rest with them, in winter it is possible but in summer it is difficult due to heat and lack of electricity.

Here within the Fort, I in any case woke up late and missed the prayers, now they have a lunch at JCO mess at 1200 hours where I am also invited. In the mess only myself, adjutant Captain Bilal and one air force officer Zia are present, rest all Ali the doctor, Saad and commandant all have gone on leave.

I am alone but then it is my own choosing, flash back of previous

eids are coming, we never had a sacrifice because it was difficult to purchase the animal not financially but more of laziness, then to look after it and above all to sacrifice it. Even in Skardu where there was ample open space I had a lamb for some time but before eid I gave to a poor to do whatever he wants to do with it. It is a difficult task and in this is the real beauty of the ritual to be able to sacrifice your precious thing in the name of your creator.

Brigadier Shahid of artillery had warned about the incoming shelling from locals on the eid night but luckily his prophecy has not been true. Major General Abid Rafique came for a visit to Miranshah, stayed night in Tochi Mess, I met him for half an hour presented him with the book and had a cup of tea. In the discussion I think he is not very clear about about the Tochi Valley but then almost majority are not, they all tends to relate this valley with the other like Swat but that is different even south Waziristan is different. Meeting old course mates is a pleasure, we were together in the SSG basic course, he is right to mention that time has passed. The other course mate Ali Abbas has shifted to the new complex at division; he had an operation of his knee and as such is restricted in his movement. As long as he was my neighbour or vice versa it was good to have a chat with him and not to forget his fridge, his laptop is still with me and I am having second thoughts whether I should keep for another week or hand over him today, he does not really need it but on the other hand I also don't feel very good in keeping it when he is in garrison.

On national level the prices of CNG have been drastically reduced and now I am having second thoughts about having a diesel Mercedes, it is expensive to maintain when you are jobless.

I had Bara Khana at the JCO's Mess of Tochi Scouts, nice of

them that they invited me, mess is good nothing extraordinary about it, a board of instructions few paintings but importantly the pictures of all corps subedar majors, now I know the history behind every picture and corrected that Subedar Major Malanag Shah was awarded with a medal also which was not indicated, my friendship now I share with Naib Subedar Fazal Orakzai, I also like Subedar Khattak Qaum commander, Sharbat Khan was on leave. Food was also ordinary in taste but we took it while sitting in dastar khawan style this is the major difference between army and FC style, apples were too big in size, I mixed the salty and sweet rice together which was novelty for some but to others it was a sign of old army, JCO's had the food with spoon and fork, officers sat on one side and JCO's on other, I wanted to sit among them but then followed the customs of the corps.

After the food we all {Tariq, Rab Nawaz and myself} went to call on GOC Ali Abbass, Rab Nawaz insisted on my sitting in front of the vehicle, I really have to insist on their adhering to seniority, as a retired officer I am not entitled to any protocol but these officers insist on following it, nice of them. The hardship is that they got commissioned in 1992 or later and I was already a major by that time. GOC was having food thus we had to wait outside, I could have gone inside as a course mate but I stick with my Tochi Colleagues, after fifteen minutes we went inside and left after fifteen minutes.

I later had two calls one to my mother and other to my father and also to Lieutenant Colonel Ahsan Janjua who is a very nice and fine person and also to Jawad but his phone went unanswered, I again call him at night but same answer, let's hope he is ok. Later I worked in library and saw Brigadier Khalil Dar along with Colonel Nasir {both aviators}. Khalil is the first officer to read my book Air

Observation Post and he liked it, we sat for some time then I left him to be with his juniors, later he came to see the library, he is the only one who has shown any interest in purchase of the book for the base.

Later at night had a wonderful barbecue at Lieutenant Colonel tariq Shinwari's home, excellent food, specially the Patka Tikka, it was lamb meat. Meat wrapped around the fat of the lamb. Later at night went to bed early thinking about my children and wife.

## **28<sup>th</sup> October 2012**

Sitting in library, trying to make out the peace process that took place in the agency in 2006. From January 2006 onwards the attacks on military increased drastically with disastrous results for the military and simultaneously peace talks also started in which army initially was stubborn but later gave way in September 2006 by which the writ of Taliban was established alongside army.

## **2012**

January 2012 was no different from the previous years, Sepoy Salim Iqbal Bangash embraced shahadat and Sepoy Rehmat Ullah Khattak received minor injuries when an IED was exploded on 2<sup>nd</sup> January 2012. These two along with six other scouts had gone down from Bangidar Post to collect water. Mule was also killed in this explosion. There were twenty IEDs attacks in 2012 alone. After Bangidar it was Kalanjar II which had to tackle this menace on 3<sup>rd</sup> April, another IED was encountered near Zakeem Hospital on two roads one on 8<sup>th</sup> April other on 15<sup>th</sup> August 2012. Amin Piquet also had its share when an IED was exploded near it on 3<sup>rd</sup> September. November 2012 at Kalanjar was like a rice paddy full of snakes after monsoon rain. On 11<sup>th</sup> November 2012 three IEDs were detected out



of which one exploded. On 12<sup>th</sup> November Commandant Colonel Wajahat, Wing Commander Lieutenant Colonel Tariq, Adjutant Lieutenant Mohsin along with twenty scouts went to the post to physically inspect the security measures around the post. Kalanjar Post is a complex of three posts, out of which one is the main post and other two acts as listening posts. A night prior to the ROD the protective patrol occupies the outlying listening posts. Commandant along with other officers and scouts marched the entire track and then stood with Major Zameer his quartermaster and discussed the probable blind spots around the post. Other scouts also looked around, alert and probing the ground for any marks. Commandant's eyes scanned the area and the track; they then froze at his own steps. He was standing on an IED; without panicking he calmly walked away with other officers and at a safe distance indicated them the IED where all were standing around few seconds before. Lieutenant Mohsin had the honour of hitting it with a single shot; it exploded. Such is the risk involved and it is beyond the comprehension of mortals to understand how the nature works. Month of January 2012 was heavy in terms of IEDs,

Rocket attacks also surfaced with MiranShah receiving three rockets on 7<sup>th</sup> January without any damage. In retaliation Gosh Post fired three high explosives bomb of 3 inch mortar, 89 rounds of 12.7mm gun and 60 rounds of light machine gun; Isha Post was also not lagging behind in retaliatory fire. One positive step was the immediate dispatch of a fighting patrol comprising of two platoons led by three officers to the probable site of rocket fire area. MiranShah was again hit with rockets on 29<sup>th</sup> January when two missiles landed close to fort. Similar results were seen when two more rockets landed inside the fort on 10<sup>th</sup> February. It is not just the fort rather the posts on its inner perimeter are part of it. Datta Khel &

Sargardan are worst affected in this manner. These two posts along with Stadium Check Post are the front row of posts and invariably they on alternate days receive either small arms fire or rocket. In March the intensity of rocket attacks remained unaltered, on 11/12 March, on 12/13 March and on 18<sup>th</sup> March MiranShah was hit with missiles. Khar Kamar was hit with four RPG-7s on the night of 12/13<sup>th</sup> January no damage was incurred; one rocket hit the post's mosque.

Amin Post which has been sustaining the attacks valiantly since 2005 again stood to its name, on 3/4<sup>th</sup> February 2012 a fire raid was repulsed. Heavy fire is one of the safe way of beating back any attack, on this occasion 331 rounds of G-3, three RPG-7 rockets, two grenades were expended by Amin and Banda Post also provided ample fire support. In 2012 Amin Piquet faced thirteen fire raids. Miscreants used RPG-7 and small arms in the fire raid. A fire raid is different from physical attack in sense that miscreants in fire raid use rockets and small arms weapon purely for creating terror, they hope that their rockets will create some kind of damage or loss of life. Physical attack on the other hand is well planned and well co-ordinate affair, it also starts with fire raid in most of the cases but at times miscreants have been using the ground to inch closer to the posts. Tut Narai attack of 2006 is an example of physical attack coupled with fire raid. Hassu Khel Post January 2006 is another example.

### **Swiss Couple**

Frontier Warfare is full of surprises; monotonous is the last word here. On 15<sup>th</sup> March 2012 Thall Piquet received two unexpected guests, one male and other a female clad in local dress. It was

0230 hours and sentry had no intention of opening the gates of the piquet for any one pretending to be in need. Experience has reinforced the mindset of the scouts that miscreants can make use of their traditional hospitality. The couple almost shrieked for help. Sentry called his superiors which included a captain as well. The couple narrated in mixture of English and Pashtu that they are Swiss citizens who were abducted in Baluchistan and now released by the Taliban or miscreants. Post commander asked the man to lift his shirt thereby ensuring that nothing is wrapped around his body. The couple was treated with hospitality and next morning they were helilifted to Islamabad. On a lighter side the girl complained of gender discrimination, after all 'I was not asked to lift my shirt'.

## **Spring-2012**

There were eight attacks on various posts of Tochi Scouts in March 2012. On the night of 18/19<sup>th</sup> March 2012, miscreants launched a well-orchestrated attack on MiranShah, Amin, Thall, Gosh and Sargardan Posts. The usual pattern of miscreant is to carry out rocket fires for few days then to attack any one post physically. They also resort to deception by attacking posts other than the intended with fire and then silently creep onto the intended post. By March 2012 the Tochi Scouts and army units were well conversed with these tactics. Posts were well armed, well stocked and well led by veterans. There was only one casualty despite all these fire attacks, Amin Post had one casualty Naik Said Shah Afridi due to attack on 18/19<sup>th</sup> March 2012, early in the morning at 0545 hours one QRF moved from MiranShah for his evacuation. The QRF itself came under hostile fire; Naik Afridi is back on duty.

In April there was no let off in the intensity of miscreant's attacks, only the mode was changed they resorted to IEDs after their

failure to subdue any of the Tochi Scouts posts. Sepoy Arshad Khan embraced shahadat while he was performing duty on a piquet, cause was an IED. Four more Tochi Scouts were injured when another IED exploded on 8<sup>th</sup> April near Zakeem Hospital, Subedar Laiq Khan Swati, Lance Naik Nasir Hussain Turi, Sepoy Noor Nawaz Khattak and Sepoy Signaller Taif Noor Mohmand were injured. There were six major incidents of fire and rocket attacks on Tochi posts in April alone without causing any damage.

### *Summer of 2012*

From the preceding it is obvious that life in the Tochi Scouts was anything but thrilling, it was a blessing in disguise because by temperament these scouts love danger, and they like to live on the posts where they are at their best. What else a scout requires other than a machine gun with filled belts, good food and above all a well deserve leave. Life in Tochi Scouts was wonderful, exciting and fulfilling. The new uniform of combat dress finally replaced Khaki shalwar kameez, with Militia being worn twice a week.

From 2000 onwards and especially from 2005, special emphasis has been given to the administration and welfare of scouts living inside the fort and on posts. Water supply was made better with drilling of two wells (one is still in progress), new lines were constructed, and recreation room's standard was raised. Medical complex was enlarged and enhanced, dental surgery was made possible in MiranShah. Children Park astride family quarters was renovated and made functional, quarters itself given fresh coat of paint every year. Junior commissioned officers mess was tiled, mosque and imam bargah tiled and taken care in befitting manner.

Mosque was made air conditioned in summer of 2012 and provision of warm water installed. Over forty new toilets were constructed to cater for increase in the strength. Mechanical transport sheds were constructed in 2010 and in 2012 the complete mechanical transport is being shifted to under construction complex. Monsoon of 2010 wreak the MiranShah Fort, one reason was the blocking of seasonal nullah by the army units. It was not their fault because any one coming and living at MiranShah for short duration is bound to have a different set of priorities. It was too late when Tochi Scouts realized that water is rising alarmingly. Electricity shortage is going to stay in the country in general and in NWA in particular for some times to come. Tochi Scouts procured diesel generators for the scouts, latest being procured in August 2012. The timings in summer are from 1400-1630 hours and again from 1900-2300 hours. In winter it is from 1700-2300 hours. Solar lights were installed in the Fort in 2012. Provision of electric coolers for water, provision of vegetables, fruit and milk to scouts at much reduced rates is something part of Tochi Scouts heritage

In 2005-06 construction of scouts mess at MiranShah was initiated, construction of six scouts barracks was also started in MiranShah and one at Ghulam Khan along with construction of bachelor officers' quarters at Datta Khel and Khajauri; both were completed. Construction of four living bunkers along with stores at Gharlamai, construction of one cook house and store at Wacha Bibi, four living bunkers and a cook house at Baramand, three latrines/bathrooms at Ismail Khel, three living bunkers at Astaghai Narai, four living bunkers at Banda, three living bunkers at Machis, two bunkers at Khar Warsak, three living bunkers at Hussain Post, four living bunkers at Gandari, two bunkers at Mamoon Panga started in summer of 2006 and were all completed in time. Later almost

all were handed over to army because Tochi Scouts wings were deployed at other places.

Reasons for highlighting all these administrative work is to bring forward one pertinent point; Tochi Scouts is here for last 117 years and as such it looks forward in maintaining the existing structure and creating new one to meet the forthcoming requirement. In army all this is planned and executed at highest level or at cantonment sphere; at Tochi Scouts everything is executed under the orders of commandant, who is advised by the Qaum Commanders and JCOs. Army unit has to move out from one military station to the other in a couple of years but Tochi Scouts have to spend quarter of their lives in North Waziristan Agency thus a high level of administration is paramount requirement.

### **Road Operating Days (ROD)**

The very first instructions regarding the road moves were issued by HQFC on 29<sup>th</sup> September 2004 and again on 18<sup>th</sup> December same year, reminded on 24<sup>th</sup> October 2005 ‘commanders to ensure that troops are well acquainted with standing orders procedures on road operating days and defence against Improvised explosive devices’.<sup>78</sup> The background of these instructions was the change in the attitude of locals towards the military after the start of operations in tribal areas. RODs were in use during the insurgency against Fakir of Ipi also and this time it was no exception. No individual was allowed to move out of garrison without an escort. Convoys were organised to move under the regulating headquarters established at Bannu and Tank. It affected the scouts because their leave was curtailed; ‘only compassionate cases are allowed that too under coordination with civil administration and khassadars/ mashrans of the area’. Till

---

<sup>78</sup> HQFC letter dated 24<sup>th</sup> October.

September 2005 no standing orders procedures were made for night move either by the Tochi Scouts or by the HQFC. Tochi Scouts made very comprehensive and detailed SOPs on the subject which are a monograph of the area and culture itself. *‘being an individualist the tribesmen excels at guerrilla warfare and is adept at camouflage, ambush and concealment, they are quick to notice, seize and exploit every opportunity, they rarely operate in large bodies and being self-sufficient operate independent rather than under the command of a leader, he would prefer to strike at the line of communication at unexpected location and time with precision’*.<sup>79</sup>

The weaknesses observed by the Tochi Scouts regarding the convoy moves were that the vehicles are overcrowded with high side and tail board restricting prompt action from troops. Single escort vehicles, improper vehicular distance, no piquet on line of communication, lack of inter vehicular communication and above all casual attitude of the troops. From that date till today efforts are underway to overcome these basic observations because majority of the incidents which happened in relation to ROD are above all due to violation of these points.

Various methods were discussed, adopted and then further refined; road move became an exercise in itself. Initially four look out sentries in each vehicle were detailed in addition two loaded weapons were fixed on pedestals on each vehicle, wooden planks with sand bags on the side walls and floor were suggested. 100 meters inter vehicular distance was proposed. Communication was given the utmost priority. These instructions were adhered to but the one segment that troops should remain alert and vigilant is abstract in nature as no one can actually measure this level. As late as 2012

---

79 Tochi Scouts Policy Letter No.01/G/ Dated 28<sup>th</sup> October 2005.

the troops are still hampered with the importance of wearing helmets during the move with military police taking down their numbers and passing it back to the respective formations.

The core issues with a road move includes protection from the IEDs which are of various categories, then ambush and finally the suicide bomber ramming him or a vehicle. The route seldom passes through any built-up area. In the initial days the road movement was carried out at night with curfew imposed in the area.

Each of the threat to a convoy have different remedy measures. An IED can be detected and diffused through jammer which requires bomb disposal party to walk in front of the whole convoy, detect and diffuse them. It took ages for the convoy to reach MiranShah from Bannu or vice versa, a motorised convoy had to adopt the speed of a footman. Piquets were placed at the route. The leading scouts would take the positions on the side of the road and after some time & distance another party of scouts to perform the same task and so on. Each piquet had to be in observation of each other, stand almost whole day and then they would be picked up starting from the farthest and moving rearward. For IEDs diffusion armoured vehicles fitted with jammers were incorporated who would scan the area, jam the mobile frequencies, but this would also result in jamming of own communication. With the passage of time, Army Aviation helicopters were employed to provide protection to the convoys, attack helicopters flying overhead to thwart any ambush. Fixed Wing Y-12 aircraft were used equipped with electronic and infrared equipment would fly a night before the road convoy over the area and recording any abnormal movement astride the road. For protection against the suicide bombers no traffic is allowed on curfew day, no person is allowed to walk astride the route. Still a



heavy number of casualties took place due to the incidents on ROD. This is no strange statement because Russian and American have also suffered the most on ROD; it seems that there is no fool proof system against such attacks.

Following incidents will highlight the situation. While standing on a ROD duty at MiranShah Bazaar. A scout observes a small girl walking all alone, she has no idea that there is curfew and starts crying in the mid of road; what to do now?. This happens almost on every occasion on 60 odd miles of road that starts from Datta Khel-Kamar. All villages are astride the road and children as per their routine plays along. There are deaths which have taken place among the locals a day before the curfew and now dead body has to be given a funeral, there are delivery cases, critical injuries, persons need immediate medical treatment, lunatics walking on road, animals who are least pushed about curfew. These all need response and nothing can be given beforehand as an answer. It is the scout or the soldier on the spot who is the best judge; he has to be trained in this aspect.

In one instance a new unit arrives in the operational area (49FF) and on the very first day of ROD, while coming back from Amin Post with a QRF of Tochi Scouts, the ambulance of 49FF stopped abruptly in the main MiranShah Bazaar, when inquired about this sudden stoppage by Lieutenant Amin of Tochi Scouts the QRF commander, the driver of the ambulance very innocently replied 'I had a doubt that in one of the tyres the air pressure is less so I have got down to check it'. This is the drawback of new regiments coming; they take time to have a mind-set in relation to the area. The driver of ambulance had no idea that at one time the instructions were to just leave the vehicle on road in case if it develops fault.

(After Hassu Khel incident of September 2007).

By December 2005 it was accepted by the military that travelling of any uniform person even while coming back from leave is not safe in any public transport.

Tochi Scouts had one wing each of Thall and Swat Scouts under its command but over all four wings of Frontier Corps were employed exclusively for ROD. The whole area of responsibility was divided into two sectors, one known as MiranShah and other as MirAli. MirAli Sector for ROD was under the responsibility of Thall and Swat Scouts. It had two segments, one MiranShah-Bannu and other Isha-Kamsarobi. In the MiranShah Sector Tochi Scouts had the responsibility of clearing the road from MiranShah-Datta Khel-Alwara, other route was MiranShah-Baramand and last was MiranShah-Ghulam Khan.

### **ROD Routes Tochi Scouts**

MiranShah being the communication hub have two roads, one going westwards towards the Boya-Datta Khel and other going northwards towards Ghulam Khan. On the Road Boya-Datta Khel, almost ten miles after Boya at Khar Kamar a track leads towards the Gharlamai-Alwara. In the same sub sector another track leads to Ismail Khel-Baramand. On the road towards the Ghulam Khan the junction is Dardoni II Post from where one track leads towards the Saidgi and other to Ghulam Khan.

On MiranShah-Datta Khel route one wing of Thall was employed with one company of same wing being employed on MiranShah-Ghulam Khan Route also. Khar Qamar-Gharlamai-Wacha Bibi-Alwara was the task of Tochi Scouts whereas Gharlamai-Baramand was given to the Swat Scouts.

Khyber Rifles one wing was employed on MiranShah-Isha and on Isha-Khamsarobi. Mohmand Rifles had their wing responsible for Isha-MirAli where as No.2 Wing Tochi Scouts was responsible MirAli-Khajauri and Kurram Militia from Khajauri-Baran.

## **IED**

In the initial days because of fear of IED's the road was cleared by foot thus the whole wing had to walk on foot clearing the route. Scouts have been marching from MirAli-Bannu on foot and also on other tracks. The two leading scouts requires nerves of steel because they walk in front, looking for anything suspicious and if found then pioneer platoon and bomb disposal squad have to move forward and diffuse the explosives; a tiring time consuming and risky affair.

Simultaneously piquet's have to be place enroute, every piquet in line of sight of other carrying their own water and food. These scouts had to remain in sight of others walking and also keeping an eye on the area. At evening all these piquet have to move down and march back in the same fashion.

Initially a single day of move from Datta Khel to Bannu was not possible thus the troops moving back would have a night stay at MiranShah.

From 2006 onwards when jammers were incorporated then the move became fast but still risky. Army employed Army Aviation helicopters for route protection, for stand by and also used the Y-12 aircraft placed at Qasim Base Rawalpindi for a night sortie before the ROD to have photo imagery of any suspicious movement along the road. Curfew is imposed on the ROD. In later years the ROD was conducted on Sunday, a detailed SOP's were issued by the Divisional Artillery 7 Division. 'Communication had to be excellent.'

Presently on ROD the Tochi Scouts all officers less field officers move out early in the morning to the designated points in vehicles, dropping the sentries en route. For instance at MiranShah City every point leading towards the convoy route is protected with Scouts who have the order to shoot anyone who violates the curfew, no civil vehicle is allowed to run on the road neither any civilian is allowed to come out of his house or loiter around the road for fear of suicide attack.

Convoys coming from Datta Khel stops at Boya from where the Tochi Scouts convoy also joins in and the convoy coming from Gharlamai too. These convoys reach MiranShah before noon from where a consolidated convoy then move towards the Bannu. At MiranShah the convoy control is responsibility of army, all the vehicles are parked in the division area, names, numbers of vehicles and persons are noted, machine guns on fixed line are fixed on vehicles.

War develops new games and fun for the children of the area, it is true here. Children's favourite plaything in NWA seems to be teasing the military. They normally put an empty bottle in a shopping bag, attach a cord with it, put all of these under rubble, then simply sit and enjoy the bomb disposal drills of military over their pranks. By and large they are friendly, waves their hands when they see a convoy, rush to the walls of their villages and then simply laugh. At times one notices the grown up children rushing inside to pick their toddlers; to ensure that they should not miss the fun part.

There is a lunatic living in MiranShah and surprisingly he has survived all these war years , rocket attacks and IEDs, even today he is the only person who is seen walking around amidst intense firing going on from both sides in all directions.

One officers recollects his thoughts *‘a night before the ROD there are always thoughts of this being the last journey, the conditions of roads are such that no IED can be detected by merely pointing out to the fresh digging on it because road is always under repair. People on both sides of the road generally do not care much about curfew, children still play around an odd old woman will be seen moving with her donkey laden with firewood. There are numerous places for laying a perfect ambush; there are culverts, orchards, road passing through narrow villages, high cliffs on one side, blind bends. There is extreme tension in the air where even the loud burst of a tyre can play havoc on the minds of soldiers. Soldiers thus chat among each other, every passing mile brings signs of smiles on the war torn soldiers faces. My driver a Bhittani had served with a film actress in Lahore and thus the journey was pleasant...one feels as if tons of load have been taken away as the convoy reaches destination. That is the first time I had a good laugh and so did all others.’* Another officer who travelled in a hired taxi from MiranShah to Bannu had different fears *‘my biggest fear was that I should not be shot mistakenly for a miscreant, my driver was bent on increasing speed and overtaking the military vehicles, imagine a lone car in front of a military convoy speeding towards a check post...other option of moving inside the convoy was again full of danger and neither was the idea of being the last vehicle a good omen’*. Ignorance is a blessing and probably it is true for those regiments who travel here for the first time. They have only heard the stories narrated by other regiments which naturally have more of drama and less of reality.

## **Road Accidents**

Frontier drivers are famous for their dare devil driving skills, in seventies and eighties the Government Transport Service of

NWFP plying light blue colour buses on inter provinces routes were regarded as the fastest. Pathans statistically are fond of driving; almost all public transport in Karachi is in their hands and Lion's share in national trucks ownership and driving. Tochi Scouts from October 2009 onwards was hit with accident plague on roads. No less than ten scouts lost their lives and other 22 injured in road accidents within a span of three years. Four scouts were injured in October 2009 while operating in Bajaur Operations, two out of these met accidents at Shabqadar near Peshawar. Worst road accident took place on 8<sup>th</sup> February 2010 near Lacchi (Kohat) when no less than five had fatal injuries (Havildars Yaqoob Ali & Yousaf Ali, Sepoys Zahid Hussain, Najaf Ali & Hamid Hussain) and other ten were injured. Sadly all the casualties were from Turi Qaum. Lance Naik Pervez Khan Swati met his fate in a road accident at Wah Cantonment on 19<sup>th</sup> February 2010. Two more lost lives on 13<sup>th</sup> March 2011 near Khajauri (Lance Naik Shabid Nawaz Afridi and Junior Clerk Sami Ullah Wazir). Within a month, Sepoy Ali Janan Bhattani met the same fate at Bannu on 2<sup>nd</sup> April 2011.

Last casualty related to road accident took place on 2<sup>nd</sup> March 2012 when Sepoy Gul Rehman Wazir met a road accident near Naurang; he was coming back from leave. Seven more scouts received injuries which put them away from the operational duties for varying period when on 26<sup>th</sup> April 2010 they had an accident at MiranShah; cause was over speeding.

Over the years, the speed of convoy has varied, in the days of extensive attacks the speed was without limit and neither any vehicle developing any mechanical fault were recovered but now the procedures have been streamlined. Many accidents have taken place due to over speeding, wearing of seat belts are a sign of masculine weakness, unfortunately helmets have also joined in this list; at least

when travelling outbound. Despite all these accidents Tochi Scouts drivers are a professional breed, they take risks and many a lives have been saved by their driving. Chitoon Village ambush is one example.

## **Uniform Uniformity**

By 2009 there were three different types of uniform being used in the Tochi Scouts, Khaki and Mazri Kameez Shalwar and the newly inducted field dress.

In 1994 the classical militia cloth was replaced with a khaki colour but with a drastic change whereas militia was 100% cotton the khaki cloth was 65% Cotton and 35% Ryan. Footwear remains the same that is brown chappals, technically the original colour was tan, headgear on ceremonial also retained its dignity with paggri which is an integral part of militant tribal culture same holds true for kameez shalwar adorned with a brown leather belt with a brass insignia. Ranks were always the same as in army. In November 2006 the traditional dress was revived but as a ceremonial uniform.<sup>80</sup> Colour of dress remains Black (Mazri) with orange chappals and belt, toshdan and kullah were reserved for ceremonial occasions, it was meant only for office work or ceremonies. Thus Khaki was replaced by Mazri. Recruits were passed out in this traditional dress which is symbol and identity of Frontier Corps since inception.

Another aspect related to the appearance was the beard, patta and sanren; they all are methods of keeping long hair. From 2007 they were discouraged but not banned.

---

<sup>80</sup> Ministry of Interior Letter, Revival of Old Ceremonial Dress , Dated 15<sup>th</sup> November 2006

First change from tradition took place in 2005 when instead of chappals the rubber sole desert laced ankle high shoes were introduced under the shalwar as part of moderation of the Frontier Corps yet the choice of wearing chappals was still retained. In 2011 the grey colour fatigue comprising of a jungle shirt and multi pocket baggy trouser tucked in the desert shoes without a belt were regulated. By June 2012 it became a standard uniform along with a bullet proof vest and helmet as field dress without belt. Two days in a week are allowed to wear the traditional militia dress of militia colour kameez shalwar with brown chappals and belt along with beret. Within Tochi Scouts each wing has its own colour thus scouts of No.4 Wing have pink as wing colour therefore their chindi the base around shoulder ranks and titles is pink where as No.3 Wing has Blue, No.1 Wing has Red No.2 Wing has Green No.5 Wing is Yellow and No 6 Wing is given Black colour. The uniform items are provided free of cost to all ranks less officers from clothing store, each wing has its own clothing section.

For sports the light brown colour joggers Cheetah of Servis company of Pakistan are issued, Scouts wear white socks only both under the chappals and also in sports however the green socks are issued for field dress both in woollen and mixed pattern, white socks are pure cotton; always neat and clean. Tochi Scouts have made their own track suits for all the scouts which is in green colour with red writing it is not issued by the Frontier Corps rather the Tochi Scouts have made it at their own, it was introduced in 2000 but only for the sports teams. In 2012 every scout was given a track suit, he pays half the price and other half is subsidised by the commandant. The dress of Commandants orderly retains its magnificence especially in weekly traditional dress days. Commandant wears paggri only on durbar or at Jirga or attending the Frontier Corps week. A Qaum



commander wears a red band around their left arm with the name of qaum written in abbreviation. Duty junior commissioned officer wears a cross belt over kameez shalwar. It must be remembered that the present day militia is not the original militia Mazri cloth rather it has a tinge of white in the form of sparkles in it. Tochi Scouts marching stick is unique among all the scouts and militia corps; it has a dagger in it which with a twist in cane can become a weapon.

Now blast proof helmets, bullet proof jackets, desert ankle length shoes, dark sun glasses are integral part of a Scout's dress.

## **May 2012**

There are seasons, days which are landmark in military history purely from academic point of view, events and incidents which leave a lesson for other combatants to learn. 6<sup>th</sup> May 2012 was one such day which highlights how a minor incident in Frontier Warfare can actually turn into a catastrophe.

There were four infantry brigades and four wings of Tochi Scouts present in the Tochi Valley when the summer of 2012 started. Major General Ali Abbas took over the command of the division from Major General Ghayur Akhtar in October 2011, he thus became the sixth general officer commanding in seven years (2005-2012), Tochi Scouts command was handed over by Colonel Amir Akbar to Colonel Wajahat Hamdani in July 2011, Wajahat is also the sixth commandant since Tochi Scouts came under operational control of army. Divisional artillery was commanded by Brigadier Shahid, 103 Brigade by Brigadier Akhtar, there was segment of Frontier Works Organization busy in constructing road linking Ghulam Khan with Bannu. Army Aviation had its contingent comprising of two Cobras, one Bell 412 and one either Puma or Mi-17 helicopter. Pilots were

residing in an annexe adjoining Tochi Mess; they were here for an attachment of fifteen days from 31, 33 and 35 Combat Squadrons apart from 25 or 27 Utility Squadrons. Aviation procedures which will play a critical role in coming days needs bit of elaboration. A Forward Operating Base(FOB) was established at Peshawar since 2009 and in 2012 it was being commanded by Colonel Sardar Sajjad. All aviation missions had to be routed through FOB.

Tochi Scouts had two wings at MiranShah, No.3 Wing under Lieutenant Colonel Rab Nawaz, and No.4 Wing under Lieutenant Colonel Tariq Shinwari. No.5 Wing at Boya was commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Ahmed Ali (in October Lieutenant Colonel Tariq took over from him) No.6 Wing at Ghulam Khan commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Faisal, No.1 Wing at Sadda under Lieutenant Colonel Qaiser and No.2 Wing at Gomal Zam Dam under Lieutenant Colonel Arshad, Subedar Major Zulfiqar Turi was performing the duties of Corps Subedar Major. Major Zameer as Quarter Master and Major Talha Naik as the intelligence officer of the corps. There were four Ghazi officers who were on a six month attachment with the Tochi Scouts. It was the policy of the army to post newly commissioned officers after attending the infantry course at Quetta to the Frontier Corps from where these officers were attached with different corps. Captain Hammad, Captain Hamzah, Captain Zulfiqar, Captain Islam were attached with Tochi Scouts.

May has a notorious history in sub-continent as far as the military or more precisely army affairs are concerned. In North Waziristan Agency, month of May 2012 at the start look promising, it was hot but not unbearable, cool breeze in the evening, light showers occasionally made it pleasant.

Notion of victory was with military, no serious incident had taken place since summer of 2009 when a Baloch Regiment convoy near Gharlamai was ambushed resulting in the shahadat of 16 soldiers. Since then army have been responding heavily on even minor violations, a kind of see-saw battle was going on between the military and miscreants with army emerging as a winner.

## **6<sup>th</sup> May 2012**

Amin Piquet is a strategic post as it dominates the area all around and keeps the miscreants on toes through intimidatory fire and as such receives utmost reverence from them. It has been a front line post which has sustained the maximum attacks in last five years. In May the ROD was on Sunday and a coordinating conference was held at divisional headquarters on Saturday to iron out any issue. From the beginning of May, Amin was reporting suspicious movement of the miscreants, on 2/3 May it was hit with RPG-7 rockets, in retaliation it fire back over 600 rounds of LMG, 70 rounds of 12.7mm gun, six bombs of 60 mm mortars and six rounds of 75 mm RR. There were two tanks also placed at Amin. Miscreants were making use of the mud walls erected around local's fields, taking cover behind these walls they were carrying out their miscreant activities with a reasonable amount of safety. It was decided to demolish these walls on Sunday. GOC 7 Division Major General Ali Abbas and Commandant Tochi Scouts Colonel Wajahat Hamdani were both on leave. In any case demolishing of a wall is not an operation which requires elaborate discussion; this is what was perceived. Thus political administration was not taken into confidence, strange coincidence but even political agent was on leave. Captain Hammad of Tochi Scouts attended the conference, all Tochi Scouts knew was to be present outside the main gate at 0700 and report to Amin Piquet at 0730 hours.

Naib Subedar Sharbat Khattak is an experience hand in Frontier Warfare, for last almost seven years he is with QRFs and invariably taken part in almost all actions. He narrates *'I reached Amin at 0745 hours with four vehicles of QRF I had 32 scouts with me, there were four vehicles each carrying one RPG-7, one LMG and personal weapons like G-3 and SMG. Six magazines of G-3 and five magazines of SMG were also with these weapons, G-3 have twenty rounds in each magazine whereas SMG have 30 rounds capacity. Subedar Riaz Wazir of Tochi Scouts was the post commander. When we reached at the post the bulldozer was already there perched on a transporter. Army subedar asked me as what to do and I asked him the same question, later we both went up to the post. I wired Captain Hamzah our adjutant as what to do, he told me to wait as army officers are about to reach the post. Our own officer Captain Hammad was already placing piquet on MiranShah-Bannu road, he had two vehicles of QRF with him. Meanwhile army officers also join us which included Major Habib, Captain Suleiman and Lieutenant Noman.*

*We all moved down in our respective vehicles, bulldozer also followed us; there were two APCs also with us. The intended wall was erected on the eastern side of the by-pass road which is southern slope of Amin Post. The wall was in L shape, within the field there were two more walls which were meant to separate the ownership of the respective acres. On the western side of the road another wall runs in similar fashion but much smaller in length. The algad was the boundary, here the by-pass road dips then takes a right turn , runs along the algad for a mile and then takes a left turn.*

*When we reached the intended wall site, there were children playing cricket in the mid of dry algad. One of the army officer fired*

*an aerial warning shot but boys paid no heed, I then went to them and requested them to leave the area as we intend carrying out military work, they all left the playing arena. Deployment of troops was in a manner that all corners and all eventualities were well taken care of. Dozer started grazing the wall and within an hour it was over, then walls in the mid were demolished, after this came the turn of western wall which was also demolished, there were few houses in ruins which were also razed to ground'.<sup>81</sup>Time now was past mid-day.*

Brigadier Aqeel commander 103 Brigade along with the commanding officer of 36 Baloch Regiment was also on the site. *'Usually I would travel along the ROD route to observe how things are going on. I saw the demolishing operation from the Amin Piquet for half an hour and then I drove towards the Isha, while coming back from Isha, myself and commanding officer 36 Baloch regiment had a short stay in front of the stadium check post, it is here that I listen on the wireless that Captain Suleiman has been hit with bullets, we both immediately drove towards the site.'<sup>82</sup>*

### **1400-1700 hours-6<sup>th</sup> May 2012.**

After demolishing the wall it was decided to have a search of the compound which is located at the track bend almost a mile away from the initial demolishing site. Who decided this is shrouded in Fog of War. Subedar Sharbat Khan Khattak recalls *'initially I put up reservation to the idea of searching the compound to Major Habib basing upon my past experience, our strength was not adequate for any unexpected resistance. We made two groups of fifteen each, the army group encircled the compound from the west and Tochi Scouts*

---

81 Interview with Subedar Sharbat Khan, 15th May 2012 at MiranShah.

82 Interview with Brigadier Aqeel, 15th October 2012 at MiranShah.

*from the south and east. In the north a track passes in front of the compound and next to the track the algaḍ. While moving towards the compound we made use of the ground, there were two manmade water channels close to the compound and also an orchard.*

*Myself and army group move forward towards the house, I was taken along for the reason that there was none among the army who could speak Pashtu. Compound had a normal ordinary gate made of iron sheet; army havildar simply kicked it, but it was bit strong for his leg. I interrupted and said that this is not how it works here, we have to get permission from the inhabitants of house for a search, and it took time to make army understand this cultural aspect. We knocked and shouted that we intend taking a search of the house, two voices came from inside one male and other of a little girl both denying us the permission. I was given a mega-phone earlier by Major Habib, as per the Riwaḡ I started counting from one to ten after which we were free to knock down the gate. I had reached till six when the same army havildar knocked down the gate with another kick. We all rushed inside, there was another mud wall facing us, it had two wooden doors, one on the eastern end and other opposing it. Army soldiers moved towards the eastern door opened it and searched it; nothing was found.*

*I moved towards the western door, there was a wooden stair placed next to it, I climbed upon it and reached the roof which was ten feet high; inside I saw a courtyard with a tree in the middle behind the tree another mud room with a door. A woman and three young boys were standing next to the tree, I shouted to them that we intend carrying out a search so please get aside and open the door. They refused and taunted me that being a Pathan you are doing this to us, you have no regard to the traditions of us. In the meantime*

*army opened the door and Captain Suleiman was the first one to enter the courtyard’.*<sup>83</sup>

In those micro seconds, a man came out of the room and fired a burst on the military, bullets hit Captain Suleiman, he jerked back, Subedar Sharbat Khan jumped down from the roof and fired back at the man.

*‘Probably man had a 40 rounds magazine because it seems as if he will keep on firing till eternity, he rushed back into the room, the women and boys in the meantime rushed towards another gate which opened out into the rear of the courtyard; our men outside captured them. We all now move back from the place of incident back into the same alley. I dragged Captain Suleiman outside; Sepoy Iqbal Turi of Tochi Scouts was also wounded. A grenade was thrown onto us from the adjoining courtyard but luckily it struck the walls and landed into the same courtyard from where we were fired upon. We all now move out and put our wounded into the ambulance of Tochi Scouts, which drove back.’*

Fog of War regarding which Clausewitz had written almost one hundred and fifty years ago now sets in at this spot. It was at this particular moment when brigade commander and commanding officer heard about this firing and drove towards the place of incident reaching there in twenty minutes. They established their tactical headquarters almost a kilometer short of the compound in an alga which was deep enough to allow them to stand and observe the proceedings. Two tanks were called down from the Amin Post to reinforce the two armoured cars already present. In another fifteen minutes attack helicopters also came in and hit the compound. One tank was moved to take position in the rear of the compound and

---

83 Interview with Sharbat Khan.

other engaged it frontally. 'Mud walls are too tough, even tank rounds and RR failed to create any impact', Recalls Brigadier Aqeel.

Another search operation was immediately planned and groups sent back into the compound, while these groups were moving back to take position around the compound the curfew time expired. *'I was moving with Captain Hammad towards the compound taking cover of the trees when the first burst of fire from miscreants came, we hit the ground and crawled towards our target. We reached almost next to it when I saw a horde of miscreants coming, by this time sniper fire also started pouring in accurately on to us from the village situated across the algad. In another four or five minute few of our soldiers were hit or wounded due to this fire. Tanks also started moving back, now we were engaging the miscreants with small arms fire'*. Recalls Subedar Sharbat.

Brigadier Aqeel now had to take the most important decision of his military career, whether to stand and fight back in fading light or give up the fight for another day. 'We were now being hit inside our tactical headquarters, we were firing back, light was fading and number of injured persons kept on increasing'. At this stage he was persuaded by the others to reach back at Amin Post for the reason that his presence so close to the action may jeopardize the rearguard action. He reluctantly agreed and ordered an organized withdrawal. Under the circumstances it was a very difficult decision because any delay would have taken the advantage of firepower away from military, one just have to look back at 77 Brigade actions in 2007 near MirAli to fully comprehend the gravity of situation.

Force was able to reach the safety of Amin piquet; unfortunately not all of the original members were lucky enough to come back,



quite a number of soldiers laid down their lives to ensure their other comrades can retract safely. That night Amin was hit by the miscreants and it hit back even harder.

### **7<sup>th</sup> May 2012.**

By midday all commanders who were on leave rejoined the garrison and miscreants were punished ruthlessly. MiranShah witnessed some of the heaviest firing duel between the military and miscreants. Rockets were flying freely across the short sky line of the city; earth was shaking and walls crumbling. One rocket landed inside the fort close to the office block, hit a tree and then ricochet; hitting one scout Sepoy Sahib Zada Khan Bhittani embraced shahadat in the arms of his wing commander Lieutenant Colonel Tariq Shinwari. Sepoy Irfan Mohmand was also injured but not serious. Tochi Scouts QRF made a dash to the Fort from Amin Piquet amidst miscreants indiscriminate fire, one vehicle toppled near the main gate; eleven scouts were injured.

Rest of May days was spent in engaging the miscreants wherever they were observed.

### **Afghan National Army**

In the summer of 2012 the activities of ANA were a matter of concern for the Tochi Scouts. The issue is complicated in a sense that miscreants also fire upon them with rockets while remaining within the boundary of Pakistan. It is similar to attacks launched upon MiranShah which in majority of the cases are fired from 2-3 Kilometers away. On 4<sup>th</sup> May one mortar bomb of ANA landed within Pakistan territory, on 8<sup>th</sup> May two such bombs fell into own area, on 9<sup>th</sup> May at 1655 hours same event happened but this time

Tochi Scouts post at Bangidar replied with equal number of rockets. On 10<sup>th</sup> May 2012 American & ANA forces came close to the Zero Point, initially one Chinook and one gunship landed at 1105 hours followed by eight APCs which all halted forty yards within Afghanistan territory. Tochi Scouts patrol on inquiry learnt that they were looking for a proper site for checking of vehicles. It was at this time it was learnt that they had given prior information of their intended reconnaissance to Islamabad but it took time before it reached down to the men on spots. With volatile situation boiling up due to Salala Post incident there were all the chances of the post opening up fire had they ventured even a meter inside own territory.

In June fire exchange between the Tochi Scouts and ANA increased substantially, on 5<sup>th</sup> June they fired nine mortar bombs and in return five were fired by Tochi Scouts Bangidar Fort Post. Heavy fire duel took place on 6<sup>th</sup> June which lasted almost whole day, first one at 1015 hours, second at 1125 hours. Third fire exchange of the day took place at 1320 hours when Bangidar, Behram and Zero Point Posts of Tochi Scouts fired five mortar bombs on ANA. One mortar bomb of ANA landed inside Bangidar Fort near exchange without causing any damage. Tarkhobi an ANA post is the main culprit.

Rest of the summer was spent in the same manner; there were days when the miscreants activities would increase and then suddenly dying down and surfacing again. Rocket attacks were launched against MiranShah after the 6<sup>th</sup> May incident. On 23<sup>rd</sup> June Fort received three rockets at 2012 hours, one landed near Sargardan Post, other at ROD ground but the third one landed inside the Officers Mess, missing the main structure by mere meters and hitting a mud roof room, there were two waiters inside both remain

scrathless. Taking this particular rocket as case study, it is worth mentioning that no less than five senior officers were sitting in the mess lawn at that particular moment when this rocket landed mere ten meters away. These officers remained composed finished their tea and then calmly left the mess as if nothing has happened. The reaction of officers is vital in maintaining the overall stance of the corps. As a precaution commandant put a ban on the scouts sleeping outside their barracks at night.

Similar rocket attack was launched on the Amin by the miscreants on 5<sup>th</sup> August 2012 but post reacted heavily by firing 490 rounds of G-3, 45 rounds of 12.7mm gun, three bombs of mortar and three rounds of 106mm RR, reportedly five miscreants were killed.

Christian community also had a taste of war when an unguided rocket landed close to the Tochi Scouts church on 10<sup>th</sup> August. Same night another rocket landed close to the Datta Khel Post.

### **Life in MiranShah**

From the preceding events a different kind of life pattern emerges about MiranShah and words cannot do justice to the pulsating, exciting, thrilling, fulfilling and above all relaxing environments of this wonderful fort and garrison. No doubt it is the most dangerous place on this earth right now. Nothing can be taken as granted here, one moment it is all peace and very next moment a loud bang of a rocket landing close by. Here the morning wakeup call on majority of days is a loud burst of machine gun. Most of the nights it is the artillery fire which is soothing to the ears. After a week any new comer very conveniently and confidently can differentiate between the firing sounds of a G-3, Kalashnikov, Mortar, medium and field artillery pieces. Scouts walk here with their chest high; there is

something in their walk and their conduct, their whole body radiating an aura of self confidence. These are the men who daily face danger, who stand all night guarding the fort, who on any given day move out of fort knowing fully well that roads and tracks are full of IEDs, they take every day as a last day, this is what this seven years of war has instilled in them.

It is blessing in disguise for the newly inducted recruits to understand the life pattern in which they are going to spend quarter of a century. Old hands are here to guide them through. For young army officers it is a dream come true, it simply brings the best out of them which probably even they were not fully aware of themselves in peace stations. RODs, piqueting and staying at posts is the kind of experience which many a generations have passed away without ever hearing so much of fire power; except on firing range which this generation is experiencing every day. This life is different from Siachen Glacier where nature was the biggest enemy, here man is the worst predator and one wrong move on part of any officer in Frontier Warfare can make or break a life time reputation.

Tochi Scouts life has been affected by this war, they can no longer visit bazaar or sit idly, but it has been replaced with a better more positive life pattern. Living accommodation has been upgraded, lawns are sprawling, fresh seasonal flowers to refresh the tired and worried mind, above all sports. There are regular sports fixtures in the evening, volleyball, football, cricket for the scouts and tennis for the officers. Nowhere else in the world Tennis is played in such dangerous environments as it is done here. A set is often interrupted with a sound of machine gun and rocket firing, attack helicopters flying above, coming or going for a sortie. There is a telephone set with operator sitting, passing and collecting all the messages. Tennis

is a kind of mental therapy for all the officers, divisional staff also plays here and it helps in cutting down the lengthy chain of command to discuss fresh ideas. Cup of tea after the game is the most relaxing drink in the world, with sun setting down on the Durand Line, an odd jet liner flying above leaving contra trails (MiranShah is an international airways check point) and the unmistakable humming noise of drones flying above. The best part of fort life is the Retreat Bugle, everyone in the open stands attention while the flag is lowered and the gates being closed.

Scouts in the summer evenings prefer long walk going around different posts, enjoying the fresh air, greenery and beautiful countryside. The orchards full of ripe plum, apricot and pomegranate. Despite the instructions not to pluck them still like young naughty boys, these scouts indulge in this irresistible play. Posts always present a calm posture no matter how serious or grave the situation is but still faces of scouts radiate confidence. To a scout most precious thing seems to be his pet, usually a Chikor, he looks after him like his own child, covering him during the hot part of day with shade, washing him, feeding him and feels good talking about him. Just like traditional British society the best way to start conversation with a scout is by asking about his pet.

Ramadan in 2012 came in the early days of July, it changes life pattern, there is no question that anyone can find anything to eat in this month inside the Fort. Sehri is an elaborate affair, no working after ten o clock and then iftaari. Scouts traditionally prefer to have collective iftaari in the lawns outside their living barracks. Additional ration was supplemented by the commandant, on Eid he visits as many post as possible in two days. There is a rush for availing Eid leave and that is the delicate part.

Cricket was in full swing during the summer, Pakistan was visiting Sri Lanka and all scouts followed it intensively. The dress in summer consists of a T-shirt and trouser with shoes if wearing combat dress otherwise standard kameez shalwar.

## **Winter of-2012**

By winter 2012 the situation was under control of military, 6<sup>th</sup> May incident was thoroughly analysed and deductions were reached and acted upon. Major General Ali Abbas highlights the fact *‘to eliminate these miscreants through use of force is not a difficult task especially with the available manpower and firepower but the dilemma is how to avoid collateral damage which is bound to happen in this scenario. Thus army and for that matter military’s aim is to compel the locals to evict foreign fighting elements present among them’*. Ali further highlights that one of the key step he took was to make the division identify target during hours of darkness, aim was to avoid collateral damage. In this *‘I was lucky to have good engineers present in my formation, we purchased laser pointers from open market, some from abroad and then convert them into night vision sights, it has helped a lot’*.

Despite all these efforts to avoid collateral damage there are still instances which compel military to take stern action. Friday 19<sup>th</sup> October 2012 promised to be a peaceful day but early in the morning at 0900 an attack took place at Stadium Check Post.

## **19<sup>th</sup> October 2012**

Stadium check Post over the years has been fortified and technology has been integrated into the overall defence lay out of the fort and garrison. There is a walkway gate checking where all

the males entering into the fort perimeter are searched. There are school children who come daily for education, there are civilians who are residing in political agent's colony, there are people who have official work at the political agent's office or at tehsil, there is a bank inside the perimeter. Thus scouts have to be extra alert and vigilant in dealing with such a variety of people. A lady searcher has been hired by the Tochi Scouts to have a look at the females.

All the time there is a guard of five scouts present at all corners of the stadium, over all a platoon is deployed under the command of a JCO. Surveillance cameras are also installed at key points which are inter connected with the garrison control room.

While the checking of people was in progress rather thin at this time of the day (0845). Lance Naik Ikram Ullah Marwat was checking the vehicles and Sepoy Irfan Ullah Bhittani was detailed at walk through gate. Guard Commander Naik Akhtar Jamil Khattak was also standing at the gate while another sentry Sepoy Rizwan Ullah Khattak was manning the machine gun bunker.

Two miscreants were walking across the road behind a truck and taking cover behind it they cross the road towards the check post and rushed, at that precise moment guard commander also spotted them, Sepoy Irfan Ullah Bhittani who was standing at the walk through gate also looked up and instinctively raised his sub machine gun from the same posture. Miscreant's fire and Bhittani's fire almost had mid air collision, Bhittani's bullets hit him in the chest and he fell down but in the process his hand grenade which he had already thrown towards the post landed close to it. Second miscreant was also hit in legs. Naik Akhtar Jamil sustained bullet injuries and embraced shahadat. Miscreants were carrying one SMG, eight magazines and seven grenades.

Commandant Tochi Scouts was the first one to reach at spot because he was already going towards the office when he heard the firing and immediately diverted towards the post. The second miscreant despite being injured was firing on the post from across the road; he had other accomplices also with him. For next five minutes commandant held the post before he was joined in by the Lieutenant Colonel Rab Nawaz the wing commander, Captain Bilal the adjutant and Captain Saad.

Miscreants were later identified as Uzbeks, the whole attack had a purpose and back ground. Miscreants intention and plan was to overrun the Tochi Post with a suicide attack followed by a vehicle borne attack team which was to head towards the Tehsil Jail. However timely reaction by the post and commandant saved the day. It simply highlights how important an individual is in blunting any attack or in other words it is the sentry at post who can put an end to ‘Domino Theory’. Just imagine had these miscreants been successful in infiltrating or penetrating the Tochi Scouts inner defence the notion of victory would have been snatched from Tochi Scouts for years to come. It is a great tribute to all the scouts and their officers at MiranShah that despite the fact that military installations have been hit and penetrated all over Pakistan, these miscreants have not been able to have the same effects here at MiranShah.

### **Evening 19<sup>th</sup> October 2012**

This attack had a back ground; there are foreign fighting elements present in the city. 7 Division had conducted one operation along with Tochi Scouts against them in January 2010. Machis a small village on the eastern end of Fort is their hub. On the evening of 19<sup>th</sup> October 2012, army hit back with all its might on these



foreign fighting elements. For last almost two months there were negotiations going on with the Peace Committee regarding the future of these foreign miscreants. Peace Committee was trying hard but without any success, however the local population pressure was now mounting on these miscreants as all the misery coming on to the city is due to them. Military's policy of holding back the fury for last so many years was now bearing the results. Miscreants on 19<sup>th</sup> October had this strategic goal of humiliating the military in its own backyard there by establishing themselves as the war lords of the area; but it was foiled by the Tochi Scouts.

Now army had a legitimate excuse to punish these anti state elements and it did so. The evening of 19<sup>th</sup> October will remain engraved in the memory of all those present at the spot. Every weapon fired tanks, recoilless rifles, field and medium artillery, mortars and attack helicopters pounded the miscreants' locations with precision.

Captain Bilal, adjutant of Tochi Scouts is a ghazi officer; he joined Tochi Scouts in August 2012, and soon found himself at Machis Post. Bilal in classical scout style spent hours just observing the village down below, noting down every movement taking place and soon realised that there is a pattern which exists in this village. He was able to identify the houses of miscreants something which own intelligence agencies were not able to do so with such precision in all these years. There were three different groups living in the village, Taliban, Uzbek and Mahsud apart from Punjabi Taliban. Bilal was able to identify all of them, he also spotted the house of an IED maker.

*'It is a small house with four rooms all along the wall, there*

*are kids and goats inside, he has two further pillared rooms like mechanical transport shed, an aerial is present for communication apart from a gas cylinder; this house is located in the centre of village and the road from Machis Factory leads to this house. A red land cruiser visited this house at around 1835 hours and all militants welcomed it. This house has a tower at its rear and a mosque with big verandah. Another coaster of white colour reached the house at 1845 hours; main house is used only for work and nothing else'.*

*Captain Bilal also identified Talib's house 'the house is the last one on the corner and has 70 by 70 meters area of plain ground, the house is a complex with five rooms, number of green local trees inside on the north eastern side, a tower shaped feature on the eastern direction, house has two doors both on the same wall facing south, one door is painted blue and other is in rusted colour, blue gate opens into a baithak where as the rusted gate opens into the hallway'.( this house was hit with a drone attack in 2008).*

*Regarding Uzbek's house Bilal noted that 'it has a clump of four or five tall trees which provides excellent cover and one door (light blue) opens towards Machis Village'. Mahsud's house was located on the bank of algad, 'one of the strongest complexes observed in the area...seven interconnected houses in one single line...all having foxholes'. Captain Bilal's observation regarding the miscreant is interesting as he observed them the way a hunter concentrate on his prey. 'The Taliban are of all ages, mostly men having long beards and hair wearing turbans and boys of 16-18 years and another group of 14 years. In Mahsud complex the regular guests were coming in blue Binjo car and they used to meet each other in cultivated area usually for half an hour, there is a population of Turks and Tajiks in Mahsud's complex as well, they have six horses*

*as well which normally grazes in algaad, they patrol the area on these horses. Uzbek had two daughters of around four years of age and plays outside the house, '*

*Machis Village was identified as the hub of nefarious activities and as such was punished on the evening of 19th October 2012. At 1600 hour's artillery opened up with observers at Amin, Machis and Sarbandkai directing the fire. Captain Bilal went up with the crew of Bell 412 to guide the Cobras on the houses of miscreants, all care was taken to avoid collateral damage and this is where Bilal's observation came handy. Cobras hit the exact houses, fired 20mm Gatling rounds hitting the vehicles parked inside the complexes. On ground tanks & recoilless rifles at Sargardan and Datta Khel Posts carried out direct hits on the houses suspected of facilitating miscreants in their fire attacks on the fort. There is no scene better than Cobras diving and attacking the miscreants hide outs, the sound of their guns following them after they have taken right turn out of the target area. Commandant Tochi Scout guided the Cobras while sitting at the top of water tank reservoir; Brigadier Shahid commander divisional artillery along with Colonel Akhtar was at Iftikhar Post, Brigadier Raza and Colonel Staff Colonel Riaz at the Sargardan Post. This heavy fire power continued for an hour. It was sad because at identical time all the mosques within the Fort and in the city called the faithful for Maghreb prayers. Military paused the fire power for the duration of prayers; all night artillery roared. In the morning there were reportedly over thirty miscreants killed.*

*Another skirmish connected with the same thread took place on 22<sup>nd</sup> October when miscreants in retaliation attacked Tochi Scouts at Amin, fire raid started at 1915 hours from multiple direction, in reply almost all posts of Tochi Scouts that included Amin, Banda,*

*Machis, Sarbandkai, Kalanjar fired back with no hold barred.*

In November 2012 miscreants resorted back to IEDs, on 4th November Amin Post detected one, again on 11th November Amin detected one more. On 22nd Captain Saad detected one IED at Kalanjar.

### **Corps of Tochi Levies ‘Machiavellian Chindits’**

Present History started with the raising of Tochi Levies in 1895 which were upgraded into Militia in 1900 and then transformed into Tochi Scouts in 1922. In 2005 Tochi Levies were re-raised in North Waziristan Agency thus the circle came back to where it all started in the beginning and this seems to be the life pattern here. Tochi Scouts were responsible for the raising and training of this Levy Corps, which was initiated with American funding. It is nostalgic in nature but more importantly it highlights the circumstances under which the original corps was raised in 1895. In 2011 a batch of 95 men all local were trained by Tochi Scouts undergoing 12 weeks of training.

The concept of Levies dates back to fourteenth century, Nicolai Machiavelli an Italian was an ardent supporter of having militia where the natives are entrusted with the task of defending their homeland, thus the concept of militia and levies took birth. As one British political agent remarked that North Waziristan Agency for all practical purpose is an independent country composed of almost thirty two different clans each behaving and acting as a sovereign state. Political Agent thus assumes the role of an ambassador of the Crown and without having any military force under his command was nothing more than a laughing stock among these tribes. Tribes did not allow army to entered into their territory therefore political

agent had to recruit men from the area, armed them, train them and then through them maintain law and order in his area, it is his police. Only limitation was that his police was not allowed to enter into the tribal area without permission; this is where the Militia came in.

North Waziristan Militia was raised in 1900 from the men of the area; this is the cardinal point of Machiavelli's 'Art of War'. This Militia differs from Levies in a sense that Levy was recruited only from a specific area or tribe (Daur in 1895) but Militia was all encompassing as it had Wazir among it. Wazir's conduct and attitude during the Third Afghan War (1915-1919) should be seen in the light of 'Clash of Civilisation' their actions were almost replica of what the Greeks did to the Spartans in war against Persians. *'Blood, language, religion, way of life were what the Greeks had in common and what distinguished them from the Persians and other non Greeks'*.<sup>84</sup> North Waziristan Militia was later transformed into Tochi Scouts in 1922; the main difference between the Militia and Scouts is in the fact that Tochi Scouts now enrolled men from outside the agency. British Army and RAF remained part of the military power in the NWA from 1930 onwards more specifically against Fakir of Ipi (1936-1947). Khassadars were introduced in 1922, a different approach from the Levy but more in line with Machiavelli's thought. These were the men of tribes who were not paid directly by the political agent rather pay was given to the tribes, each tribe having certain vacancies; they were the tribes policemen. From 1947 onwards Pakistan Army vacated the forward garrisons at Gardei, Wanna and Tochi Scouts left Datta Khel and Boya, all forward areas ahead of MiranShah were entrusted to the tribes. Thus situation in 1947 was almost similar in North Waziristan Agency to what the British had in 1900; no military ahead of MiranShah.

---

84 Samuel Huttington, Clash of Civilisation (Penguin, ) p-34.

During the Fourth Afghan War (1979-1989) army did not move into the areas it had vacated in 1947, Tochi Scouts moved there between 1973-1978.

Tochi Scouts achieved almost a miracle in 2001 by marching into the areas vacated by army in 1947; Tochi Scouts did not had any casualty in this ‘Operation Blue Lagoon’. Army had to intervene in the NWA from 2004 onwards not because Tochi Scouts had failed in coming up to the expectations but on the apprehension that they will do so. This has been the pattern of army intervention in NWA from 1899 onwards and with passage of time it has been realized that the best way to control and safeguards own interest is through the induction of locals into the military. Political Agent in the original scheme was the equivalent of a Viceroy in the NWA, he had the military in terms of Scouts, political administration and financial powers all vested in him. British Army in 1936, in 1937 and in 1939 had taken over the political control of the NWA from the political agent for limited duration. In such times political agent had no force to establish his writ in the area. Same is the situation now and that is why Tochi Levies were raised again in 2004, mainly to provide the political agent with some force through which he can carry out daily chores of maintaining law and order; he also have Khassadars to supplement this Levy Corps.

Thus North Waziristan Agency have two police forces working under political agent, Khassadars in tribal areas (Wazir) and Levy Corps in more urban areas of agency (Daur). Probably there may be a Militia also in near future which will be based upon tribes.

### **Tochi Army Public School MiranShah**

Gaining of education is part of our faith, it is our religious

obligation. Our Prophet Muhammad (Pbuh) laid great stress on this aspect; during the early battles of Islam the prisoners of war were given the option of earning their liberty if they can teach one illiterate Muslim. There were educational institutions in the MiranShah yet there was a need to impart a kind of education which should be modern, nationalistic and religious in nature something which was possible only with the administrative back up of Tochi Scouts only.

On 2<sup>nd</sup> May 2001, the Commandant Tochi Scouts Colonel Wajahat Choudhary requested IGFC Major General Taj for establishing a public school at MiranShah and within a fortnight its formal inauguration was carried out by the IGFC on 31<sup>st</sup> May 2001. The vacant area on the northern side of the fort was utilised, school was opened opposite to the existing government school. Initially 100 children were admitted in classes from I-V which by end October 2002 increased to 142 and classes were also upgraded till VIII.

Tochi Scouts advanced a loan of Rupees 400,000 and local elders donated Rupees 45,000. The amount received from fees was Rupees 576,025 and expenditures amounted to 599,110 Rupees. Initially there were only nine teachers out of which four were females and four male instructors were provided by the Tochi Scouts who were all from education branch, one teacher from civil was also employed. For administrative purpose one JCO and one NCO were deputed. One librarian, a sweeper and a mali were also part of the establishment. Facilities of conveyance and canteen were also catered.

In the ab-initio period the emphasis was on education and to improve the general layout of the area. Credit goes to the Tochi Scouts all ranks for making this venture a success story, by end

2012 there are over 516 students studying from Class I-I0. It is now affiliated with army public school management thus any student studying here is at par with any other student at any other garrison of Pakistan Army. The other three schools of Tochi Scouts at Boya, Ghulam Khan and MirAli are also affiliated with this school.

In 2001 none could foresee the chain of events that were about to unfold in the North Waziristan Agency; without any exaggeration it is safe to write that the most effective weapon, most constructive dialogue, most obvious evidence against the fundamentalism, most active defence against the attacks on the very ideology of Pakistan is this very school. In this school the students comes from all shades of life, there are seven girls also who are studying along with boys, the very first in North Waziristan Agency. Today when none can walk out of fort and none can come in; it is this very school which represents the semblance of normalcy among all warring parties.

In the early days the parents were allowed to drop and pick their most precious item from the gates of the school but with the changing security environments the vehicular movement was stopped thus these students were dropped at the colony gate from where they now have to walk almost a kilometre to reach their alma matter in winter and summer; surprisingly the ratio of late comers is no worse than any other school anywhere in the world. It is heart-warming, touching, moving to see these young toddlers carrying their bags of books and walking this distance amidst gunfire and rocket shrilling noise. Their daily assembly at times coincides with the rocket attacks on the fort and surrounding areas by the miscreants, words are not enough to praise the courage of these students and salute to their parents who are suffering all this pain and agony for the better future of their children. Many a times it has happened that neither



the students can leave the premises and nor their parents can come in because a battle is raging; Tochi Scouts then takes the responsibility of providing food, shelter and ensuring the safety of this future of Pakistan. One student's father is earning his living by making ropes out of Date's palm which is barely enough to maintain his dignity; he is residing near Ghulam Khan and daily travels almost seven kilometres on foot to drop and pick his son, he cannot afford to pay the fare of a transport. Tochi Scouts on learning his dedication waived all fees. There is a girl student who has six elder sisters yet his parents are dedicated, motivated and educated enough to ensure that all their daughters get good education. These students in fact provides a beacon of knowledge into the very heart of the social and cultural fibre of the society; which has been misrepresented, misreported and misinterpreted by those who have seldom set a foot in the agency.

Initially the uniform was shorts, shirt and a tie which was welcomed by the locals later in 2007 the Taliban threatened them with dire consequences and uniform was changed into shalwar kameez for the safety of students.

A Computer & Internet Café was also opened alongwith the inauguration of school; it was supposed to be operated independently and it did so for a short time but later it was amalgamated into the main school. In the early days of Internet Café one Pentium III server was purchased for Rupees 45,000, two Pentium II for rupees 19,500 each and another six computers for a total sum of 1,09,000 Rupees. Regular computer teaching classes were operated teaching MS Office, Visual Basic and Power Point etc. The charges were Rupees 15/. hour for the civilian and Rupees 5/. for Tochi Scouts and students of the school. Later the computer and internet were

amalgamated into the Tochi Public School and now the students are being given this modern education free of cost.

In 2007, HQFC sanctioned amount worth Rupees 5 Million for the construction of Boys Hostel in the school, 1.5 Million was released in the first phase which was completed by end 2008 with 35 students accommodated in hostel. When the overall project will be completed then it would be able to accommodate 75 students. The living environments are excellent, tiled television room, library, nourishing food provided free of cost by the Tochi Scouts, a disciplined routine which starts with Fajr prayers, breakfast, school, lunch, rest, games, evening tea/milk, prep, recreation and early to bed. Students from other agencies are also accommodated in the hostel, Orakzai Agency (3), MirAli (28), MiranShah (5), Datta Khel (27), Ghulam Khan (1) are studying and living in hostel.

Sports plays a key role in the development of a child's character, like other boys these boys also love cricket; few of them have all the making and temperament of being a next Shahid Afridi or Waseem Akram. At evening games period there are no less than half a dozen boys teams playing cricket. Tochi Scouts provided them with sports gear worth Rupees 25,000 in 2010, geysers were also installed, laboratory equipment worth Rupees 15,000 was also purchased by the Tochi Scouts and similar amount was spent on the purchase of books for library. Tochi Scouts provide free education to the wards of its shaheeds and war orphans. By end 2010 the strength of students increased to 320 with classes upgraded till matric, there are eight civilian teachers including two females for Montessori and 12 Frontier Corps teachers.

Majority of the students when enrolled are not conversant in Urdu

but by the end of their first year in school they are able to convey their meaning in Urdu and English. There are regular activities of extra-curricular, debates, drama, sports gala, art competition, and poetry and so on. It is tragic that majority of students enrolled in school and especially living in hostel have lost their father in the on-going conflict thus they are handled with love and care. The effects and impacts of insurgency is visible through their eyes and actions, their written work represents it. They all hate violence, they love Pakistan, they love moderation, enlightenment, freedom, democracy and above all, each one has a dream and desire to enlist in Pakistan Army and Tochi Scouts.

Computer cell and library were upgraded with the assistance of 7 Division. By end 2012 the school have an area of 13 acres.

## **Full Moon 30<sup>th</sup> October 2012**

The full moon ordeal is going on, there is a controversy or debate among all of us and with 'all of us' I mean Brigadier Raza, Brigadier Shahid and myself, Colonel Wajahat would have been part of it but he is on leave.

Now see, the eid was on 10<sup>th</sup> of Zil Huj which in any case means it is 10<sup>th</sup> of moon, it was celebrated as such on 25<sup>th</sup> in Saudi Arabia, the natives celebrated eid on 26<sup>th</sup> of October which was 11<sup>th</sup> of moon and we celebrated it on 27<sup>th</sup> October which makes it 12<sup>th</sup> of moon thus 29<sup>th</sup> of October should have been full moon but other insisted on it being full on 30<sup>th</sup>. Now Brigadier Raza is good in giving calculations that moon rises at such and such time and so on, ; thus I agreed because in any case there is no logic in having discussion with an officer who is a brigadier and further more he had agreed to do photography for you.

Brigadier Raza has a good camera Nikon and I have seen some of his pictures thus I requested him to take few shots for me as well of full moon and he agreed. Thus on 29<sup>th</sup> October after the tennis game in which I am partner with Shahid and Raza and Major Nayyar of artillery are partners. My game is fair and I can give company to any one. We both moved to Mess and sat in the lawn, it was cold and moon was up but it was not coming into the right angle thus we had to wait for almost two hours sitting in the lawn waiting for it to reach the desired elevation. Again on 30<sup>th</sup> October we took few more shots at 1907 hours and Raza was able to capture the required shots.

Later at night I stared at the moon for some time as I have many memories with it, who knows when will I be able to see the moon full again.

**31<sup>st</sup> October 2012**

Much ado nothing fits on me perfectly, the electricity is gone for alst threedays as Bakka Khel tribe have put iron ropes around it in their area. It is only the generator which is working but it has timmings, it works or operates from 0900-1200 hoursand then at night from 1900-2300 hours thus I have to finish my ork and also the dinner by this time, in the morning it is only giving power to the office area thus I have to go thereto charge my computer and once gone thee means that no work can beperformed other than verbal and cups of tea after tea.

In the evening at 1500 hours I go to Tennis court and comes back at 1730 housr so little time left for writing but whatever time is there I am making full use of it.

I ma now covering the year 2007 which was the worst in terms of violence in the agency, especially the months of July.

### **MiranShah Fort & Garrison Security 2005 – 2012**

MiranShah since 1899 is the capital of the North Waziristan Agency, during Third Afghan War 1915 – 1919 it was besieged for well over six months. Fakir of Ipi during his militant movement {1936 -1947} against the British tried to overrun it. MiranShah for last hundred years is the cultural, economical, administrative, military, communication and above all the Tochi Scouts Headquarters & hub of the agency. In the context of Operation Al-Mizan its importance increased manifolds; it became the headquarters of the 7 Infantry Division as well. Its fall, capitulation or even the insertion of insurrections inside the fort would have been catastrophic to say the least from morale point of view.

Fort and garrison are two separate identities. From 1904 when North Waziristan Militia moved here from Idak, there was only fort with political agent's residence and office also located within the mud walled fort. The outside area all around was open, barren, broken and rugged; an excellent training and killing ground. MiranShah Fort was not the classical fort when compared to the Thal, Khajauri or even Razmak in layout and construction. Originally the fort was small, when RAF was inducted here in 1922 then extra construction for the aircraft hangars, airmen and pilots was constructed by enlarging the walls on the western side. From 1947 onwards the expansion continued on a slow but regular pace. By 1957 when the Tochi Sports stadium was inaugurated the original walls & gates had almost diminished along with the threat. There was open ground all around, cultivation was done on the north eastern end and runway slowly lost its importance. City on the other hand grew only in the southeast and southwest. From 1973 onwards the city expanded on a much faster pace due to commissioning of colleges, vocational institutions and hospitals. Russian War of 1977 – 1989 also diminished the threat from the locals. Extensive cultivation around the fort was a positive sign in days of peace but with the start of operations the same fields now start obstructing the field of view and fire.

In 2000 there were two forts, one the original and the second which erupted around it without having any fortified walls. It was in precarious situation as it had no walls only barbed wire or low mud wall as the outer cordon and the inner cordon becoming almost indefensible once the outer cordon has been compromised. The adjoining and overlooking hills and high grounds around MiranShah city and Fort were another factor; tribesmen have been firing and attacking the fort by occupying these hills. The fort security thus was compromising.

April 2005. It was in this month that the first serious thought was given and discussed between the army and Tochi Scouts on the security of the garrison. 315 Infantry Brigade had its tactical headquarters at MiranShah, Americans were also staying as the brigade neighbours known as 'Friends'. Tochi Scouts had only two posts on the western end, Butt Marka and Sargardan, one at south-eastern end known as 12/8 {eight guards for 12 hours each}, a khassadars piquet in the same direction were the security arrangements. On the outer perimeter starting from North and moving westward were Dardoni, No.7 Piquet, Kalanjar and Amin. By end April Agency Accounts Office {AAO}, Grid Station, Agency Education Office {AEO} posts were established by Tochi and one outer post at Pahari on the east and one at Tol Khel in the north were also established. 315 Brigade was responsible for establishing the posts in the first cardinal {from east moving anti-clock wise to the inner side of runway junction.} Tochi scouts were responsible for the other three cardinals.

7 Division initially had its headquarters at MirAli and then it moved at MiranShah by end 2005. By September 2005 there was one brigade {No.117} and one wing employed on the security of the fort and garrison.

## **Posts**

There were 16 posts which were established on the outer perimeter {Kalanjar I, II & III. No.7 Piquet, Arif Post, Tol Khel-I & II. Pahari I, II & III. Machis I & II, Sargardan Chowk, Karim Post, Amin Piquet, Isha Check Post,} 10 were established on the inner perimeter {AAO, Serai, Grid, Khassadar, Butt Marka, Jhari, Datta Khel Gate, Airport Group, Mortar Group, Tube well and Stadium} apart from 28 posts inside the fort on which 104 scouts were

deployed, majority of them were 1/3 Guard.<sup>85</sup> Security of MiranShah as far as Tochi Scouts articulation of command is concerned was the responsibility of the wing deployed in MiranShah sector. The basic tactical formation 'section' suffered most in this scenario; at nowhere was it entrusted in its original entity, it was either few more or one odd scout less. Jari Group had five scouts post, airport group had nine scouts, and Sargardan had fifteen scouts post. This tactical formation also underwent organisational changes, initially it had ten scouts forming one section but later it was revised to seven scouts making up the lowest tactical entity.

By September 2005 additional posts like Pahari II, Sabir, Khar Warsak, Hussain, Hidayat, Rehman, Kalanjar III, Banda, and Sarbandkai & Machis were added on outer perimeter. Where as in inner perimeter Stadium check post, Grid II & III, Sargardan Chowk, Khawaja Jan Chowk and Amin Group were also added between April – September 2005.

In March 2006 there were 27 posts {11 outer and 16 inner} which were manned by Tochi Scouts alone, four posts were manned jointly with army {Kalanjar-I, Jharian, Machis and Sarbandkai}. Tochi scouts had 293 men deployed on the posts {106 on inner and 187 on outer}, 55 scouts from Thal Scouts and 40 army soldiers were deployed. Tochi scouts had 80 scouts dedicated for the security of the Fort itself.

Initially it was conceived that the security of the fort and garrison is directly related with the security of the MiranShah Bazaar. There were three post of Tochi Scouts inside the city {Cemetery, Amin – II & Khawaja Jan Chowk} apart from regular gasht. In June 2005 Bazaar was sealed and clean up operations conducted, troops were

85 Briefing by Commandant Tochi Scouts to GOC 7 Division on 21<sup>st</sup> September 2005.



also deployed on PTCL exchange. Amin, Sargardan, Datta Khel, Stadium & Khawaja Jan were meant to seal the bazaar

What has been added is the construction of a mud wall around the garrison by the division and Tochi Scouts and importantly raising of concrete wall around the outer cordon of the wall there by making the fort as one. Exit gates have been closed down which included the Idak and old Kabul Gates, Bannu Gate has been reinforced, an additional gate which was created in the days of peace known as School Gate has also been closed down.

The outer mud wall has been completed in June 2012; strangely with the passage of time the simple soldiers of army have even forgotten how to make mud bricks. Tochi Scouts had the plant to make the mud bricks, this decision to make either mud or brick wall is very important as brick wall would have taken much more time, requiring extra manpower and above all movement of natives inside the garrison.

7 Division and Tochi Scouts maintained their own separate identities beside living and working side by side. Army developed its own living and working quarters on the northern side of the fort remaining on the eastern side of the runway. The divisional artillery and brigades established their own headquarters; only divisional artillery is having concrete bunkers apart from the divisional headquarters. Brigades are housed inside the girls' college. Units as late as July 2012 had no living barracks, living on the roofs of the colleges; surprisingly they did not preferred living inside canvas.

Army aviation arrival added new dimensions to the security, helicopters were initially parked in open, additional posts were established for their safety.

## **Fort Warfare**

MiranShah Fort is an interesting study in modern warfare; it was thought and perceived that a modern military formation behind a fortified wall is impregnable at least to the tribal attacks lacking air power. This connotation is not correct because the forces inside the fort need to move for administrative requirement and they are vulnerable at this. IED's or suicide attacks have put a restriction on this movement. Within the fort the runway have also been rendered useless by the tribes, they luckily do not have any ground to air missiles yet buy merely firing timed missiles and rockets they have created a hesitation and flight safety in the pilots mind. The few fixed wing sorties that were initiated were later rolled off. In conventional war studies it was almost taken for granted that aircraft like C-130 can land in the rear of battle field but it seems to need revision. Even helicopter operations have been restricted by these nuisance-creating missiles.

Fort life is exciting in such environments; there is no movement outside the outer cordon. You can only go out on ROD which is Sunday and that too towards the destination. Despite all this one still gets the fresh items in the fort and garrison. Tennis coach Azeem and Israr still comes to the Tochi Courts at given time, children coming to the Tochi Scouts school also attend classes without fail.

The war is between the miscreants and the military and both have accepted certain realities of Frontier Warfare. Football and other civilian players of Tochi are allowed to play inside the fort. One can get his reading glasses repaired from the city, replace the zipper of the bag or procure a data stick from the city. It is really unexplainable but this is how it works. Every day many people come

for work from the city and surroundings like Damsaz the gardener, school teaching staff, there is no restriction on the sweepers living in the Tochi Scouts or the Political agent's Colony to visit the city either from the state representatives or from Taliban.

Living inside the fort in such environments create siege mindset, none has seen the city working since last five years, thus only imaginations are here to think how the people are living outside the fort, what they think, what they wear, what makes them happy, what makes them angry, how the children pass their times, does women wear bangles and a host of similar queries comes into mind. From the posts on the inner cordon one can see them outside playing cricket; one also watches a family with husband carrying a child in his arms and women following behind.

Rebels picked up a very simple but effective method of attacking the fort, missiles. These missiles have no guidance system but there main threat is in this unpredictability. They can land everywhere and anywhere. Lying or walking one reaches the conclusion that best protection against these attacks is a mental resilience.

### **9<sup>th</sup> December 2012. Bannu Serai**

1810 hours. It is the end game, I am on way back to real world which I am willing to do happily but this is the limitation of our age that we cannot even live in real world. I am wrong in stating that because I have read that a German by the name of Breininger was part of Taliban, I think he was still under thirty, a man who wanted to be another Che Guerra, a man from Europe comes here, lives among Taliban, those very same people about whom I know so little. It is not a question of hating him rather it is an issue of how can a man live the life he likes. Best life is where there is a thrill, one can give

an argument that thrill is in cricket also , I agree with him that every new fast ball is a potent threat , thus sports is one way of living as close to real world as possible. I know that next thing which comes to mind in terms of thrill is military life where every moment is a last moment ; in some cases if not in majority of the cases.

We define thrilling life as a complete life not where one is living for brief period, moment or even decade. This is the limitation of military life. It does have an end, it have momentary periods of thrill then breaks of studies, leaves, courses and so on , same holds true for cricket or any other sports. I am of the opinion that greatest thrill that man ever had was when it steps down for the first time on moon. It was again the biggest but certainly had its own life had its own life time. This is not the case here in North Waziristan Agency, thrills starts with your birth itself. From your early days you are part of a feud, your life can settle a feud which is an obligation, age is not a criteria neither any question of morality is involved in it. It finishes with your death when ever it comes, at the age of eighty you are still part of the feud, your age is no excuse for your getting away from arena. In 2009 there were two brothers who came back to North Waziristan after lapse of almost five years from abroad and they had their thrill I think on the second last day of their leave when they came in a cross fire. However these things one can enjoy even at Karachi which is no different from North Waziristan Agency in this regard. Karachi fits in ideally in this scenario of thrill but comparing to NWA it is still galaxies away.

I awoke up this morning because I had to come back to Bannu onwards to Peshawar-Rawalpindi- Gujranwala- Lahore and in between mother, father, book composer, my faculty, friends, my car, high cost of gasoline, loneliness, memories, loves and hates and so

on. Certainly not a welcome thought but book has to be printed nad for this I have to come. I would have gone last week also but then Wajahat had the idea of myself havng a meeting with IGFC Major General Ghayour, not a bad idea and I in any case needed this last week to polish the draft. It was good, ghayour is typical Pathan general having lot of stories, other wise he still looks like a boy. Then two adys back two Tochi Scouts walked away from Bangidar towards the Zero oint to fetch some items without even bothering to carry weapons, they were abducted and this was an anti climax. In the morning Afsar Khan waiter when I asked about commandant told me that last night the dead body of one has been received and his funeral prayesr are at 0900 hours. This havildar was Turi a Shia and our biggest fear in alst two adys was that he will not be spared merely due to this fact that he is Shia. Other's afte is still unknown so far.

With this back ground I left Tochi with heavy heart, had aafrew ell hand shake with all because they were sitting in the mess lawn, commandant, wing commanders Tariq & Rab Nawaz, Major Zamir, Brigadier Waseem and colonel staff . Fear of IEd is another afctor, because of violation of SOPs the Bangidar incident had taken place also so much study of the last seven years made you wise where nothing can be taken as granted. I was givena jeep in which I had painter Laiq, scout Yasin and another driver. Chashmai bridge, Sarbankai Post, Isha, Gosh, Hassu Khel, Kamar, Idak, Naurak, MirAli, and sorry we hada halt at Naurak . All ofa sudden the convoy halted at a climb, leading vehicle halted and all braked within feet of each other. Captain got down, he looked smart in his jungle hat but that is not what is required here, here it is helmet. Meanwhile almost all drivers jumped down from their vehicles as if they are driving civil vehicles, few ran forward all without weapons. One odd had a

weapon but it was not in combat style or as per teaching. Military Police soldier also moved ahead, he was also without weapon. My own scout switched off the vehicle and after few moment got down he was also without weapon.

In the morning when we left Mess in this jeep the very first question I asked was whether you are having any weapon and he sheepishly said no, I kept quite, we stopped in front of lines and I saw two trucks of scouts in front with troops sitting, now after such interaction it looked odd that I should travel alone in tis jeep so I indicated one to join us and two joined; one of them was Laiq whom I have only seen in civil dress painting on walls so it took some time to recognise that he is the same one. I was more comfortable because these two ahd rifles with them and I inquired about the number of rounds they were carrying sixty each. Now you can understand my anxiety when the convoy halted and all drills and procedures which I have been raeding in last two months porously were in front of me being violated as if they never existed. No convoy distance, none got out to take all round protection and troops were sitting as if nothing will happen. In my mind 2007 ambush was going on, it agin took palce in 2008,2009,2010 and even in 2011. My eyes were scanning the growth on my left and on my right also. At one o' clock position a high mound with even a more formidable castle stood, on my left a green patch with bushes parted the house all withion a RPG-7 strike range. Few boys playing but who now vanished then I some men, my ears were now listening and picking up whistles ,yet life was moving around me. One vehicle had a tyre puncture and it was not carrying the spare tyre. I narrated history to others Scouts about how things go wrong, I indirectly warned them to be mentally ready for any thing. I for self, picked the closet bush and also opened the door of jeep to save that time also. After ten minutes we all moved forward.

After MirAli our own tyre bursted, I felt it during the turn, it was good that driver was driving slow other wise the consequences would have been different. I told Laiq to get his weapon ready , he willingly took my suggestion. I saw few khassadars catching fish in the algad. I walked towards the Double Bridge and starting taking photographs , meanwhile they change the tyre. We did not had any water and I curse myself for overlooking such fundamental issue. Area is green and wide. Only two weeks age a tank was hit with an IED near Mirali resultantly two soldiers from 29 Cavalry died. You cannot find an IED here, when we left MiranShah and even before Chashami there is a wood selling place with heaps of wood for winter warmth on sale, how can you find a IED among this stack of wood spread over so wide area.

## Epilogue

It is now almost a decade and in between much has happened, the tribal areas are no longer free, they are part of Khyber Pakhtunkhwa as an administrative districts. In 2014 , the tragic incident at Army Public School at Peshawar occurred in which over one hundred innocent school children were killed in cold blood murder by the Taliban.

War on terror with passing of time has become ‘war with tribes’.<sup>86</sup> The main theatre of operation against the terrorists since 9/11 is focussed along or in the adjoining tribal areas<sup>87</sup> of Pakistan’s

86 Brigadier Sajjad Ahmed, 2012, *Terrorism and Extremism in Pakistan post 9/11 re-appraisal and the way forward*, { M.Phil. Thesis, , p-92, National Defence University, Islamabad. Till 2012, a total of 37,888 casualties including 3974 security forces, 11,809 Civilian, and 22105 insurgents. Also see Dr Khan Muhammad ‘ISAF, Afghanistan & Pakistan; Challenges and Opportunities’, *Marghalla Papers Islamabad*, 2012.

87 These seven political agencies are collectively known as Federal Administered Tribal Areas {FATA} having over two dozen tribes inhabiting it, most notable are Wazir, Afridi, Mahsud, Turi, Orakzai, Mohmand. Minor tribes include Shinwari, Daur and Shilman. Its not merely the population but the ownership of land and the martial history which distinguishes a tribe from other. Also see Constitution of Pakistan for status of Tribal Areas

western frontier which runs along the crest of Hindu Kush Range known as Durand Line<sup>88</sup>, and even in it the North Waziristan Agency stands out as being the most dangerous<sup>89</sup>. The historical similarity<sup>90</sup> are too identical to be avoided, in 1936 a military operation was initiated in the North Waziristan Agency with a single aim to capture **Mirza Ali Khan Tori Khel of Uthmanzais Wazirs** known as Fakir of Ipi and it failed to do so till 1960 when Fakir of Ipi died of natural death with his grave still a mystery.<sup>91</sup> In present time, the war primarily started with one single aim to hunt Osama Bin Laden, who again like Fakir of Ipi was believed to be hiding in the same agency<sup>92</sup>; he was finally killed in 2011 at Abbottabad, like Ipi his grave and death is still an enigma.

Thus logically, it is failure to learn from the History<sup>93</sup> which has prolonged the present campaign in North Waziristan.

---

88 The Durand Line Agreement between Abdur Rehman and Mortimer Durand was signed on November 12, 1893, which formulated the formal borders between British India and Afghanistan. The Durand Line extends approximately 1400 miles from the Sarikol range in the north to the Afghanistan border in the southwest. The treaty was rectified in 1905, 1919, 1920 and 1921 with certain amendments, there were minor adjustments. For more detail see American Institute of Afghan Studies "The Durand Line: History, Consequences and Future." Nov 2007. [http://www.hollingscenter.org/Reports/07-2007\\_Hayat\\_Azmat\\_The\\_Durand\\_Line\\_Its\\_Geo-Strategic\\_Importance](http://www.hollingscenter.org/Reports/07-2007_Hayat_Azmat_The_Durand_Line_Its_Geo-Strategic_Importance). Islamabad : Pan Graphics, 2000.

89 President Obama's remarks on a new strategy for Afghanistan and Pakistan, White House office of the press secretary, 27 March 2009, [www.whitehouse.gov/the\\_press\\_office/Remarks-by-the-President-o..](http://www.whitehouse.gov/the_press_office/Remarks-by-the-President-o..)

90 Historical repetition, what is repeated is not the event itself but rather the structure, thus repetition of events occupies a major philosophical framework, for more see Karen Katajin *History and Repetition*, ed, Seiji M Lippi, {New York: Columbia University, 2012}

91 Fakir of Ipi's grave is at Gurweikht, western end of Tochi valley inside a cave but no funeral was ever held at time of death and even exact location is uncertain.

92 In the public and in the military circles the prevailing mind set was, that Osama is hiding in North Waziristan Agency. Also see Mustafa Hamid, Farrall, Leah. *The Arabs at War in Afghanistan*. {London: Hurst & Company, 2015}. Also see Armed Forces War Course 2004-05, Military History presentation by Brigadier Muhammad Farooq *War Against Terror and Coalition Operations in Afghanistan*. National Defence University Islamabad.

93 History as a concept and term is a European perspective, a Greek creation, see Donald



*Qaum*{nation} conveys a strong sense of bondage in which every man is identified with his clan and to his tribe, the area occupied by the tribe is *Watan*, which in Western mechanics is equal to a state, whereas the *Riwaj*{culture} is the Magna Carta of these tribes, the unwritten laws and customs which every individual is bound to adhere and around which the *Watan* and *Qaum* revolves. The misinterpretation lies in the two different sets of structures and norms, it is like looking at the world from two eyes each having a different point of focus. Whereas modern civilisation including Pakistan adheres to the Western concept of statehood, law, morality, regulations, international relations and as such all the organs of state, {bureaucracy, military, social norms, living pattern} are structured according to international norms; the tribes especially the Wazir are adhering to ancient traditions and their geography and habitat apart from social norms have fundamentally remained unchanged since the time of Old Testament and as such Wazir are an ancient civilisation, most probably Aryan. One of the key error is taking all the tribal areas as one single geographical entity in the form of FATA, thereby relegating all tribes as one tribal unity.

Samuel Huntington's *Clash of Civilisation*<sup>94</sup> read in the background of Mackinder's *Geographical Pivot of History*<sup>95</sup>, Turner's *Frontier Thesis*<sup>96</sup> along with Lord Curzon's on *Indian Frontier*<sup>97</sup> and a picture emerges in which the Indus civilisation is at

---

Kelly, *Faces of Historical Inquiry from Herodotus to Herder* {London: Yale University, 1998}, p-3. Main debate is whether to consider History a science or an art, for more see, Arnold Johnson *The Historian and Historical Evidence* {New York: Charles Scribner, 1926}, p-9.

94 Huntington, Samuel P., *The Clash of Civilizations?*, in "Foreign Affairs", vol. 72, no. 3, Summer 1993, pp. 22-49. also see by same author *The Clash of Civilizations and the Remaking of World Order*, New York, Simon & Schuster, 1996.

95 Mackinder, H.J., "The Geographical Pivot of History", *The Geographical Society*, Vol. 23, No.4, (April 1904), 421-437

96 The Frontier In American History the original 1893 essay by Turner

97 Lord Curzon Viceroy of India 1899-1905, the man who raised the North Western

the heart of Geographical Pivot of history, nature has placed three great civilisation at one source and as such the concept of frontier emerges which is abstract in nature but defines the overlay of civilisation. Culture and Civilisation<sup>98</sup> are two inherent overlapping threads which tends to explain a new paradigm in International relations

Frontiers are the undefined extent of sovereignty, it is abstract in nature as unlike boundary , Frontiers are not marked humanly rather it is the geography which draws the Frontiers between the civilisations, e.g.; Pamir watershed draws the line of Frontiers between the Oxus and Indus , or between the mountainous and the plain civilisation. Frontier Civilisation thus is a combination of Oxus and Indus civilisations; Indus Frontier hereby defines the political as well as the geographical extent of British Raj in past and now Pakistan.

Civilisation took birth along the rivers, each valley{river} of Indus civilisation have its own *Culture* {rituals, customs and traditions} influenced by the geography, thus Indus Civilisation comprise of different cultures. *Indus Valley is a Martial Civilisation*, is one of the major deduction from the Alexander The Great's campaign with Indus Civilisation, which later on embraced Islam. Religion further fuelled the militancy through the edicts and interpretation. most notably Mahmood of Ghazna's{1000 AD}

---

Frontier Province and also the Militia, his writings are the foremost and pioneer on Frontier see Lord Curzon *On The Indian Frontier*, ed, Dhara Anjaria {Karachi: Oxford, 2012.} also see Curzon, Lord. 'Frontier' in *Oxford Lectures on History 1904-1923 Ten Volumes in One*. USA: Free Library, 1924. George N. Curzon *The Geographical Journal*, Vol. 8, No. 1 (Jul., 1896), pp. 15-5

- 98 Civilisation , a state of human society which is highly developed, a society ,its culture and its way of life at a particular period of time or in a particular part of world. Culture on the other hand is escribed as way of life, and social organisation of particular country or group {Oxford advanced learner's dictionary of current English, seventh edition}

campaign against the Hindus and later Tamerlane's holocaust {1302 AD} . Waziristan emerged at this point in history, they were part of Mahmood's force and Tamerlane exited Indus Valley through Tochi Valley. Later during the Mughul period of rule, Waziristan remained obscure, Frontier was never peaceful in entirety during the three hundred years, Mughuls major contribution is that they kept Kabul as part and subservient to the Agra and later Delhi.

British East India Company from 1600 AD onwards brought new civilisation and its philosophy, based upon the Island mind-set, western political thoughts or *Machiavellian Model*. Western language, dress code, eating habits, living pattern soon became the guiding light for social progress. In 1947 Indus and Ganges civilisation were divided on historical and geographical basis into two states, Pakistan and India, as a result of Two Nation Theory on religious basis. Pakistan inherited the Frontier as well, within Pakistan existed two distinct civilisations, one a western, mostly on east of Indus {Punjab} and other medieval or eastern on the west of Indus.

## **Wazir - Aryan Tribe.**

Wazir are an ancient Pathan<sup>99</sup> tribe. Observing them , reinforces the theory of them being an Aryan tribe, still adhering and following the ancient Aryan way of life. Waziristan came into prominence due to Forward Policy after the annexation of Punjab in 1849<sup>100</sup>.

99 Pathan's oral history traces their origin from the twelve lost tribes, Pathan ontologically represents the over 20 million who shares and speaks same language Pashtu with little variation, within Pathan there are classes of tribes, the Afridi, Wazir, Mahsud, and, Turi tribes lives astride the Durand Line and among them less Turi all other are nomadic in nature as they have separate summer and winter habitats. , Yousafzai and Khattak despite being populous are regarded as Settled Tribes, same is the case with Bangash tribe.

100 Major H.G.Raverty "The Afghan Wazirs and their Country" in The Imperial and Asiatic Quarterly Review, Volume IX, Nos 17 and 18, January – April 1895 (Oriental University Institute, Woking,) page 153,.

The tribal society in Waziristan is primitive in nature, more akin to the majority of early city states of Greece; democrats, without any hierarchical kingship. All Wazir<sup>101</sup> being treated equal yet racist in outlook as non-Wazir and non-Muslim especially the Hindus are not allowed to wear the turban rather a white skull cap is allowed to them<sup>102</sup>.

Man marries and raises family, his off springs are his strength thus as many male as possible<sup>103</sup>, family houses built in mud fort style at distant, forms a clan and clans constitute tribe, marriages are preferred among the clan and then tribe. There is no central hereditary power junta rather it varies with time to time. Role and status of women and slaves is a good indicator of any society, women are treated with respect and are seldom seen outside their walled compounds. Kidnapping or rape of females is a rarity.<sup>104</sup> There is

101 Origin of Waziristan. is obscure the tradition goes that once upon a time long long ago there were two brothers and one of them was childless and the other had a daughter, they both were out hunting when they found a child ,they found an axe also. The childless brother adopted the baby which in Pashto was named as Karlanri {meaning axe}. When the boy grew up he was married to the daughter of his uncle. This Karlanri had two sons, one was named as Koday who in turn had two wives, from the first wife the Orakzais took birth and from second wife the Afridis, Khattaks, Mangals and Turis were bred. Kokay was the second son of Karlanri he had two sons one named as Sulaiman and the other as Shitak, Dauris are the descendants of Shitak. Sulaiman also had two sons; Bangash are the descendents from Malikmir the youngest son of Sulaiman. Wazir the eldest son of Suleiman had two sons namely Khizri and Lali . Khizri had three sons namely Musa, Mahmud and Mubarak. Musa was called Darwesh from his religious character and thus clan that is today known as Darwesh Khel Wazir are his descended. Musa had two sons namely Utman and Ahmed which thus forms the sub clans of Darwesh Khel as Utmanzai & Ahmedzai. Mahmud had a son called Mahsud which forms the Mahsud Wazir Tribe or clan similarly Mubarak had one son name Gurbuz which forms the Gurbuz Wazir tribe. Thus it is seen that all the clans are interlinked through blood.

102 Political Agent Report North Waziristan Agency 1901,p-5-6, Official document, Tochi Scouts Archives, Miranshah.

103 This observation is based upon the empirical data , the hospital record at Miranshah, interview with lady doctor at Miranshah Fort who have been to the free medical camp in the agency. There is no concept of birth control, 7-8 siblings are common.

104 Record at Political Agent Miranshah office , kidnapping of female is rare, in between 1896-2012, not more than thirteen such incidents. In 1984 Arsala Khan did kidnapped

no slavery in any form within the agency neither is there any flesh market or trade<sup>105</sup>. The practising religion is the Sunni sect of Islam, thus religious men attracts great reverence yet there are very few shrines<sup>106</sup>; most pious person revered in North Waziristan is the Fakir of Ipi . Elders are respected, Jirga is the parliament of the clan where collective decisions are taken and are bound to be observed. Jirga allows every man to have a right to speak and in the end the decision of Jirga is accepted and adhered, yet anyone can disagree. This Jirga is the most liberal and ancient form of democracy. Presently a Jirga can be convened by the Political Agent in which all the leading Maliks<sup>107</sup> are invited , on the other hand Jirga can be summoned and gathered by a clan to discuss and evolve strategy ranging from the punishment for adultery to entering into new contract with state. Each tribe and clan have its own militia known as Lashkar, thus military service is an obligation within the clan and tribe. Clans<sup>108</sup> of Wazir have a constant simmering of hostility among them basing upon the land dispute and more importantly the vendetta is always taken known as *Badl*, every tribe have a considerable amount of armoury including anti-aircraft guns, mines and field artillery; most of them were captured during the Russian occupation of Afghanistan,

two females, out of them he married with one.

105 In contrast , in Chitral a princely state adjoining the Durand Line, flesh trade was common till 1860 and even now and then , it comes in news that Chitrali women are being sold into marriage by their parents, for more see *Injigga Mein Khawateen ka Role* {Role of women in Injigaan {Chitral} by Laeeq Ahmed {Chitral: 2012}.

106 Within Islam, different sects have varying connotation regarding the shrines and graves, Waziristan is more lean towards Wahhabism thus lack of shrines. On the other hand in Kurram Agency which is Shia biased , the number of shrines are much more than North Waziristan.

107 There were 250 Malakans in NWA in 2005, except at Miranshah where the Daur have majority of malaks , these malaks are nominated by the political agent, they receive annual allowance and subsidies.

108 Ibrahim Khel, Wali Khel and MamitKhel are the three major Wazir Tribes with sub clans which includes Madda Khel, Manzar Khel, Tori Khel and Macha Khel of Ibrahim clan, Bakka Khel, Jani Khel, and Kabul Khel being part of Wali Khel clan, Hassan Khel, Khaddar Khel, Bora Khel and Wuzzi Khel were integral part of Mamit Khel; all in all there 42 sub clans of Uthmanzai Wazirs in NWA.

{1979-1989).<sup>109</sup> Thus Wazir lives as an extended family, having common property in form of grazing grounds in Shawal plateau, not only wazir but other Pathan tribes also.

---

109 During 2001, Tribal war between Madda Khel and Mohmit Khel, both used artillery and land mines. *Tochi Scouts War Diary*, Miranshah Archives.

Forward Policy<sup>110</sup> divided Waziristan into South Waziristan and North Waziristan Political Agencies<sup>111</sup> in 1895<sup>112</sup>, these agencies were directly under command to the Central Government at Calcutta and not to the provincial government {Punjab and later NWFP}. The agency is the heartland of Wazir with Daur as a protectorate clan {*Hamsaya*}<sup>113</sup>, carrying on the agricultural work and paying

---

110 Forward Policy, the policy of British Government towards the tribes and the frontier, basing upon the threat of Russian towards India. It took birth in 1849 and finally proved its utility and effectiveness in 1979 when Russian armed forces entered into Afghanistan, later defeat of Russia in Afghanistan and subsequent disintegration are attributed to the Forward Policy.

111 NWA have an area of 4,707 square kilometres. Presently population is 3, 61,246 (1998 census) There are 192,432 males and 168,814 females in the agency, literacy rate being 13% among males and 0.5% among females. Population density is 77 persons per square kilometres. The Uthmanzai Wazirs forms 59% of population, Daur 39% with Mahsuds forming the remainder. NWA have 705 educational institutions out of which there are 405 primary, 67 middle, 31 high and 149 community based schools and one degree college at Miranshah having 814 students; there is one vocational college, one commerce college, one commercial college and one teachers training centre having 14 students. There are 40,000 boys and 20,000 female students in NWA. Mir Ali have the highest number of schools for girls. The number of teachers in NWA exceeds over 800 with 458 male and 401 female teachers imparting education. In terms of medical facilities it had improved tremendously in last one hundred years, there is one Agency Headquarters Hospital at Miranshah having 120 beds, a tehsil hospital at Mir Ali with 60 beds, one rural health centre at Spinwam with 70 beds and apart from these there are seven civil hospitals with 70 beds capacity, 14 basic health units, 49 mother-child health centres, 59 dispensaries and three sub-health centres. Animal care is not lagging behind, NWA has been famous for its bulls, by the turn of millennium there were one million cattle, four million sheep and goats, five million poultry and only 331 horses and 1500 camels but mules were over 14000 in numbers. There are 23 veterinary dispensaries, four veterinary hospitals, 12 centres and eight animal insemination centres. There have been only one instance of prostitution at Miranshah in 1985..

112 Officially the North Waziristan political Agency was raised in 1910, however from 1895, the NWA and SWA were having political agents and both political agencies were placed under command of Commissioner Dera Jats. It was Lord Curzon who eliminated the commissioner's role in dealing with political agencies. For more detail on the administrative set up see Brandon Douglas Marsh. *Ramparts of empire, India's North-West Frontier and British Imperialism 1919-1947*. Austin: University of Texas, 2009. Bruce, Issac., *The Forward Policy and its results or thirty Five Years work amongst the tribes on our North Western Frontier of India*, first edition 1900. Quetta: Gosha -e-Adab, 1977. Government of India *Imperial Gazetteer Provincial Series North West Frontier province*. Lahore: Sang- e- Meel, 2002. First edition 1910.

113 Hamsaya or protected, is a Riwaj in North Waziristan where any person can ask for protection from his enemies, and in lieu agrees to carry out the work in fields. Ham-

a tribute to Wazir annually for protection. It were the Daur who requested and invited the British to take them under their protection in lieu of taxes<sup>114</sup>; similar pattern took place in adjoining Kurram Agency where the Turi Tribe also requested British for protection in 1892. The Agency itself is along the Tochi River stretching from Bannu to Dwa Toi, having a length of 70 miles. Wazir occupies the hills and the upper valley where as the Daur are in plains and in lower valley. Both tribes have disputes over land. Whereas Wazir clans are nomadic and migratory and have cousins in the form of Mahsuds, the Daur are practically alone. The history of North Waziristan Agency since 1896 when it was raised is mostly the feud among these two tribes , with the passage of time these Daur became more educated and as such entered government jobs yet socially within the agency they are still regarded as a tier lower than Wazir, this is the cardinal cultural difference in the agency. Just to make the point more clear, take the example of Kurram Political Agency where the division is more on the lines of sectarianism, Turi the native are Shia and now in minority whereas the latter settlers<sup>115</sup> are Sunni, but in NWA, division is based on racial superiority and not on religion.

Before 1997 Malaks used to elect the member of national assembly in FATA and also in North Waziristan {national assembly constituency No. 40} however from 2002 onwards the restriction of having a bachelor degree for the candidate and direct voting by

---

saya is always treated as a one tier lower socially than the Wazir, intermarriages are rare but feuds are common.

114 Political Agent NWA office Miranshah archives, also see the Tochi Scouts regimental history at Miranshah.

115 In Kurram , in 1979, 54539 Afghan refugees all Sunni were settled at Sada, a small town short of Parachinar, this has offset the traditional balance of power among the tribes in the agency. In NWA there are 73415 Afghan refugees , yet all are Sunni by faith thus it has not affected the balance of power in NWA. {for data on Kurram Agency, see political Agent Kurram Agency archives at Parachinar, and for NWA see Miranshah Archives.}



the people change the scenario, resultantly it has been Daur which are now elected for the national assembly seat, this is an ill of democracy as it shrouds the real power makers basing on numbers and clauses of eligibility. Implementation of Western standards of democracy is one of the cultural clashes which has taken place. Wazir being conservative, do not allow their women to cast vote whereas Daur have little of such inhibitions, especially the area up till Miranshah.<sup>116</sup>

North Waziristan is overwhelmingly a Sunni adhering agency, following Deoband school of thought or Wahhabis, King Saud of Saudi Arabia paid a state visit to Miranshah in 1953<sup>117</sup>. Thus Arab inclination towards this agency is no surprise. Agency also have the highest number of religious seminaries among all the political agencies<sup>118</sup> most notable are Idak Madrassa, Maulvi Saleem Gul of Spinwam, Haqqani Madrassa, Dande Madrassa and Degan, all less Idak are in Wazir control.

### **Militia, Army & Tribes- Distinct Cultures**

After the annexation of Punjab in 1849, three distinct types of army cultures emerged, one based upon pure all British regiments known as British Army, second the British Indian Army having British officers but troops were natives. Third being, Sikh Army which was comprised of Sikh and Muslim troops and officers. A new military organisation, the newly raised native Frontier Irregulars almost exclusively in Peshawar and Mardan districts was transitioned into short lived Punjab Irregulars and Frontier Force

---

116 For a more detail observation see the voting result and pattern of voting in NA -40, reference Pakistan Election Commission.

117 Tochi Scouts *Visitors Book and related instructions of visit*, Miranshah Archives.2012.

118 There are 1300 seminaries in North Waziristan Agency, highest among all political agencies, source, FATA secretariat.

regiments {Piffers}<sup>119</sup>. Pakistan Army's cultural and traditional roots thus lies in these British and British Indian armies which is built upon the distinct culture of regimentation, strict discipline, bureaucratic in nature, heterogeneous class composition having centralised command and control structure. Even today , Pakistan army's certain regiments still have old flags and nomenclature, mess rules, living pattern, dress code, working environment, training parameters, rank and organisation with British cultural influence and colour.<sup>120</sup> Later with the induction of air force a new culture took birth which was almost at loggerhead with army culture.

In North Waziristan the very first Levies were raised in 1895<sup>121</sup> which were upgraded to North Waziristan Militia {NWM} in 1900. Fundamentally Levies were comprised of men from only one tribe {Daur} whereas Militia had Wazir tribe only. Militia had army officers in command who were all British, it also had native officers as well from regular army on deputation. In classical term the Militia in North Waziristan Agency or in any other political agency were not raised in the manner in which it was raised in England.<sup>122</sup>

119 Timothy Roberts Moreman "*Passing It On The Army In India & The Developmental Frontier Warfare 1849 1947*." (Thesis, Doctor of Philosophy), King's College, University of London. pp. 20-25

120 Old regiments like 5 Horse {Probyn's} 11 Cavalry {Prince Albert Victor's Own}, Guides Cavalry and Infantry, 4 Baluch Regiment have battle cry as Ich Bien Dien, for more details see Raza, Shaukat, *Pakistan Army 1947 – 1949*. Rawalpindi: Army Education Press, 1989.

121 Initially British introduced Border Military Police to check the incursions of the Mehsud in settled districts, later Levies were raised, they were the police of the political agent, enrolled from a single tribe {Daur} later Militia was raised which had the composition from all the tribes {Wazir} however , Daur were not inducted in the Militia, in 1922 the North Waziristan Militia was changed into Tochi Scouts, there by enrolling tribesmen from other political agencies as well. For more see, *Border & Administration Report for the year 1895-1896*, Political Agent Archives Miran Shah. Unpublished.

122 Militia as a word was first use in British Parliament in 1641, it envisage the arming of native population and carrying out drill and practices twice a week and to be deployed in close vicinity of their homes. In America, the Militia was more organised having a detail layout of rank and organisational structure.. John Kenneth Rowland. *Origin*

Period between 1936 - 1947 is interesting as no less than 30,000 British troops were deployed in North Waziristan to hunt one man Fakir of Ipi. It should be kept in mind that at that period British military needed every man to counter Nazism thus this deployment of such magnitude speaks for itself. Fakir of Ipi accidentally rose to fame due to the Islam Bibi affair in Bannu. From the onset, army took control of the operation, Ipi village was shelled and this ignited the Fakir of Ipi 's own tribe Tori Khel. This period also gives an insight of two military cultures working together, one that of regular army with its heavy load of rules and regulations and other that of Scouts<sup>123</sup> with practical and very little bureaucratic channels. There were accusation upon the Scouts of collaborating with the natives which were partially true but the overall efficiency offset these minor irritants.

Frontier Corps and army have two distinct military cultures and both have seldom worked together for long duration<sup>124</sup>. Majority of the scouts present less the officers had very little knowledge about the way of army working and same was the case among the army

---

*of the Second Amendment: The creation of the constitutional rights of Militia and of keeping and bearing Arms.* Ohio State University, 1978. Lieutenant General Sir Howley Goodenough and Lieutenant Colonel Cecil Dalton *The Army Book For The British Empire, a record of the development and present position of the military forces and their duties in peace and war*: London: printed for Her Majesty stationery office, 1898. For details on British Militia see [http://avalon.law.yale.edu/17th\\_century/england.asp](http://avalon.law.yale.edu/17th_century/england.asp) also see <http://www.parliament.uk/about/living-heritage/evolutionofparliament/parliamentaryauthority/revolution/collections1/collections-glorious-revolution/billofrights/> <http://www.parliament.uk/about/living-heritage/evolutionofparliament/parliamentaryauthority/civilwar/overview/the-breakdown/>

123 In 1922, North Waziristan Militia was reorganised as Tochi Scouts.

124 Frontier Corps which is comprised of Militia, Scouts and Rifles is under the control of Ministry of Interior where as army falls under Ministry of Defence. Frontier Corps troops are all native tribesmen whereas army have a mix induction which is predominately Punjabi, FC have officers from army on short deputation . Both FC and Army have operated jointly in 1965 and 1971 Wars against India where FC was put under command of army. By and large , army does not have high opinion of Militia { this observation is based upon twenty years of army service}.

jawans.<sup>125</sup> One of the scouts narrated that in initial days he was uncomfortable with the presence of army. One key reason was the lack of communication between the two. Scouts invariably speak Pashtu which very few in army ranks and even less in officer cadre understand. A scout irrespective of his rank always shake hands with the visitors irrespective of his rank, would offer him tea and since he is not that proficient in Urdu thus his vocabulary is very informal in addressing the seniors; in army it is other way around where it is the prerogative of the senior to offer his hand for handshake. In army all company commanders are invariably officers preferably a field officer but in Tochi Scouts or for that matter in FC the companies are commanded by junior commissioned officers {JCO's}; which is a very powerful and authoritative rank. The concept of Qaum is another enigma for the army<sup>126</sup>; qaum tend to live, train, eat, fight, obey, disobey and die together, this is more magnetic than the esprit de corps.

Militia despite having dining tables still tend to eat and sleep together and on floor covered with mat, in army they eat on tables. Scouts wears kameezshalwar {militia} with brown chappals where as in army the kameezshalwar is basically an off parade dress, in scout's code of manners the officers are allowed to visit mess in the kameezshalwar with chappals but in army the same very dress code can land an officer in trouble. In FC there is more initiative, less staff work for the reasons that the authorisation of officers is less.

Scouts life pattern is also different from army; his sense of

125 During summer of 2012, author remained in Miranshah and these observations are based upon interviews and observations. Militia soldiers admitted that they had little information about army way of life and army soldiers mostly Punjabis had the very first interaction with the tribesmen or Militia.

126 Qaum is a convoluted affair as far as army officers and troops are concerned. Army is built around in having 'regiment' as the centre of gravity or spirit de Corps where as in militia it is the qaum which is the driving force .

motivation and pride is centrally revolving around the pride of his Qaum more than his sense of unity with Wing<sup>127</sup> where as in army the battalion is the pride. Scout is very demanding and vocal in terms of his right of ration and leave,. Statistically a Scout is more religious oriented than an army jawan, although in Tochi Scouts there were 234 scouts<sup>128</sup> who were unable to read Holy Koran yet a scout seldom misses a prayer. A Scout seldom urinates while standing but in army it is a common affair. Professionally in the contest of Frontier Warfare a scout was more professional, his body muscles were more tuned to mountain marches, climbs, descends and use of ground than an army jawan. An army jawan have the edge in technology; he had a broader outlook, was more educated and above all had better equipment.

In FC the scouts were more in harmony carrying their weapons loaded with ammunition then the army. It is no secret that in army{prior to 9/11} the guards at quarter guards were always armed with sticks or carrying rifles with ammunition stored with the guard commanders.<sup>129</sup> it was not the case in FC. Religiously FC or more precisely the Tochi Scouts are more liberal, tolerant and broad outlook; for instance in no army cantonment one finds an Imambargah but every FC Corps have one. Militia troops requires careful handling, dealing and attention, they are sensitive to any

---

127 Tochi Scouts comprised of five Wings, each wing is at par with an infantry battalion, having a strength of 600 men with light weapons, commanded by a lieutenant colonel, having four companies commanded by junior commissioned officers and each company having three platoons. For detail organisation of Frontier Corps see *General Staff publication of Army* and also *An introduction to Frontier Corps*, a restricted publication of Frontier Corps Headquarters.

128 Tochi Scouts *Reports and Returns, half yearly 2012*.

129 It is based upon personal observation, author served in army for 23 years, ‘ never for once I saw a army jawan carrying ammunition with him on night duty, it was always with the guard commander wrapped in a plastic shopping bag’. Special services group {SSG} was the sole exception in army , carrying loaded weapons on duty. Even Military police soldiers on duty had empty revolvers.

adverse remarks, at times are unable to understand common jokes and above all hate any racial comments. There are no pictures of female actresses in the Tochi Scouts canteen, troops information room or on posts, a common feature in most of the army canteens and posts, there are no cinemas in North Waziristan, in army every station has one. Frontier Corps troops seldom talks about females and absolutely detests anyone inquiring about their family members; unless he has developed a confidence in his superior. A FC jawan takes Niswar, army jawans prefer cigarettes. Their fables, proverbs, heroes, folk lore, songs, dances all differ from each other.

In Tochi Scouts or for that matter in FC the officers are from army, on a deputation to the civil, they serve in scouts for two years. These officers are from various arms and services of army.<sup>130</sup> Other ranks on the other hand spent 15-23 years in Tochi Scouts or in the Tochi Valley thus they are familiar with every village, *killi*, *algad* and *khar*. They know the culture, riwaj and traditions of the each tribe and village. An army unit seldom interacts with civilians thus to them there is no such thing as riwaj. Scouts way of warfare is medieval in cultural aspect which is in frequency with the adjoining environs; army on the other hand represents modern times. Army last had a tour of duty in North Waziristan way back in 1947, over passage of time it has become more technological in outlook however as the time passed it became obvious that the technology has little to offer to offset any limitation in deviations from the basic of Frontier Warfare; which revolves around culture.

In North Waziristan the operations between 9/11 till July 2005

---

130 Army officers in the initial days of British raj were mainly from Infantry or Cavalry, in 1966 the officers from non fighting arms {supply, artillery, ordnance, engineers} were inducted in FC and quality of officers was low, based upon officers efficiency index {OEI}, the low OEI officers were the mainstay of FC, it has changed since 2004, now a balance breed of officers are sent to FC.

were all conducted by the Tochi Scouts<sup>131</sup> with very little casualties, they were able to open up three inaccessible areas of Bangidhar, Kazha and DwaToi. Due to the operations in Afghanistan the Taliban shifted, migrated and took refuge in the Waziristan Mere ordering the tribes to evict them was against the riwaj; initially there were no Taliban safe heavens in North Waziristan<sup>132</sup>, it was mainly after Army operations in South Waziristan from 2002 onwards that they shifted into North Waziristan.

On 5<sup>th</sup> July 2005, army took the operational command of the agency there by placing both the political agent and the Tochi Scouts under its command; the situation was normal by the agency standards. The agency was not under the grip of Taliban rather it were the local criminal gangs and shortage of electricity which were the major nuisance and menace<sup>133</sup>. Americans carried out an operation against the Taliban in Lataka Narai on the night of 14/15<sup>th</sup> July in which 24 Taliban were killed<sup>134</sup>; this incident triggered a chain of events .

Starting from the night of 16/17<sup>th</sup> July 2005 and commencing on the evening of 20<sup>th</sup> July three connected operations were carried out with multiple aims; show of strength, clear the area of unlicensed weapons and to apprehend any foreign miscreants. All three operations were conducted in the surroundings of Miranshah Fort.

Nothing much was achieved, sixteen persons were arrested apart from nine light machine guns & one rocket launcher. Unnecessary resistance and the ensuing fire opened by the army resulted in the

---

131 In 1922, the nomenclature of North Waziristan Militia was changed to Tochi Scouts, *Tochi Scouts Standing Orders 1922*.

132 Tochi Scouts operational record, at Miranshah.

133 Tochi Scouts records shows demonstrations in Miranshah were carried out by boys college students protesting about the shortage of electricity during examination period. There were criminal gangs in the agency but nothing extraordinary.

134 Operational record of Tochi Scouts and 7 Infantry Division.

death of eighteen foreigners out of which five were women, four boys and six; this was the turning point in current war which ignited the agency. Thus it was not the religion or the affiliation with Taliban rather a misjudged cultural act resulted in creating a Domino factor.

### **Zarb-e-Azb. An Unfinished Affair**

Pakistan Army launched the operation against the militants in North Waziristan ‘Operation Zarb-e- Azb’ on 15<sup>th</sup> June 2014, just months after the new Chief of Army Staff General Raheel Sharif took control after almost six years of extended command by his predecessor General Kayani., who has been alleged by his own under command of being afraid of Taliban backlash in case of an operation in North Waziristan Agency.<sup>135</sup> Thus the operation in North Waziristan became a matter of prestige and ego apart from an operational necessity.

‘Zarb –e-Azab is not merely an operation, it is an concept, it is a resolve and a commitment to nation’.<sup>136</sup>In the first year, no less than 700 Intelligence based operations {IBO}, 250 minor and only one major operation was conducted in North Waziristan Agency, army suffered 316 shaheed{dead} and 3200 wounded casualties where as terrorist suffered 2729 killed, 1000 hideouts destroyed and 253 tons of explosives were also recovered.<sup>137</sup>The army spokesman has termed it as the war of survival “This is the biggest and most well-coordinated operation ever conducted against terrorists. It is

---

135 [http://www.bbc.com/urdu/pakistan/2014/06/140630\\_waziristan\\_delay\\_kayani\\_blame\\_zz.shtml](http://www.bbc.com/urdu/pakistan/2014/06/140630_waziristan_delay_kayani_blame_zz.shtml) <http://www.dawn.com/news/1116115>

136 General Raheel Sharif addressing the passing out parade of Pakistan Military academy on 18<sup>th</sup> October 2014. See *Hilal* the Pakistan Armed Forces magazine, June 2015, p-27.

137 *Hilal*, June 2015, p-21. Army did not released the number of terrorist apprehended or wounded



the beginning of the end for terrorism in the country,”<sup>138</sup>. Operation Zarb-e-Azab is in fact the reversal of Operation Curzon, there by occupation of same area/cantonments which were vacated by army in 1947.

When the operation was launched it was conveyed by the army spokesman that it would be over in a week, than prime minister hoped it will be over by mid of Ramadan and finally defence minister expressing that no time frame can be given. Such statements are a relic of 1936 Campaign when similar hopes were expressed but the campaign lasted for well over a decade<sup>139</sup>. Now the current operation after two years of fighting practically stands on the same standard as it was on first day. Presently, there is curfew imposed for movement of military convoys, troops still cannot go to the bazaar for fear of safety, posts are still being attacked; same was the situation between the 2005-2014. Only difference being that in period prior to July 2005, troops were

The usual military term of it lasting till the achievement of peace and the end of terrorism in the area are too broad and can fire back politically and militarily. If and when the operation is terminated then even blasting of a lone Improvised Explosive Device {IED} or a suicidal attack on military convoy will pose a serious question on the success of the operation. Keeping in view the past history of the area, this is very much on card.

## **Conclusion**

History is a living thing, our present is rooted in our past,

---

138 <http://www.dawn.com/news/1115371/zarb-i-azb-is-war-of-survival-says-ispr-chief>, dated,

139 For more details on 1936 -1947 campaign see Cabinet Papers of British Government, <http://www.nationalarchives.gov.uk/cabinetpapers/>

geographical and cultural realities are a fact. North Waziristan has never been peaceful<sup>140</sup> in its last one hundred years of history, it highlights an increase in violence whenever army prolong its presence, thus hypothesis of its behaving differently this time is defying the historical logic. Operation Zarb-e-Azb , was a test case, had it been over as per plan, it would have defied the history; but unfortunately that is not the case.

The rule of majority {democracy} is being taken as the ultimate recipe for the enduring peace in the world without realising that it cannot be applied equally everywhere. By applying the Western thoughts and philosophy in North Waziristan without taking into consideration the geographical, historical and cultural realities, the idea of peace will remain a distant dream. The war itself took birth because of western standards of law and justice, In USA, even today the religious tribes {Mennonites , Amish} and sects are living a way of life, in which women wear traditional dress, there is no electricity in house, children are educated in own schools, for transportation the horse driven carriages are used, {Philadelphia and Virginia States}. In Europe the borders have been opened for the countries of union, similar provisions must be given to own tribes to move freely across Durand Line. Thus the conflict is rooted in the different paradigms, whereas tribe are adhering to ancient way of life in which borders and restrictions on cultural values are antagonism , on the other hand, the modern states are based upon Western mechanism; in which borders , boundaries, international commitment and use of force as the first necessity are the integral part of this structure.

One of the major factor in the failure of military to subdue the

---

<sup>140</sup> The term peace is relative in nature, in NWA, the period between 1947-2005 can be termed as peaceful in terms of ammunition expended by state and number of casualties suffered by militia and army in agency.

tribes lies in the varying cultures among army, militia and air force. Militia's effectiveness in countering the tribal threat has been a matter of suspicion yet it was Militia which opened up the inaccessible tribal areas in North Waziristan between 2001-2005 without any major casualty, on the other hand, army despite its firepower has not been able to pacify the tribes, therefore, logically, the operational command of the agency should be reverted back to the political agent and militia. Army has attained the notion of victory after the launching of Zarb-e-Azb, prolong operation will decay this notion,

### **FATA 2017; Convoluted Reforms**

In March 2017, the cabinet approved in principle the most drastic reforms since 1901, whereby FATA will be merged into the Khyber Pakhtunkhwa province in next five years.<sup>lxii</sup> Immediately tribes raised their voices over this merger. These reforms were initiated by the prime minister in 2015, in the wake of military operation launched in North Waziristan; he set up a six member committee to recommend reforms in FATA. Fundamentally, the committee was headed by Ministry of Foreign Affairs, alongwith the Ministry of States and Frontier {SAFRON} which governs FATA; however the Ministry of Interior and Narcotics Control was excluded. Thus the very composition of the committee later paved the way for major shortcomings in terms of security and border management in relation to the reforms recommended. It must be kept in view, that these ministries work on Weber's bureaucratic system. This intricate and irrational distribution of responsibilities on frontier among ministries is perhaps the basic flaw in our structure. Religion<sup>lxiii</sup> and narcotics<sup>lxiv</sup> have been the two constant causes of violence in frontier since 1900, thus any committee which probes FATA should have both ministries as components {Ministry of religious affairs and ministry of interior }.

One of the basic flaws in reforms since 1973, when the tribal areas were segregated into PATA and FATA, has been to take the FATA as a single entity rather than a conglomerate of independent tribes. From 1935, Government of India Act till 1973, Forward Policy dictated that these tribes and tribal areas should not be subject to the normal course of legislature and judiciary. Subsequent constitutions like 1956, 1962, 1970 Legal Frame Work Order, 1972 Interim Constitution; all kept the judicial and legislature orders and acts, implementation in tribal areas subject to the approval of President of Pakistan. This special treatment of the tribal areas have been presented by liberals, democrats, idealists and feminists as draconian and a negation of fundamental rights as enshrined in the constitution. What is overlooked is the fact that, Forward Policy ultimately caused the demise of Russia in 1990. These tribes as such are not discriminated against, rather they are the only area in Pakistan where people are allowed to live according to their customs, possess arms, decide disputes among themselves and possess duty free vehicles, and live tax free. In 1947, there were only 7 schools in FATA, at present over 5300 schools are operating in FATA. <sup>lxv</sup>

PATA encompasses two provinces, as Marri, Bugti and Chagai are part of the Balochistan province, whereas Chitral, Dir, Swat, Malakand, part of Manshehra, Kohistan falls into Khyber Pakhtunkhwa province(KPK); all being part of PATA. <sup>lxvi</sup> Thus it can be seen that term PATA is heterogeneous in nature and as such no law, act or reforms can be applied across the whole of PATA. While entire FATA lies within the KPK, it not only comprised of seven political agencies but also the six Frontier Regions. To treat all of these tribes with a uniform reform and act has been the cardinal error in these reforms of 2017. Only recently, in 2010, two new areas were included (Lakki Marwat and Tank) as frontier regions, <sup>lxvii</sup> thus present reforms are in fact a reversion of the earlier reforms.

The premise of the reforms revolves around Idealism, where democracy is taken as a cure of present violence. This very concept of democracy, treating all as equal in selection of representatives, by granting adult franchise, is another major cause of prolonged violence in tribal areas. Thus in those political agencies where a single tribe is inhabiting, as in Khyber Agency which is overwhelmingly Afridi, democracy has not been able to alter the centuries old system and riwaj. Same holds true for Orakzai. In Kurram the factor is sectarian affiliation; thus Turi are elected. In case of most troublesome, North Waziristan, Daur are more in terms of voters<sup>lxviii</sup>, thus Wazir the real players have been side lined. The end result is that the very representatives of FATA which have voiced in favour of the reforms, in terms of merger with KPK and repealing of FCR are infact not the true representatives of FATA. The Western system of democracy, which was applied in FATA from 1998 has shrouded the political representation of the tribes; the major and minor(hamsaya) tribes have been placed in same category.

The committee recommends induction of 20,000 Levies. Political Agent as an institution has been criticised by the committee; not because of his inefficiency but on the principle of one official enjoying legislative, judicial and law enforcing powers. In the eighty odd pages of report, the word Militia is used only once, there is no mention of how these Militia will work in the coming years.<sup>lxix</sup> The most glaring omission in the committee reforms is the Militia (Frontier Corps). Levies have been highlighted at length; providing them with standard uniform, new equipment and training, while the Frontier Corps has been overlooked in totality. It seems as if the committee has been unable to grasp the philosophy behind these two outfits. Whereas Levies is enrolled, trained, paid and commanded by the political agent directly, the Frontier Corps on the other hand,

although comes under command political agent, yet its command structure is on deputation from military. Thus Militia has more firepower, manpower and more importantly it enrolls all tribes {with exceptions<sup>lxx</sup>} who live and work together in the form of Qaum, Levies on the other hand are recruited only from the specified political agency and remains within the political agency. The committee has hinted at restricting Militia only along the Pakistan –Afghanistan frontier, by increasing the number of wings, however unlike Levies the number is not specified. The whole purpose of these reforms are based upon establishing a no war zone in FATA, thus by overlooking such vital component in war against militancy (Militia) the committee has defied its own logic. Despite the decade and half campaign on frontier and against the militancy , no effort has been made to bring all of the under one ministry. This diffusion results in lack of equipment, weapons, facilities, and sharing of intelligence among them

### **Why FATA, Why not PATA?**

The preamble of the present reforms are based upon the fact that '*insurgents have used FATA to train and recruit fighters...it is planned to transform FATA into a region free of war...FATA has been governed through colonial era system*'.<sup>lxxi</sup> To envision an area free of war is denying the basic element of human nature, any reforms which aims at absolute elimination of war is not based on realism but hoping for an Utopia. To single out FATA as the breeding ground of fighters recruitment is also void of facts; it is not only FATA but also PATA as well which contributes in terms of violence , recruitment of fighters and challenges to writ of state.

The major operations of military were not only launched in FATA

but also in PATA. The very first insurgency in post reforms started in Marri area in Balochistan in 1974-1977. Again, major insurgency in Malakand and Swat in 1992. In Post 9/11, Bugti area in Balochistan {2005-2007}, Swat { 2007-2009}<sup>lxxii</sup> Upper and Lower Dir,<sup>lxxiii</sup> Chitral {2011}, Kohistan {2002-2003}. Thus to aim at reforms in FATA exclusively, thereby overlooking PATA, in an effort to eliminate violence and militancy is void of rationality and logic. As far as the colonial era legislative and judicial system is concerned, the very fact that the legal system of Pakistan, The Pakistan Penal Code itself is based upon laws of 1860 and 1898, negates that assumption. Among the 182 laws in operation in Pakistan, no less than 50 laws and acts date back to colonial era including the Arms Act {1878}, Explosive Act {1884} Boilers Act {1923} Official Secret Act {1923} to name few. Thus the connotation of relating the violence in FATA to colonial era act defies logic. If this logic is accepted, then all laws that date back to British era should be repealed. It is better to debate the clauses of a certain law or act, rather than discarding them, on the basis of being colonial in nature. Frontier Crimes Regulations {FCR} has been cited as the major irritant, which the committee, through its interaction, meetings with local and native tribes in FATA has reached. Interestingly, the committee has highlighted and noted the difference of opinion among the tribes as far as FCR is concerned, 'elders are in favour of retaining FCR whereas youngsters are in favour of its repealing'.

The committee, like all other studies, seminars, papers dealing with FATA has relied heavily upon mathematical figures, as the scientific data to give support to its hypothesis. Through this supposition data the committee attempted to highlight poverty, deprivation and lack of infrastructure in FATA and resultantly applied the Marxist theory, assuring the public that as soon as gap

between numbers { in FATA vs rest of Pakistan} are narrowed, the graph of violence will also drop. The data itself is contradictory in nature, and leads to incorrect deductions. For instance, to deal with the whole of FATA in terms of area, population, density, per capita income, education and literacy rate, is irrational in nature. Bajaur, Mohmand and Khyber have more population thus they have high density whereas Waziristan on the other hand have more area but less population; therefore all the data based upon these facts will have be dichotomous and may favour only the Peshawar Frontier Regions(Northern half).

### **Sociology the Classic Statements.<sup>141</sup>**

*Clausewitz a 19th century Prussian military philosopher in his epic 'On War' has stated war as an extension of policy, he further highlights that defence is the more strong type of military operations than offense. Nicola Machiavelli a 14th century Italian was the first one to highlight the importance of militia in the national defence, this he stated in his 'Art of War'. Thus having affirmed that war or violence are integral part of human civilisation the key query as to why a permanent peace has not been attained in North Waziristan; partially offset the 'Contact Hypothesis' theory. In a broad spectrum the very concept of Two Nation Theory is modified to Two Civilisation Theory thus having varying nations within the states, the friction among nations thus becomes paramount.*

American Sociological Association was created in 1865 with an aim ' to guide the public mind to the best possible means of promoting the amendments of law, advancement of education, prevention and repression of crimes and reformation of criminals', initially every college sociology lectures were given by the Protestant ministers.<sup>142</sup>In

141 Marcello Trizzi,ed, *Sociology the classic statements* (New York, Random House,1971).

142 Paul Lazarsfeld, Jeffrey Reitz, *An Introduction to Applied Sociology*, (NewYork: El-



1893 department of sociology was formed in University of Chicago and in 1894, the first graduate department in sociology was created in Columbia University, similarly in 1895 the first professional journal was published. It gave rise to early survey movement by Paul Young emphasising on the wages and family. In 1912, Russel Sage foundation created a department of survey and information, by 1928 this department has carried out 2000 surveys. In 1923, a social science research council(SSRC) was established, its main emphasis was on the methods. The first publication was in 1931 by Stuart Rice on Methods in social science, all in all 52 contributors emphasized on the methodology. One of the major study was on Polish Peasant, a review was carried by Herbert Blumer, the main emphasis was 'whether the diaries and letters on which Polish Peasant was based adequately supported the main conclusion of the study.'<sup>143</sup> The SSRC thus coined the term 'personal document' through its bulletin to cover all qualitative material including open ended interviews.<sup>144</sup> Sampling procedures were first used in England before 1914, in USA it was employed mainly for market research, however it was the USA army which introduced tests during the WW1. In mid-thirties, the Gallup's institute of public opinion research and the journal Psychometric was formed. The first major books a 1500 page on recent social trends in USA was published. Another landmark research was carried out in 1939-40 in USA by Princeton University on public opinion research, it was conducted by Hadley Contriff. After the Pearl harbour an increased interest was shown in content analysis, sampling surveys, detailed interviews and laboratory experiments and to understand group dynamics. It was Kurt Lewin a German who in 1938 had coined the term 'action research' and also the term Group Dynamics. In Germany, the notion of Handlung

---

sevier,1975),p-1.

143 Paul Lazerfeld, *An Introduction to Sociology*, p-3.

144 Ibid.

or human action was the centre of all social research studies. In fact, Kurt's student Alfred Marrow wrote the Practical Theories, Lewin later carried out an experiment in his student's factory to understand the individual attitude in terms of the factory output. He later wrote about the individual attitudes and decision-making under the influence of small groups. In 1948, the term applied sociology was used in very small conference in America, later another term social engineer was coined by Lazerfeld in Norway in same year, aim of both was to make at par this sociology with science.

Over a period of time, sociology has been defined in various terms. **Auguste Comte** (1798-1857) was the very first to give it a name of sociology, for him it was a new religion based upon scientific principles, which he called positivism. He wanted the laws and government to be based upon the human laws just as the laws of physics and chemistry. Pit ram A. Sorokin (1889-1968) a Russian wrote over 36 books and 300 articles, to him sociology was the studies of the properties of the super organic that are presented in time and space. **Max Weber** (1864-1920) a German consider it as historical and cultural science. George Simmel (1858-1918) a German was more concerned with what is a society? Edward Taylor (1832-1917) was the founder of **cultural anthropology**, culture or civilisation taken in its wide ethnographic sense is that complex whole which includes knowledge, behaviour, art, morals, law and customs. Emile Durkheim (1858-1917) a French wrote 'there are no human events which may not be called as social facts. Herbert Spencer (1820-1903) a British, raises the question of '**what is society?**' and replied that society is a collective name for a number of individuals, to him society is an organism. William Graham Spencer (1840-1910) an American, introduced the term '**Folkways and Mores**'. To him folkways or instincts begin with instincts and thoughts, and young

ones learned them through traditions, initiation and authority. Mores on the other hand are the folkways raised to an upper level, when the elements of truth and right are developed into doctrines of welfare; mores are in necessity consist of taboos.

Ferdinand Tonnes (1855-1936) a German introduced the term **Gemeinschaft** or community and **Gesellschaft** or society. Karl Marx (1818-1883) and Freidrich Engels (1820-1895) brought forward the **class conflicts**. G.H. Mead (1863-1931) an American introduced the term of mind as a product of social interest. Similarly, William Lloyd Warner (1898-1970) highlighted the **social class** in America. Another American Edwin Harder Sutherland (1883-1950) brought forward **White-Collar Criminality**, a paper written in 1940 and highlighted that crimes as officially measured and popularly conceived has high incidence in lower class than in in upper class.

### Case Study

A case study is defined as in-depth multi-faceted investigation using qualitative research methods, definition is intentionally broad. Case study can be that of an organisation, a city, it can be even be an entire group of people. There are several types of qualitative research that have been termed as case studies, including ethnography or field research. Social history of a social group also qualifies as case studies when they are conducted on the past experiences of a group. Similarities between the civil wars and revolutions also fall under case study. Case studies invoke no more general properties than those supplied by its own data.

Case studies method receives only limited attention in current textbooks on social research.<sup>145</sup>

---

145 Joe R. Feagin, Anthony M. Drum, Gideon Syoberg *A case for case study* (University of North Carolina, 1991), pp. 1-27.

## Grounded Theory<sup>146</sup>

Chicago tradition is associated with down to earth qualitative research, Barney Glasser and Anselm L Strauss highlighted that in post war sociology there is a gap between theory and empirical research; an embarrassing gap. They wrote that not everyone can equally skilled at discovering theory but neither do they need to be genius to generate useful theory, we believe that the discovery of theory from data which we call grounded theory. Their main point was that previous books on methods of social research have focussed on how to verify theories. The job of theory to them was, to enable prediction and explanation of behaviour, to be useful in theoretical advance in sociology and finally to provide a perspective on behaviour.<sup>147</sup>

Herbert Blumer stated that the aim of theory in empirical science is to develop analytical schemes, this is done by conceiving the world abstractly, that is in terms of objects and of relations between such classes.<sup>148</sup>

Grounded Theory gains a reputation and reverence among researchers, as it allows them the freedom of carrying out a research without any preconceived biases. The theory itself owes its origin to the two researchers namely Barney Glaser and Andrew Strauss who conducted research on a nursing home and later wrote *The Discovery of Grounded Theory* (Chicago, 1967). Over a period of time the Grounded Theory became so popular and debatable

---

146 Barney G.Glasser, ed, *Grounded Theory 1984-1994, volume 1 and 2* (Sociology Press, California,1995)

147 Barney G.Glasser , Anselm L.Strauss *The Discovery of Grounded Theory strategies for qualitative research* (Chicago,Aldine,1967).

148 Herbert Blumer, 'What is wrong with Social Theory', in William Filstead,ed, *Qualitative Methodology: first hand investigation with the social world* (Chicago: Markham, 1970),p-52.

that Glaser had to write and edit it in 1995 as Grounded Theory 1984-1994. He wrote 'I can create grounded theory methodology, I can write grounded theory and I can teach grounded theory but I cannot control how grounded theory methodology is used. It is a high impact methodology changing the perspectives of many researchers and beginning to change the approach and perspective of many disciplines. Grounded theory is a 'free at last' approach to preconceived methods

*Grounded theory stands on its own as a theory of method which yields a full range of methodological techniques from entering the field of data collection to final writing. It is just another methodology, researcher should choose what is the best method for the problem in hand.*

Glaser further wrote, I have discovered that there are very few teachers of grounded theory, researchers perforce have, get together, read books and teach each other.

Glaser favours an open mindedness in research, 'my goal in writing grounded theory methodology was and is to empower researchers with an open, generative, emergent methodology...goal was not to tell them what to find or how to force it out of the data but to do research that allows the emergence of 'what is going on'. In the end Glaser the founder of the theory states that 'grounded theory is merely a methodological option...it is what it is and works with any data as all is data for generating'. The term 'all is data' means leaving time and place behind., so the researcher can go anywhere to find any form of data. The main point is that a researcher should enter the field with no preconceived interests.

The researchers who have used this theory in methodology highlights, 'hypothesis gleaned either from data or from literature

review or a combination of both...I think the strongest case for the use of grounded theory is in investigating of relatively uncharted waters or to gain fresh perspective in a familiar situation'.<sup>149</sup>

Memoing. Memoing is a method of preserving emerging hypothesis, analytical schemes, hunches and abstractions. They are sparked by the data and in this way, they are grounded. Ideas for analysis occur at uneven pace and at unlikely hours, these ideas are captured first on scraps of paper, later on typewritten pages or cards.<sup>150</sup> Similarly the production of the research report differs from the more familiar reports of quantitative studies, in it, they differ by employing literature, absence of numerical data and use of field notes. Thus, in place of numbers concepts are supported in the report by examples from field data.

Collection of data in grounded theory is also empirical in nature, it may be collected from interviews, observations or documents or a combination of these sources, for example in a study on stepfather, the data was gleaned from telephone calls and letters.<sup>151</sup>

### **The Research Craft<sup>152</sup>**

The question of what constitute a proper theory is a confusing matter so much so that there is a serious question about the theoretical status of much that social scientist claims to be theory. Those argues that much of what passes as theory in the social science little more than elaborate classificatory schemes. Axiomatic Theory refers to

149 Phyliss Noerager Stern *Grounded Theory Methodology: Its uses and processes*. First published Image February 1980, vol 12. Barney G.Glasser, ed, Grounded Theory 1984-1994, volume 1 and 2 (Sociology Press, California,1995),pp.29-33.

150 Ibid, Phyliss Noerager Grounded theory.

151 Phyliss Noerager carried out a study on the stepfather families in 1976, with an aim to know how a stepfather is integrated into the existing family.

152 John Williamson,David Karp, John Dalphin *The research Craft an introduction to the social science methods* ( Boston, Little Brown, 1977)

a notion of theory in which manipulation of a set of interrelated propositions using the rules of logic are employed in an effort to explain some class of empirical phenomena

Hypothesis are statements of predictive relationship between two or more variables, must be set out in such a way that the researcher will clearly be able to measure each of the variables named, which may be sex, education, income, achievement, motivation and delinquency they all are variables, that they are characteristics, attitudes or behaviours which can be measured and which take one, two or more values. (p-43)

Theories are never proved, we simply provide evidence through the testing of hypothesis derived from the theory, that the theory is not incorrect. There is always possibility that our collected data may continually support our hypothesis and that our theory may still be wrong.

Tautological theory, is the one which cannot be proved false because of the logic of its construction.

Researchers may approach the acquisition of knowledge from a number of different methodological and theoretical perspectives and still be judged to be conforming to the logic of scientific inquiry. (p14). There are two fundamental methods, one is direct participant observation and other is rather an objective in which through the surveys and questionnaires a data is collected.

### **Discovery and Verification**

The conventional scientific wisdom rests upon the notion that researcher does not begin a piece of research without first defining

the problem and one or more hypothesis to be tested, often done on the basis of previous scientific studies and theories. Such research is termed *a priori* research. Thus, questionnaires fall into the category of *a priori* research as questions are formed before the data collection. Thus, the main emphasis is to test a number of hypothesis or theoretical notions specified at the outset of research. Alternatively, as Glaser and Strauss point out the emphasis of qualitative research is with discovery of substantive theory. Participant observation is normally not guided by an *a priori* development of hypothesis, concepts and measurement procedures.

The same procedure may be defined as Inductive and Deductive modes of inquiry.

An Inductive approach is the one in which the acquisition of knowledge or the process of research work out from actual data to the development of theoretical models, thus theoretical statements are built out of the data that the researcher has collected.

A Deductive approach on the other hand begins with broad abstract theoretical statements generated independently of the data, these interrelated statement propositions are then tested by acquiring data to see if the data fit the theoretical propositions. (p-16)

Thus, Charles Darwin employed an Inductive approach and Newton followed a deductive approach. In a deductive approach the function of data is to verify the researchers' theory.



## Field Study<sup>153</sup>

‘An investigator is never able to shake off entirely his role of outsider and I am in accord with those who maintain that it is not advisable for him to do so, some exceptionally valuable information comes to the outsider simply because he is one’. <sup>154</sup>

Fieldwork is a method of gathering in-depth data about the meaning of structure, moral codes and social behaviour of particular cultural groups or the individual who compose their membership. <sup>155</sup>

The experiences of field workers have not been systematically reported and as a result a whole area of methodological skills- the human relations skills which go with the social researcher’s role has remained relatively uncoded.

In another article named as Getting Individuals to give information to the outsiders by Fred H.Blum (p-83). It highlights the experience gained at George Hormel Company at Austin in 1948, it was a two years field work aiming at understanding the relationship of workers with the industrial and social process.

## Participant Observation

Phenomenology and participant Observation were termed as the new empiricists , whereas phenomenology is regarded as an European tradition the participation observation is more an American way of research but fundamentally both stress of going into research

---

153 William J.Filstead ed, *Qualitative Methodology: Firsthand involvement with the social world.* (Chicago,Markham,1971).H.M.Trice *The Outsider role in field study*, *Sociology and social research* 1941,pp 27-32.

154 H.M.Trice *The Outsider role in field study*, *Sociology and social research* 1941,pp 27-32.

155 Jennifer Hunt, *Psychoanalytic aspects of field work qualitative research methods* (London: Sage,1989),p-11.

with an open mind, without any preconceived hypothesis ‘ they are creating new procedures and perspectives in the study of man in society, that breaks fundamentally with those of the older school of scientific empiricism’.<sup>156</sup>

Another study was carried on the **participant observation** as employed in the study of a military training program<sup>157</sup>. The aim of the study was to gain an insight into the motivation and attitudes of personnel in training, with a view to reduce the incidences of discipline. Thus, a researcher was enlisted as a basic trainee, his real identity was kept as secret to the group, ‘there were literally thousands of problems to overcome, not only in deciding how the study would be conducted but also in determining how the participant-observer would be guided in his work, the things to be looked for or recorded if observed, the form reports should take and how the data would be used after the study was completed’. Some of the findings are interesting as they are pertinent today. For instance, the trainees initially look towards their instructors for leadership but slowly they learnt to make short cuts and realise that certain things are never checked by the instructors. During the research, the trainees were given questionnaires four times, having thirty-seven questions to reflect the subject’s attitudes towards aspects of their training.

In drawing a comparison between the participant observation and interviewing, the researchers highlight that by participant observation they mean, the method in which the observer participates

---

156 Severyn T.Bruyn The New Empiricists: The participant observer and phenomenologist. *Sociology and social research*,51: 317-22, also see Severyn Bruyn *The human Perspective in Sociology* (New York:Prentice-Hall,1966).

157 William J.Filstead ed, *Qualitative Methodology: Firsthand involvement with the social world*. (Chicago,Markham,1971),pp.91-99.Mortimer Sullivan, Stuart Queen, Ralph Patrick. Participant Observation as employed in the study of a military training program, *American Sociological Review*,23,660-67.

in the daily life of the people under study, either openly in the role of researcher or covertly in some disguised role. Observing things that happen, listening to what is said and questioning people, over some length of time.<sup>158</sup> Both Becker and Geer highlighted the knowledge gained from two methods, in their opinion as long as the interviewer is explaining or sharing the experience which he saw himself the value of interview is as good as the participant observation but when the researcher tends to gather knowledge from a person through an interview in which he was not present than its value diminished.

Both researchers later highlighted the loss of data when any other method is employed in gathering of data other than the participant observation. Later Howard Becker further delved upon the methodology by highlighting the problem of inference and proof.<sup>159</sup> *'sociologist usually use this method when they are especially interested in understanding a particular organisation or substantive problem rather than demonstrating relation between abstractly defined variables, they attempt to make their research theoretically meaningful but they assume that they do not know enough about the organisation a priori to identify relevant problems and hypothesis and that they must discover these in the course of the research'*.<sup>160</sup> (He went on to highlight his own research experience on medical students in Kansas where no less than 5000 single spaced pages were gathered). To him, observational research produces an immense amount of detailed description, the problem starts as how to interpret the data which is not only rich but varied, its analysis

---

158 Howard Becker , Blanche Geer 'participant observation and interviewing: a comparison' was originally published in ' Human Organisation',16: 28-32 and included in William J.Filstead ed, *Qualitative Methodology: First hand involvement with the social world*. (Chicago,Markham,1971),pp.133-145. The study by Becker and Geer was regarding the medical students.

159 Howard Becker 'Problem of Inference and proof in participant observation,' *The American Sociological Review*,23: 652-60.

160 Ibid.

in systematically manner and its conclusion so as to convince other scientist of its validity.

The three distinct stages of analysis conducted in the field itself. First and foremost is the selection and definition of problem, concepts and indices, second is the check on the frequency and distribution of phenomena and the incorporation of individual findings into a model. The fourth stage of final analysis involves problem of presentation of evidence and proof.

### **Selection and definition of problems, concepts and indices**

In this stage which is the first stage in field, the observer looks for problems and concepts that give promise of yielding the greatest understanding of the organisation he is studying, the typical conclusion that his data yields are the simple one that a given phenomenon exists, that a certain event occurred once or that two phenomena were observed to be related in one instance, the conclusion says anything about the frequency or distribution off observed phenomenon.

By placing such observation in the context of social theory the observer selects concepts and defines problems. For instance, in Frontier Corps the word Qaum and Watan is used and I heard it, as being 'he belongs to my qaum and he belongs to other qaum, he is my handiwal'. Thus, these terms have to be defined and theorised. 'occupants of one social category in an institution classify members of other categories by criteria derived by the ethnicity of other person'.

<sup>161</sup>Thus, the observed fact and theory directs him(researcher) to see the organisation in terms of qualmm. By further questioning and continued observation, researcher may develop specific hypothesis

---

<sup>161</sup> Ibid,

about the nature of these men; as I formed a hypothesis of these Pathans being a racist people and among them the wazir considering himself as superior to the Daur.

Use of indicator is important and needs bit of classification. Becker highlights that conclusion about single event also lead the observer to decide on specific item which might be used as indicators of less easily observed phenomenon. Thus, in his case the medical student complaining about the degree of work, that he has to work on weekends to lead the Becker to use complaint about the weekend work as an indicator of student perspective on the amount of work he has to do. Observer may become aware of some very specific phenomenon first and later see that may be used as an indicator of some larger class of problem or he may have the larger problem in mind and search for specific indicators to use in studying it.

Credibility of informants. Many items of evidence given by the statements of the group cannot be taken t face value and neither to be brushed aside as valueless. The method of historian in examining of personal documents have to be employed, thus informants background, whether he have a reason to lie or conceal some of what he has seen as truth. Does vanity or expediency lead him to misstate his own role in an event or his attitude towards it? did he actually have an opportunity to witness the occurrence he describes or is it hearsay. The sociological proposition is that an individual's statement and description of events are made from a perspective which is a function of his position in the group.<sup>162</sup>

---

162 Howard Becker, *Problems of inference and proof*.

## The Methods of Field Studies

The two methods usually thought of as characteristics of the investigator in the field, he invariably keeps a daily log of events and of relatively casual informal continuous interviews. Almost invariably he also develops informants, that is selected members who are willing and able to give information about practices and rules in the organisation. The three methods of field research which is taken as primary are

First. Participant-observation, in this field observer directly observes and also participates, in a sense that he has durable social relations in the organisation. Second is Informant-Interviewing; in it the informant is passing on the information about the events in which he is not a participant, he is reporting about others and not about himself, his information about events in their absence. The third method is Enumeration and samples. In this the surveys are direct and indirect, repeated, countable observation.<sup>163</sup>

### Constructing questions<sup>164</sup>

Theory of question wording has not been as far advanced as one might wish, asking question is widely accepted as a cost efficient and some time as the only way of gathering information about past behaviour and experience. In 1940-41, 25% of the 85 empirical studies depended upon interviews and questionnaires, in 1965-66, it was 48% and in 1967-68, 64 % of 136 research papers were based upon verbal reports.<sup>165</sup> However there are certain limitations in

---

163 Morris Zelditch 'Some Methodological Problems of Field Studies', *American Journal of Sociology*, 67: 566-76.

164 William Foddy, *Constructing questions for interview and questionnaires, theory and practice in social research* (Cambridge: 1993).

165 William Foddy, *Constructing questions for interview and questionnaires, theory and practice in social research* (Cambridge: 1993), p.2.

this methodology, for instance in 1951, in a random sample of 900 Denver residents, 17% gave incorrect answer regarding their age, which differ from 1-3 years. In another hallmark study, La Pierre in 1934-35, spend some time travelling in USA with a Chinese couple, they stayed at 66 hotels/motels and 184 restaurants where they wanted to eat, only one establishment refused them to serve. Six months later, La Pierre wrote to all these establishment asking whether they will accept Chinese are as guests, only 50% replied and among them 90% said no. Thus the major finding of the study was that the people differ in what they say on paper and what they do in reality.<sup>166</sup>

Thus the very act of gathering information through mere questions is a highly risky affair. The Phenomenological or subjectivist point of view which is accepted by a wide range of researchers, follows collection of data through a prolonged intimate immersion in the social interaction in question or the use of non-directive, open questions that respondent answer in their own words rather than in terms of pre-set response categories. This method consists of interacting with the native members as much as possible until their way of life has been absorbed. competence is indicated when the new member can act in new situation with confidence and without making mistakes.<sup>167</sup>

Irwin Deutscher remarked, our scientific conclusion for the most part is based upon analysis of verbal responses to the questions put by an interviewer thus responses may be written or oral and the

---

<sup>166</sup> Ibid,p-3.

<sup>167</sup> H.M Collins , ' Meaning of lies, accounts of action and participatory researcher' in G.M.Gilbert and P.Abdul,eds. *Survey conference on Sociological Theory and Method*. (Aldershot: Gower),p-15.

questions may range from forced choice to open ended, but the fact remains that we obtain from such methods are mere statements of attitude, opinion, norms, values, anticipation or recall.<sup>168</sup>

**Symbolic Interactionist Theory**, the term was coined sociologist Herbert Blumer, ‘social actors in any social situation are constantly negotiating a shared definition of the situation, taking one another viewpoint into accounts.’<sup>169</sup>

### **Concepts and Coding.**

Condensing the bulk of our data sets into analysable units by creating categories with and from data is known as coding, it is part of process of analysis and not the analysis itself. The data analysis comprises of, data reduction, data display and conclusion. There is no single right or most appropriate way of analysing qualitative data. Coding can be thought of as a range of approaches, that aid the organisation, rechecking and interpretation of the data.<sup>170</sup>

### **Interviewing**

The establishment of a good human contact with the person from one intends to draw the social information is vital and was highlighted by Fred Blumer ‘the interviewer-conversation as developed in this project is rather a unique combination of interviewing and exchanging information.’<sup>171</sup>

---

168 Irwin Deutscher ‘Words and deeds social science and social policy’, in William Filstead,ed. *Qualitative methodology: First hand involvement with the social world* (Chicago: Markham,1970),p-27.

169 William Foddy , *Constructing questions for interview and questionnaires, theory and practice in social research* ( Cambridge: 1993),p.21.

170 Amanda Coffey, Paul Atkinson, *Making Sense of qualitative data, complementary research strategies* (London: Sage,1996),pp.6-27.

171 Fred Blumer ‘getting individuals to give information to the outsider ‘ in William Filstead,ed. *Qualitative methodology: First hand involvement with the social world* (Chicago: Markham,1970). Fred Blum carried out a research in 1948 at Austin Minnesota in a George Hormel packaging company.



Inductive reasoning corresponds to probability uncertain, approximate reasoning and as such it corresponds to everyday reasoning. Thus, induction is from specific to general whereas deduction is from general to specific. Thus, after observing that many dogs bark, one may induce that all dogs bark on the other hand a fancy that all dogs bark one may deduce that a particular dog will bark. Elaborating it further, we may say that dogs have heart thus all mammals have heart, it is an inductive argument going from specific to general. A deductive reasoning would be, all mammals have heart thus dogs have heart; this is going from general to specific.

Diversity principle. It is better to have sample from a diversified data than from a more glued data base. Take example of rice on a truck, it is better to have sample from various stacks rather than having more rice from one stack.<sup>172</sup>

Logic. Logic is may to be said to be the study of correct and incorrect reasoning, it has two branches, formal (symbolic) and philosophical. Propositional calculus, lays down the symbolic p, q, r thereby laying negative conjunction and disjunction.

An **argument** is generally said to be valid if the conclusion follows from the premises. It is invalid if the conclusion does not follow from the premise. Take example of ‘it is raining and he went home, so he went home; it is valid argument. An invalid argument is, He went home so it is raining and he went home.<sup>173</sup>

**Deduction.** A deduction consists in drawing a conclusion from a given body of evidence.

---

172 Aidam Feeney, Evan Heit, ed *Inductive Reasoning experimental development and computational analysis* . Cambridge,2007.pp.1-3.

173 Sybil Wolfram *Philosophical Logic an introduction*. (London, Routledge,1989)

**Logic** is basically the study of the rules and requirement of correct deduction.

**Argument.** Is a body of premises together with a conclusion?<sup>174</sup>

**Paradigm.** It was used by Kuhn in 1962 to refer to a conceptual framework and a body of assumption, belief and related methods.<sup>175</sup>

**Empirical Research.** <sup>176</sup>The three distinguishing characteristics of an empirical research are

- Verifiable nature or replicability, thus another research can also perform the same steps and gets the same results.
- Cumulative nature of empirical knowledge, thus the genre of questions (hypothesis) are very specific.
- The finiteness of empirical research.

Man by nature is timid and peaceful and at the least danger his first reaction is to flee, he only fights through the force of his habit and experience. Honour, interest, prejudice, vengeance all those passions which make him brave. Danger and death are results of state of nature, there is no war between the man it is only between the states<sup>177</sup> wrote Jean-Jacques Rousseau {1712-1778}. Another philosophical view as expressed by Emmerich De Vattel {1714-1767} revolves around two principles, first one declares that 'regular war as regards its effects must be accounted just on both sides' and

---

174 Richard Butrick *Deduction and Analysis* (2<sup>nd</sup> ed, Washington, University press of America, 1981), pp.1,3.

175 Theodore Barber *Pitfalls in human research the pivotal points* (Oxford, Pergamon, 1976), p.4.

176 Barker Bausel *A practical guide to conducting empirical research* (New York, Harper & Row, 1986)

177 M.G. Forsyth edited, *The theory of International Affairs selected texts from Gentili to Traitschke* {George Allen, London, 1970}, pp, 167-170.

second principles govern whatever is permitted to one because of the state of war is also permissible to the other<sup>178</sup>

Aristotle kept the war separate from political philosophy, Plato declares that military science and theory of warfare form a part of art of citizenship referring here to skill in the use of arms<sup>179</sup>. History is paramount in understanding the warfare, its causes are numerable, ranging from self defence, defence of property to ideologies; although certain thinkers tend to differ for instance Hugo Grotius {1583-1645} considers those wars as just which are undertaken against those who have committed sin against the nature<sup>180</sup> on the other hand Alberto Gentili {1552-1608} is of the opinion that religion is an individual matter and as such religious wars cannot be justified.

**State & Nation**, state is defined as ‘any body of people occupying a definite territory and political organised under one government’<sup>181</sup> where as nation is defined as ‘any aggregation of people having like institutions and customs and a sense of social homogeneity and mutual interest’. Ernest Renan stated in 1882 that that it is not only the common language but the fact that having accomplished great things in past the wish to accomplish the great things in future constitutes a nation. Thus a state may be composed of many nations<sup>182</sup>. There are categories of states like, strong state, weak state, failed state, coherent state, multinational state {state

---

178 M.G. Forsyth edited, The theory of International Affairs selected texts from Gentili to Traitschke {George Allen, London, 1970}, p 110.

179 M.G. Forsyth edited, The theory of International Affairs selected texts from Gentili to Traitschke {George Allen, London, 1970}, p - 18

180 Ibid, p-73.

181 Abdul Said, ed, Theory of International Relations, the crisis of Relevance {Prentice Hall, New Jersey, 1968} p-2.

182 Abdul Said, ed, Theory of International Relations, the crisis of Relevance {Prentice Hall, New Jersey, 1968} p-13. Stated by Hans Morgenthau.

comprising of two or more nations}, multi state nation { nation whose members live in two or more states}<sup>183</sup>

**Sovereignty.** No word is used in political science with greater meanings of word than sovereignty, ‘few political conceptions have been the subject of so much discussion among us in last 100 years’ professor Methwin,<sup>184</sup> It is often described as the supreme power over citizens and subjects without restrained by law.<sup>185</sup> Stated by Jean Bodwin {1530-1596}.

**Ideology.** ‘It is a cluster of ideas about life, society or government which originate in most cases as consciously advocated or dogmatically asserted. Social, political or religious slogans or battles cries and which through continuous usages and preachment gradually becomes the characteristics beliefs or dogmas of a particular group, party or nationality’<sup>186</sup>

## War

Thus one of the major difference in understanding the **nature of war** is in its justification and there are always two opinions that exists that is why nations or humans go to war. On the other hand apart from religious causes there are boundaries and Frontier disputes which have compelled the nations to exercise this option. This kind of disputes can be classified in four broad categories. In the first one

---

183 Mark armstanz, International Conflict & Co-operation, an introduction to world Politics, {Mcgraw Hill, London,1999},p-31.

184 Abdul Said, ed, Theory of International Relations, the crisis of Relevance {Prentice Hall, New Jersey, 1968},p-25

185 Mark armstanz, International Conflict & Co-operation, an introduction to world Politics, {Mcgraw Hill, London,1999}, p-28 also see Abdul Said, ed, Theory of International Relations, the crisis of Relevance {Prentice Hall, New Jersey, 1968},p-25

186 Abdul Said, ed, Theory of International Relations, the crisis of Relevance {Prentice Hall, New Jersey, 1968},p-82 as staed by Deottut Le Tracy {1754-1836}

there existed no regional boundary, neither delimited or demarcated and no mutually agreed treaty as well. The Anglo-Afghan wars 1839-1872 are the examples where there was no boundary between India and Afghanistan. It was finally agreed upon in 1893 under Durand Line agreement. In next category, there existed a boundary a defacto frontier either delimited in a treaty or map or even demarcated on the ground but the entire legitimacy is challenged by one party or the other. The Third Anglo-Afghan war of 1919 is a classic example of this kind. Pakistan – India war of 1965 over Rann of Kutch is another glaring example of this kind. In the third category there exists two rival delimitations sometimes deriving from different treaties, China – India conflict of 1962 falls in this category. Last is the type where a mutually agreed delimitation exists but dispute is about the demarcation on ground.<sup>187</sup> Frontier dispute between Saudi Arabia and Abu Dhabi, it was initially agreed upon between the Ottoman and Britain in 1914 but later Ibn Saud rejected it and issue erupted in 1949.

## **Notes on Theory**

With the passage of time the human evolved into tribes and from tribes into nations and states, we do not have any empirical evidence only hypothesis. The flood of Noah wiped out all traces of past and as such we anchored our quest and research on the philosophy of Greeks. They wrote histories of wars and from these the hypothesis and theories were formulated as why states resort to violence. The theory of idealism and realism took birth, the concept of democracy and warfare flourished. Greeks were not perfect, they regarded women as a lower form of civilisation, but they certainly glorified the warfare.

---

<sup>187</sup> Evan Luard Edited, *The International Regulations of Frontier Dispute* {Thames, London, 1970} p-16.

Divine religions brought the ideological concept of violence among the mankind, the laws of god were the final and nothing can alter them. Hypothesis and theories thus revolved around the divinity, the ontological argument were put forward in the defence of divinity.

The renaissance period brought the change, Newton, Galileo were the architect who formulated the laws of nature. This in turn , stimulated the historians to make the study of human on scientific lines. Karl Marx gave the theory of economics as the main cause of violence among the societies, equally refuted by Adam Smith. The theory of, evolution of human on the same pattern as that of animals was floated by the Darwin.

Discovery of America is a revolution in sociology, a new continent was a research model. The evolution of civilisation hence based upon hypothesis was now given an opportunity to validate the existing theories. Human from Europe came in; there were native Indian tribes, the interaction between them, the inclusion of black slaves from Africa as variable, all together added new theories to sociology. The man has not changed much in the millenniums; blacks were not treated at par with whites, thus racial superiority theory. Violence was still on the basis of religion even in the new continent the Salem witch hunt is one example. The racial superiority theory was also propagated by Adolf Hitler in 20<sup>th</sup> century.

Bulk of present day theories of international affairs takes roots in the aftermath of 1914-1918 War, the inherent weakness and flaw in the theories of idealism was soon exposed by the 1939-1945 War. Man touched new heights of barbarism, as an individual he became an non entity in the modern concept of state . Japanese surrendered

after the dropping of two atomic bombs , because they had the logic of expecting the third bomb as well.

Progress of human civilisation is not uniform, all through the history , there are groups and areas which remained unaffected with the development both in science and sociology. These isolated civilisation, in Africa and in Asia although accepted the modernisation but reluctant to accept the westernisation. Civilisation in terms of urban, rural, industrial, agriculture, and above all western and non-western emerged. The violence was now aligned on fault lines of this civilisation.

Freedom of expression, human rights, free trade, democracy, judiciary, women rights, are some of the hypothesis and theories which govern modern state and civilisation, and these are being enforced by the western thoughts. The collective result is that laws of god have been put aside, adultery in the form of pornography is accepted as a form of art, prostitution is an act of individual and states are taking steps to protect and promote it. Judiciary in America legalised the slavery and also patronised pornography. Blacks as human were not allowed to share the same toilet with whites in America as late as 1970, man ( king) was not allowed to marry a divorced woman in England in 1936.

Theories are in most cases mathematical representation, where figures proves the hypothesis. Take example of Douhet Theory of Air War, he with help of figures convinced the world that through systematic aerial bombing it is possible to annihilate the towns and cities. The allied bombing campaign in WWII was on the same lines but it failed to exterminate the will of Germans. Thus human will, character, is as such that nothing can be predicted with certainty. There are no theories, only hypothesis in our present social system.

*Theory , hypothesis are Greek legacy and were meant for philosophical interpretation. Both terms are used in science, thus the overlapping of understanding. In science the hypothesis generates theories which in turn form the foundation of laws. Social science in an attempt to be scientific is also adhering to the same pattern, but humans are unpredictable, their actions and reactions are dependent upon variables like geography, history and biology. History is thus the basis of social science and repetitions of history forms the logical basis of human behaviour and its interpretation. Western civilisation is now synonym with Christianity and America, it tends to force its values upon the other non-modern, non-western and non-Christian societies, therefore clashes and violence occurs. Methodology of research in tribal areas of Pakistan differs in each political agency, Militia provides the research model by virtue of its manpower and scientific data base. As geography has remained almost identical in last hundred years thus it is possible to reconstruct the history. Hospitals, schools, are source of data. Relativism and anti-naturalistic approach has been adopted*



# Theory and Philosophy, Clash of Civilisation

## Episteme

International Relations is clearly not a subject in the ordinary sense of the word, it does not provide a single coherent body of teaching material, it is not single subject but a bundle of subjects, law, history, economics, political science and geography<sup>188</sup>.

The quest of human to know themselves is as old as the history of mankind itself, even the creation of earth is by itself a classic research model created by the god, in which he took six days to create the earth , and rested on seventh day. God created light, water, plants, day and night, sun and moon , animals, in short god created a research model. From the research model clay , god created Adam {man} and from his ribs created Eve {woman} , both were placed inside the garden of Eden , with a restriction that Adam can do anything less eating from one specific tree. Both were naked yet not ashamed of each other, god also highlighted that in future man will be more attached to his wife rather than to his parents. Eve was instigated by the snake in disobeying the commandment of god, ‘ this fruit will give you wisdom’ in turn Eve persuaded Adam to eat the forbidden fruit, which Adam despite the instructions did and later as a result realised that he is naked and as such wrapped himself with figs leaves. God came to know about this violation of his instructions and resultantly both were thrown out of heaven<sup>lxxiv</sup>.

Adam and Eve later conceived children named Cain and Abel, whereas Abel was looking after the sheep , Abel started ploughing fields, both later presented the products of their to god, who accepted

---

188 Palmer N.D. , H.C. Perkins *International Affairs, The World community in Transition*, second edition, London, Steven, 1957,p-xii.

the gifts of Abel but refused Kane's ; in frustration and depression Kane , killed his brother . In retaliation god expelled Kane from the place, and with this our history of mankind starts.

From present sociology perspective, the point of interest is why Adam listened to the reasoning of Eve when he had been categorically forbidden by the god to abstain from the specific fruit, Why god, forbidden the fruit in first instance is another point of interest, killing of Abel by the Cain was instigated by the refusal of god to accept the gifts of Cain whereas god accepted the gifts of Abel, thus killing and murder of Abel had the causal element in the very refusal of god himself. Sociology<sup>lxxv</sup> deals with the humans and social research is the interaction between the ideas and evidence. In the aforementioned gospel, there is no evidence which can prove the narrative yet half of present day world population believes on it<sup>lxxvi</sup>. Thus sociology deals with such abstract ideas and the attempts to bring the evidence to proof what is written or communicated is true. Interaction the core datum of sociology is the tangible influence which one party exerts over the other<sup>lxxvii</sup>.

Till 400 BC; the children of god known as the Israelis or Jews had a history of their own, where they multiplied and wandered around their birth place in the form of tribes. Greek city states emerged in the period and it was here that the basic structures and foundations of social research were laid first by Aristotle<sup>lxxviii</sup>. Aristotle and his Lyceum gave birth to Logic, to arithmetic, philosophy and language.

Theory and philosophy ontologically are overlapping , both are ancient words dating back to Greece 400 BC, theory<sup>lxxix</sup> literally meant a plot of a novel, it also had a different connotation when Aristotle writes ‘ I theorise’ , where as it stands for a well thought ‘

idea' and this leads to philosophy, as idea is expressed philosophically as the same as theory but only it is taken as something which has no precedence whereas theory is based upon an event which has taken place..[14]

*As we go to the Olympian festival for the sake of the spectacle (θεᾶς), even if nothing more should come of it – for the theoria (θεωρία) itself is more precious than money; and just as we go to theorize (θεωροῦμεν) at the festival of Dionysus not so that we will gain anything from the actors (indeed we pay to see them) ... so too the theoria (θεωρία) of the universe must be honoured above all things that are considered to be useful. For surely we would not go to such trouble to see men imitating women and slaves, or athletes fighting and running, and not consider it right to theorize without payment (θεωρεῖν ἀμισθί) the nature and truth of reality.*

Thus Theoria is the contemplation of the idea which may come by observation or by being mere spectator, in modern day Cricket which is played in one quarter of the world population is a classic sport, it is played for well over five days in natural environments over an open field by no less than twenty two odd men, wearing the similar attire and rules well defined, since 1876. Aim of the both rival team is to win, and it is this action of men with different thoughts which provides ideal setting for 'Theoria' as why so far in last hundred years no man has been able hit the wicket with every ball he bowls and this Theorising leads to Prax, which is Practical. Thus for Aristotle it was contemplation. Philosophy *philosophia*, literally "love of wisdom"<sup>lxxx</sup> and over a period of time it has been

ontologically changed into speculation where as epistemologically it remains the same, the quest for knowledge.

The main occupation of the man which distinguish him from a brute is this reasoning as , how all this happen, Greeks have no reference to the Judea in their philosophy, the had their own creation narrative revolving around gods of love, hate, war. Gods which had emotions, who intermingle and depict human emotions, where as in Judaism it is the single god , one major difference among these two civilisations was the social taboos which they have created like eating of pig meat<sup>lxxxix</sup> , issue of adultery to name few , the Ten Commandments became the philosophy,

*I am Yahweh your God, who brought you up out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. You shall have no other gods before me. You shall not make for yourselves an idol, nor any image of anything that is in the heavens above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: you shall not bow yourself down to them, nor serve them, for I, Yahweh your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers on the children, on the third and on the fourth generation of those who hate me, and showing loving kindness to thousands of those who love me and keep my commandments.*

In Greek civilisation the cardinal principles are being debated and public as a society is being governed, there were over 150 constitutions in vogue, in which freedom of slaves was to the extent that ‘they do not give way’ was felt by Aristotle, a society created with no emotional attachment with children and rearing them specifically for the war was theorise by Socrates and ridiculed by Aristotle.

## **Philosophy, Theory and Logic; 500 BC-2000AD.**

Word theory is derived from the Greek word 'to look at' 'to watch'<sup>189</sup> By 500 BC the social institutions have also developed with the passage of time, the concept of marriage, fidelity, death, distribution of property after death among children and wives are few of the social values which if not abided properly can end in termination of the very life on this very earth.<sup>190</sup> Life is the most important and fundamental aspect of this whole complexity of existence, as long as the breath is flowing the person is better than the one who is not breathing at all and is termed as dead and this word dead, is the cornerstone, death means the body is beyond the realm of this universe and living people have no certainty about the events that will take place after death, thus our focus is on living and not on what will take place after death . The very first and perhaps the lone law which man derived was the 'that all living beings have to die sooner or later, there is no exception, neither wealth nor status can defy death, by itself, death will take place after a specified time or it can occur any moment without any pattern'. This hard reality and the randomization, without any warning, with no mercy, no rationality , makes the matter of life and death as the central strand of Social Theory. In this time of history, Structures have been created with precise details and rituals, where a wrong word or a misappropriate gesture at the ceremony may ruined the entire process, such were the Egyptian religious structur, where apart from the Pharaoh the priest was placed at the highest altar of civilization. Same was the case in Indus Valley where Brahmin had placed himself at the same level in which his counterpart was having in Nile .

---

189 Abdul A Said ed, *Theory of international Relations, the Crisi of relevance* {parentehall, NJ, 1968, p-43.

190 The number of people killed over property and women , give data reference. In Pakistan.

Logic is the art of reasoning, it is something which is abstract and mind accepts it a priori, as ‘all man are mortal, Socrates is a man so Socrates is mortal’<sup>lxxxiii</sup> or putting it mathematically, if  $A = B$ , and  $B = C$ , then  $A = C$ . Logic is strongly based upon the history and here history means personal history, which a child has built up from his inception, thus for man brought up in North Waziristan and other in London, the killing of lover over adultery will have different logical outputs. Our computing system is based Logic and this is the major drawback of sociology based upon computing logic, as in it the cultural values which so strongly affects the logic does not play the decisive factor.

## **Republic and Politica.**

Greek Civilisation is the base of Western philosophy and men like Socrates, Plato and Aristotle have played a key role in the defining of philosophy, politics and logic. From a Constructivist perspective, the Greek philosophy was meant for the Greek and not for the others or the slaves, it was a male chauvinist theory of the social life, yet the very basic theoretical framework for the very concept of state was fermented in Greece.

Aristotle wrote, ‘All men by nature desire to know’<sup>lxxxiii</sup>, from memory, experience is produced ...and experience seems pretty much like science and art, but really science and art comes to men through experience...since we are seeking this knowledge we must inquire of what kind are the causes and the principles...evidently, we have to acquire knowledge of the original causes and causes are spoken in four senses<sup>lxxxiv</sup>. Aristotle further stated that ‘investigation of truth in one way hard, in another easy, an indication of this is found in the fact that no one is able to attain the truth adequately’.<sup>lxxxv</sup> In

another masterpiece of work *Politica*<sup>lxxxvi</sup> Aristotle highlights the definition and structure of state and gave the examples of Sparta, Crete and Carthage, he also classified the constitutions especially between the Democracy and Oligarchy, Revolutions and its causes in general and in a particular among particular states and how it can be avoided and later he presented his ideal state, including the education system in Ideal state, he favoured Gymnastics and Music as the main subjects. Thus it can be seen that almost all of our present day research and theories are one way or the other related or taking their foundations from the Greek especially the Aristotle. To him every state was a community of some kind with a view to have some good. To Aristotle it was essential to break the compound of state and study its elements or least parts of the whole. An interesting factor was highlighted by Aristotle when he stated that among the barbarians there is no distinction made between the slaves and females. The concept of family is the fundamental in the Aristotle's philosophy. He highlights the concept of state as being founded on a family<sup>lxxxvii</sup>, families forming villages and villages becoming states. An ideal village is thus the one in which all families {children and grand children} are said to be 'suckled with the same milk'. Every family is ruled by the eldest 'each one gives law to his children and to his wives'<sup>lxxxviii</sup>. State was a end, a blessing of nature, when several villages get united in a single complete community, ...state comes into existence...therefore state is a creation of nature and that man by nature is a political animal and he who by nature and not by mere accident is without a state, is either a bad man or above humanity: he is like the 'tribeless, lawless, heartless one.'<sup>lxxxix</sup> And Homer denounces the natural outcast is forthwith a lover of war.

Aristotle stated the structure of the family, in which three distinct relationships exist structurally, the master-slave, husband-wife and

lastly, father-children. To him, there were certain human who were born to be slaves and some were born to rule. On the subject of male-female relationship, Aristotle considered male as superior to female, tame animal is better off when ruled by the male, soul over body and rationality over the passion, inferior race must serve the superior, and this , Aristotle termed as Principle of Necessity.<sup>xc</sup> Long before Karl Marx, Aristotle highlighted and presented his Theory of Wealth-Getting. To him, wealth getting from the fruits and animals was a natural but breeding of money through usury ‘ the most hated sort...which makes a gain out of money itself and not from the natural object of it.’<sup>xcii</sup>

In Aristotle theory, either within a state every member has all thing, all have nothing in common or somethings in common and some not. In this , the concept of Socrates as in Plato’s republic, where citizens might conceivably have wives and children and property in common.<sup>xciii</sup> ‘ which is better our present condition or the proposed new order of society ? asked Socrates. As a commentary, Aristotle highlights that it is impracticable and further as it is not available in precise manner thus it cannot be interpreted. Another key point raised by Aristotle is that state is not only comprised of men but they all are different kinds.

Plato’s<sup>xciii</sup> Republic have a special place in the overall development of western and later global political and philosophical spheres. Plato put forward the theories of education in which he stressed that that the guardians should be free from all other work and merely concentrate on the education of the young. In a way, Plato raises the theory of Martial and moral generation , basing upon the hypothesis that ‘sex should take place only among the men and women of equal and good moral values and less between couple



of inferior stamp; where as the offspring of first couple be raised the later should be left to the nature<sup>xciiv</sup>, Plato in his theory further highlights and stress that the idea; age for a woman is twenty and for man is thirty to breed the children. In an another theory, Plato brings forward the concept that political power within the community depends upon the possession of wealth.

### **Indus Valley a Militant Civilisation**

The India's natural frontiers are well defined by the nature, in the **north** it is bounded by the Himalayas which run like a spinal cord from west to the east separating it from the China, the average elevation is almost 17500 feet and breadth is almost 150 miles, the world's highest mountain Mount Everest is located here and so are another ten peaks all above eight thousand meters, the eastern most such highest peak is Nanga Parbat. The Himalayas joins the Karakorum and Hindu Kush mountain ranges near Gilgit. Hindu Kush<sup>191</sup> mountains and its subsidiaries like Sulaiman mountains separates Indus valley from the Iranian plateau which stretches almost from its base in the south to the extreme north and then this plateau runs towards the west descending down towards the Mesopotamian civilization, also in north west the Himalayas are separated by river Indus from the Karakorum and Hindu Kush mountain region,

Apart from Indus there are over a dozen of rivers which take birth in Himalayas the abode of snow, the first one after is Jhelum followed by Chenab, Ravi, Sutlej, Beas, Jumna and Ganges, these big rivers are joined by a number of tributaries, however there is one mark difference among them apart from the Jumna and the Ganges

---

191 Hindu Kush name was adopted in 5<sup>th</sup> century A.D `due to the fact that many Hindu slaves died in crossing it. Greek called it Kaukasus

all the other rivers flow in a north-South direction and joins the Indus where as the **Jumna** and **Ganges** flow in a west-east direction.

Thus the valley , area whose water {River Gilgit, Chitral, Kabul, Swat , Kurram, Tochi, and Zhob River joins with the Indus River are thus part of Indus Valley and collectively makes it as Indus Civilisation, each valley having its own culture. It is in nature of society to march either upstream or downstream with the flow of water, in iNdus Valley as the upstream weather is cold and harsh thus the climate compelled the migration and movement towards the downstream; it later evolved into seasonal migration

Evoloution of civilisation progressed on the basis of certain natural facts, first and foremost being the availability of fresh water as life's survival and progress without water have impact on the social theory.

The Greek civilisation and philosophy had its impact on the Indus valley as for over three hundred years the Greek ruled and governed the Indus valley, it all started with Alexander the Great's campaign in India 323 BC; Men like Alexander the Great , Firuz of Persia and Poros of Punjab, all three have generated theories with their action , thus theory not necessarily has to be in a mathematical or philosophical language but with action it can be expressed. Alexander at a young age set out to conquer the known world and to restore the Balance of Power with the Persia. In the process the very first military campaign spanning over four civilisation was initiated and the fact that numerical inferior Greeks were bale to destroy and penetrate as far as Libya gave birth to the military theory where numbers does not matter in the outcome of a battle or campaign. Firuz the Persian Emperor instead of fighting in the

battlefield opted to escape and was chased by Alexander , Firuz was assassinated before he was captured. It is the Alexander's campaign in Indus Valley which gives birth to the theory of ***Indus Valley being a Militant Valley***. In theories which are generated from the history the important thing is the repetition of the event in any form, Indus Valley had earlier reacted in similar manner when the Persian was considered lucky to survive with seven odd men, thus a repetition. Alexander was offered stiff resistance by almost all major towns of Indus valley including Swat, Balaour, Jhelum, Multan, Thatta and Mekran, sole exception being the Taxila whose ruler had in fact invited the Alexander and offered him an easy crossing over Indus.

Indus Civilization definitely infused the segments of the Greek civilization and culture as Greek remained in power for another three odd centuries. ***Theory of Non Violence*** was given by the Emperor Asoka, both by words and practical, this is the very first such social theory in the mankind history, whereas Greek had advocated the seclusion of the children for making them warrior, Asoka denounced violence as itself. Asoka was a sociologist in the fact that he saw the impact of violence which is generated in order to conquer the territory thereby consolidating the crown and power, yet this violence brings an overall misery in life of poor. Asoka erected pillars engraved with the laws and ideas. Thus two main philosophies emerged in Indus Valley, one following the nonviolence , it centered along Ganges and other being militant was in vogue in Indus Valley, ; over millenniums these two cardinal way of life have retained their identity in the sub-continent with India adopting the nonviolence and Pakistan having militancy culture.

## Military Civilisation

The civilisations mentioned by Huntington and before him by Arnold Toynbee are based upon the geography, the very first institution which mankind evolved has to be either religion or military; it is no surprise in many passages of history, to find the both in one entity. The Egyptians had the Pharaohs and equivalent religious personalities.

The Egyptian religious traditions that has been deciphered from their seals highlights that they had a high priest who was responsible for all the ceremonies for the reason being that the ruling princes were too busy with the stage craft to have time to carry out these ceremonies to the perfection otherwise it was the princes in whom the divinity was placed, the chief priest was called Uribe and he would insist on the human cleanliness by washing. Each act of sacrifice contained an accompanying number of words whose sequence and harmony must be adhered

*‘one false note a single discord between the succession of gestures and the utterance of the sacramental words, any hesitation, any awkwardness in the accomplishment of the rite and sacrifice was vain’*<sup>192</sup>

Thus a breed of professional priests emerged whose main task was to carry out these duties on behalf of the ruling class, the gods of Egypt were numerous they were rather a nation of gods they had gods for every part of their life, sun was a living god, their religious belief was based upon the idea that heat of sun fermented the soil of the Nile and from thee the creatures were born. There was a class

---

192 IssacCoryAncientFragmentsofthePhoenicians,chaldeans,Egyptians,Persians,Indians and other writers, {Pickering,London,1832} pp-31-34,p-124

system in Egypt, The priests were exempted from the military duty and also from certain taxes, they lived on the sacrificial meat and the milk offered by the commoners, they would carry out prediction for the rulers.

Strategic culture is a relatively new term and was first used in 70's to describe how nations react in different ways particularly highlighting response to war<sup>193</sup>. A strategic military culture is thus defined as an 'collective response of a nation to its security basing upon its geography, economy, demography, history, social culture, political values, ideology ,industrial strength and composition of armed forces'<sup>194</sup>.

Concept of military is synonym with concept of security, among Aryans, only Shastriya class was inducted into military which ranked second in protocol after the Brahmin or the religious class, the business and teaching class followed the Shastriyas , it was the lowest class the Shudars which were not allowed to be enrolled in military. On a different note, the shudars were part of the military as they were the only class which was destined to carry out the menial work, thus the disposal of dead animals and their waste, human waste disposal was another unavoidable work which no shastar would perform for the community thus these shudars were in army but not enrolled as soldier.

The concept of soldier or a warrior is thus engraved in civilisation and no civilisation is complete without the glory of its military, civilisations have progressed, developed and expanded on the strength of their military. Persian civilisation capitulated to the Greek civilisation not because of Aristotle, Plato or Socrates

---

193 Lawrence Sondhaus, *Strategic Culture and Ways of War* {New York;Routledge,2006}, p. 1.

194 Ibid,p.5.

philosophy but by the Alexander's military in the battle field of Guademaal in 330 BC. Greek military later reached the banks of Oxus and then came down to Indua and finally met the last of Aryan civilisation at Hydappases , when Alexander defeated Porus on the east bank of the now River Jhelum

### **Clash of Religions; a Historical Fact**

Judaism have its roots in Jerusalem {present day Israel and Palestine}, Christianity also have same attachment with the same place, it were Jews who were instrumental in the hanging of the Jesus Christ, on the ground of Jesus committing an act of blasphemy, and later when the Roman governor as per tradition put forward the names of prisoners including Jesus for clemency to the Jewish council ,they agitated and resultantly Jesus was hanged. From this point a religious enmity took its birth in which both religious adherents simply became enemy of each other, thus the *Theory of Religious Intolerance* took shape.. By the time Islam took its birth in the closeby geographical area {Mecca/ Medina}, the Roam empire had embraced the Christianity as the state religion , thus now it was a reverse of history whereas now Christians were secluding the Jews. It is apparent that for a religion to prosper it requires power and patronization of power, Judaism had the same in the past but having lost both they were relegated to second grade citizen. Islam did not had much of difference with the other two religion, theoretically it was a combination of both thus its followers had respect for the both scriptures and personalities. It was more than political events which drifted Islam away from the Judaism and brought it closer to Christianity. It was the expansion of the islam which brought the Roman Christian and Arab Muslims in the battlefield in which the Islam emerged victorious.

Period after the Greek civilization, with the advent of Christianity , soon concentrated onto the philosophical aspect of Christ Between 600-1600 AD, the world remained divided on the lines of religious intolerance, it was bi-polar world system on the lines of Islam and Christianity, spread and conversion of atheist was the chief purpose of the social life , common in both world. The religions also structurally divided into sect and apart from inter religion wars among Islam and Christianity in the form of Crusades , there was Thirty Years of War in Europe in 1600-1630 fought on the sectarian rights among the Christians. Islam was also divided into two major sects namely Shai and Sunni , which bled the whole religion into two major variables, Theory and philosophy simply became Theology.

Sociology was infact theology, it all changed with the Galileo, and Copernicus, Galileo challenged the existing theory of the world and came up with the theory of earth revolving around the sun. Newton's laws of physics , advancement in the field of biology all left the classic philosophy or sociology in backwater. It was Auguste Comte who came up with the idea and theory of organizing the social science on the model of the natural science with an aim to be as useful to the society as the natural science is , also to establish the sociology on scientific model by incorporating the standards of scientific model.

Alberto Gentili<sup>195</sup> an Italian, who had a doctor of law degree from Oxford {1552-1608}, wrote 'International Law as applied to War' raises the fundamental question of waging a war in the name of religion, in his opinion it {religion } should remain separate from war, same idea is promoted and believed by Aristotle who also kept war away from religion. Now both of these great philosophers have

---

195 Forsyth M.G.Kelns ed., *The Theory of international Affairs selected texts from Gentili to troitschke* , 1970,London, p-18

stated this in reference to their time. Gentilli wrote it during the height of religious war mind-set in Europe, when Thirty Years War had engulfed the Europe in religious fervour, Gentilli is refereeing to the Catholic –Protestant conflict. This view is ontological in perspective and restricted to that particular era.

**Hugo Grotius** a Dutch {1583-1645} was in favour of the war as the ultimate arbitration, he echoed the old values, the realist view, that it is not on the basis of the law, that men joins battle rather it is to enforce what they think is claim by the force of sword., Grotius exclaim ‘when I am in arms , am I to think of laws’<sup>196</sup> Grotius treated history with utmost respect , believing and stressing that it is important to understand the laws of nature.

The causes of war , in his opinion was mainly due to the instinct of self defence and that of property ‘ *you certainly are Romans ,who claim that your wars are so fortunate because they are just and pride yourself not so much on their outcome, in that you gain the victory as upon their beginnings, because you do not understand wars without causes*<sup>197</sup> .

Man by nature is timid and peaceful and at the least danger his first reaction is to flee, he only fights through the force of his habit and experience. Honour, interest, prejudice, and vengeance all those passions which make him brave. Danger and death are results of state of nature, there is no war between the man it is only between the states<sup>198</sup> wrote Jean-Jacques Rousseau {1712-1778}. Another philosophical view as expressed by Emmerich De Vattel {1714-1767} revolves around two principles, first one declares that

---

196 Ibid, p-. 62

197 Ibid,p-69

198 M.G. Forsyth edited, *The theory of International Affairs selected texts from Gentilli to Traitschke* {George Allen, London, 1970}, pp, 167-170.



‘regular war as regards its effects must be accounted just on both sides’ and second principles govern whatever is permitted to one because of the state of war is also permissible to the other <sup>199</sup>. There exists two **models of state hood**, one known as Machiavellian model in which the sole aim is to enhance the power of a state irrespective of morality the second is known as Stateman model in which due regard is given to the law, justice and fact that one course which affects the good of majority is the most suitable.<sup>200</sup>.

Those wars are unjust which have been undertaken without cause, and just war is the war which is waged against those who have committed sin against the nature<sup>201</sup>. To Grotius, history is useful in two ways, one it provides illustration and other of being judgemental. Emmerich De Vattel, a Swiss {1714-1767} author of ‘Laws of Nation, he is pioneer in introducing the much use term ‘balance of power’. Laws of Nation which the Romans called ‘Insgentium’, to them these were the laws taught by the nature to all animals including man. National Law to Romans ‘droitdes Gens” were established by the nations as in case of Romans it was emperor Justine, thus the supreme power or law making was in hands of the ruler. It was Hobbes who gave distinct thought to this Laws of nation, to him ‘Natural law for men,’ similarly ‘natural law for nations’ which implies that same punishments should be imposed on nations which are imposed on the man for violating the law.<sup>202</sup>.

---

199 M.G. Forsyth edited, *The theory of International Affairs selected texts from Gentilli to Traitschke* {George Allen, London, 1970}, p 110.

200 Stanely Hoffman, ed, *Contemporary Theory in International Relations* { Prentice, new Jersey, 1960} pp, 15-16

201 Ibid, p-73 {Hugo Grottius}.

202 M.G. Forsyth edited, *The theory of International Affairs selected texts from Gentilli to Traitschke* {George Allen, London, 1970}, p 110.

**Jean Jacques Rousseau** {1712-78} wrote in '*social contract*' his observations 'man is naturally peaceful and timid, at its least danger, his first action is to flee, he only fights through the force of his habit and experience. Honour, interest, prejudice, vengeance are those passions which makes him brave, danger and death are remote for him in state of nature'.<sup>203</sup> Rousseau, commented on war, 'there si no war between man, it only exist between states'.<sup>204</sup>

## History

History as a concept and term is a European perspective, a Greek creation. Like Epic poets the historians have been fascinated by the questions of origins, of first causes, which usually meant the founding of particular natural traditions....not from the start of dynasty but from the creation of the universe. The first law of history according to Cicero is to tell the truth and mix in nothing that was false like philosophy history concerned itself with questions of cause and effects, History is often regarded as form of memory, History has a pattern that could be explained<sup>xv</sup>.

---

203 Ibid, p-167

204 Ibid, p-170.

## Endnotes

- i Polybius *The Histories* translated by Robin Waterfield .{London: Oxford,2010.}
- ii Polybius in introduction pIX.
- iii Polybius,p.1
- iv James Breasted, *The Conquest of Civilisation*. Edited by Edith Ware, {NewYork: Literary Guild of America,1938},p.201.
- v Benedetto Croce, *History,its Theory and Practice*, trans. Douglas Ainslie. {NewYork:Russell,1960},p-12.
- vi FerdinandBraudel,. *On History* trans. Sarah Matthew . {University of Chicago,1980},p-64.
- vii GrahamWatts,. *The Learning of History* . {London : Routledge & Kegan,1972},p-41.
- viii Edward Carr . *What is History* ? {New York: Alfred Knopf, 1964},p.54.
- ix Kurt Raflaub, & Nathan Rosenstein, Ed. *War and Society in the ancient and Medieval World, Asia, the Mediterranean, Europe and Mesopotamia* { London: Centre for The Hellenic Studies, trustees for Harvard University,1999},p.9.
- x Bernhard Maier, *The Celts a History from the Earliest times to the Present*, trans Kevin Windle, Edinburgh: Edinburgh University,2000.
- xi Anne Ross, *Everyday life of the Pagan Celts*. {London: Putnam,1956},p.54.
- xii Webster Hutton, *Ancient Civilisation*, {Chicago, Heath,1931},p.29.
- xiii Webster Hunt,*Readings in Ancient History*{Boston, Heath,1913},p.147.
- xiv H.G.Wells *A short History of the World*{NewYork: Doubleday, 1971{1940},p.3
- xv Lester Stephen . *Probing the past a guide to the study of and teaching history*. {Boston: Allyn & Bacon. 1974},p.5.
- xvi Arnold Jhonson,. *The Historian and historical Evidence*{NewYork: Charles Scribner 1926},p.33.
- xvii Louis Gottschalk *Understanding History* {NewYork: Alfred Knopf,1969},p.10.
- xviii [http://xroads.virginia.edu/~HYPER/TURNER/ American Frontier](http://xroads.virginia.edu/~HYPER/TURNER/AmericanFrontier) , a thesis written by Ted Turner in 1890.
- xix [http://xroads.virginia.edu/~HYPER/TURNER/ American Frontier](http://xroads.virginia.edu/~HYPER/TURNER/AmericanFrontier) , a thesis written by Ted Turner in 1890.
- xx Micheal Bently,*Modern Historiography an Introduction* {London:Routledge,1999},pp,1-44.
- xxi Ibid,p-87.
- xxii Ranke, Leopold. ‘The Historians Task’ in *The Secrets of World History*

- selected writings on the art and science of History*, ed and trans, Roger Wines. {New York: Fordham University Press,1981},p
- xxiii Kojin Karatani. *History and Repetition* ,ed. Seiji M.Lippit {NewYork: Columbia University,2012}.
- xxiv **Karl Marx. *The Eighteenth Brumaire of Louis Bonaparte.Chapter 1,p-10*.<http://www.marx2mao.com/M&E/EBLB52.html>**
- xxv Karl Jaspers, *The Origins and Goal of History* ,{NewHaven: Yale University,1953},I.
- xxvi William Edward Harpole Lecky, *Historical and Political Essays* {NewYork:Freeport,1970{1908},pp,1-9.
- xxvii Alan Munslow, *A History of History* ,{London:Routledge,2012},pp.37-44.
- xxviii Lynn Hunt, *Writing History in Global Era* {NewYork: Norton,2014},p.2.
- xxix Ibid,p.14.
- xxx Lord Edward Acton, Review on the Thesis of Mr Buckle's History of Civilisation in England first published in *Rambler*1858 , *Essays in the Liberal Interpretation of History*, ed. William McNeill. {Chicago: University Press,1967}.
- xxxi C.V.Wedgewood. *The Sense of past, Thirteen Studies in the Theory and Practice of History* {NewYork: Collier,1960}.
- xxxii Marc Bloch *The Historian Craft*, translated. Peter Putnam.{NewYork: Alfred Knopf,1963}.
- xxxiii Herbert Fisher *Studies in History and Politics*{New York: Freeport,1967 {1920}.P-13. <https://archive.org/stream/studiesinhistory00fish#page/n5/mode/2up>
- xxxiv Hans Kohn, *Reflections on Modern History, The historian and human responsibility*{Toronto:Van Nostrand,1963}.
- xxxv Hegel George Wilhelm Friedrich. *The Philosophy of History* translated Sibree,J..{ New York, The Colonial Press, 1899. First Edition 1841},p-i.
- xxxvi Immanuel Kant {1724-1804} '*On History*' edited by Lewis White Beck, translated by Lewis White Beck and Robert Anchor and Emil L,Fackenheim {NewYork: Bobbs Merrill,1963}.
- xxxvii Karl Raimund Popper *The Poverty of Historicism* {London: Routledge & Kegan,1957}
- xxxviii Ibid,p-17.
- xxxix Ibid,pp.22-26
- xl Ibid,p.121.
- xli Richard Collingwood*The idea of History*{Oxford:1956}.p-137.
- xlii George Nathaniel Curzon, 1st Marquess Curzon of Kedleston was the

- Viceroy of India from 1899-1905 and later a secretary for foreign affairs between 1919-1924. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Secretary\\_of\\_State\\_for\\_Foreign\\_Affairs](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Secretary_of_State_for_Foreign_Affairs)
- xliii George Curzon , ‘Frontiers’ The Romanes Lectures , 1907 delivered on 2<sup>nd</sup> November 1907, *Oxford Lectures on History ,1904-1923, Ten Volumes in One* . Library Press,1924.The lecture series was founded by, and named after, the biologist George Romanes, and has been running since 1892. Over the years, many notable figures from the Arts and Sciences have been invited to speak. The lecture can be on any subject in science, art or literature, approved by the Vice-Chancellor of the University,a prestigious free public lecture given annually at the Sheldonian Theatre, Oxford, England.
  - xliv Ikram Ahmad Butt. *Lord Curzon and the Indian State 1899-1905*. University of London,1963.
  - xlvi In North Waziristan, since 1936, a military campaign was in operation, against Fakir of Ipi.
  - xlvi Payment to tribes for maintaining peace in respective tribal areas.
  - xlvi See F-112-GG/37-50, *Jinnah Papers, Pakistan Fangs of Birth, 15<sup>th</sup> August-30 September 1947, Volume V*, Culture Division, Government of Pakistan. ,pp,285-310
  - xlvi See letters serial F-112-GG/37-50, F-112-GG/22-31,,F-112-GG/16-8, *Jinnah Papers, Pakistan Fangs of Birth, 15<sup>th</sup> August-30 September 1947, Volume V*, Culture Division, Government of Pakistan. ,pp,285-310. *Jinnah Papers Pakistan Battling against Odds ,1<sup>st</sup> October-31<sup>st</sup> December 1947, Volume VI*.
  - xlix See serial F-112-GG/32-4, Minutes of Defence Minister’s meeting held at Circuit House Rawalpindi on 2<sup>nd</sup> October 1947. *Jinnah Papers Pakistan Battling against Odds ,1<sup>st</sup> October-31<sup>st</sup> December 1947, Volume VI*,pp,17-21
  - i Jinnah papers, Volume VI, PRO-PREM 8/558, Record of a conversation between H.L.Ismay and M.A.Jinnah on 3<sup>rd</sup> October 1947,pp,30-34.
  - li *Jinnah Papers , Pakistan Struggling for Survival,1<sup>st</sup> January -30<sup>th</sup> September 1948, Volume VII*. Culture Division, Government of Pakistan. F-216{III}-GG/166-8, & F-216{III}-GG/168-9 ; pp,426-433. Also see George Cunningham to M.A.Jinnah ,F-888/89-90 dated 7<sup>th</sup> May 1948, pp,530-536.
  - lii *Jinnah Papers*, Volume VII, 17<sup>th</sup> April 1948.
  - liii Constitution of Islamic Republic of Pakistan, Articles 246,247
  - liv The dictionary definition of ‘militia’ is a group of citizens who are organized or capable of providing paramilitary or policing service, namely: An army reserve composed of part-time soldiers (organized militia). A nation’s able-bodied citizens who can be called upon to defend it (unorganized militia). A non-government military force (private or public militia).

- lv Lieutenant General Sir Howley Goodenough and Lieutenant Colonel Cecil Dalton *The Army Book For The British Empire, a record of the development and present position of the military forces and their duties in peace and war*. London: printed for Her Majesty stationery office, 1898.
- lvi Lord Curzon was the Viceroy and Governor General of India 1899-1905, Thomas Raleigh *Lord Curzon in India, being a selection from his speeches as Viceroy and Governor General of India, 1898-1905*. {London: MacMillan, 1906}, pp, 415-432. Also see Ikram Ahmad Butt. *Lord Curzon and the Indian State 1899-1905*. University of London, 1963
- lvii *Jinnah Papers*, p-535.
- lviii Ibid,
- lix Ibid.
- lx Federal Levies Force Regulations, August 07, 2012.
- lxi For detail work on Militia see, Victoria Henshaw *Scotland and British Army 1700-1750* , unpublished thesis for Ph.D , {University of Birmingham, 2011}, p-214. Desmond Morton *Authority and Policy in the Canadian Militia 1874-1904*. Ph.D Thesis, University of London, 1968, p-19. Jonatahn David Hills *The Militia relationship with the regular army in the wars of 1812 with particular respect to the Militia of Ohio and New York*, Ph.D thesis, University of Sunderland, 2000.
- lxii <https://tribune.com.pk/story/1343825/federal-cabinet-approves-fata-reforms/>
- lxiii Sectarian hate among Sunni and Shias is the cardinal factor of violence in Kurram Agency and in FR Kohat.
- lxiv In 1988 and also in mid-nineties, minor and major operations were carried out in Khyber Agency, FR Peshawar, and in FR Kohat, by Ministry of Interior and Narcotics
- lxv FATA Education Atlas, 2011-2012, FATA Directorate.
- lxvi Article 246 and 247 of Constitution of Pakistan
- lxvii Eighteenth Amendment in constitution, Section 91.
- lxviii Majority of Wazir did not even fill the census forms in 1998, neither majority of their women have identity card, nor they vote, where as Daur are more law abiding and liberal. For more see Tochi Scouts reports on 1998 Census.
- lxix <http://202.83.164.29/safron/userfiles1/file/Report%20of%20the%20Committee%20on%20FATA%20Reforms%202016%20final.pdf> chapter 4 {f}, p-37.
- lxx Daur and Shinwari tribes are not enrolled in Frontier Corps.
- lxxi Government of Pakistan Report of the Committee on FATA Reforms 2016', pp, 1-3.
- lxxii In Swat, military launched Operation Rah-i-Haq in November 2007, again in July 2008 Rah-i-Haq II was launched, in January 2009, Rah-i-Haq III was conducted, Rah-i-Najat and Rah-i-Rast were also launched in 2009 in Swat.

- lxxiii Operation Black Thunderstorm was launched in Dir and Buner in 2009
- lxxiv Old Testament {Bible} Birth, I-25. Also known as The First Book of Moses Called Genesis.
- lxxv Sociology can be classified as general and special sociology, in general sociology includes biology and psychology, in special sociology, there are three sub division known as pure, applied and empirical sociology, for more see, Ferdinand Toennies, *On Sociology: Pure, Applied and Empirical, selected writings* , ed Werner Cahman and Rudolph Heberle { University of Chicago, 1961.
- lxxvi World population in 2011 was estimated as 7 billion with Pakistan ranked No 6 with 166 million population “*World Demographics Profile 2011*”. *Index Mundi*. Retrieved November 18, 2011. Almost 45% of world population believes in the theory of creation {Jews, Christians and Muslims} <http://redcresearch.ie/wp-content/uploads/2012/08/RED-C-press-release-Religion-and-Atheism-25-7-12.pdf>
- lxxvii Charles Loomis , Zona Loomis. *Modern Social Theories selected American Writers*. {NewYork:Nostrad, 1961},p-2.
- lxxviii Apart from Aristotle, Thales, Anamimenes, Diogenes, Hippasus, Heraclitus,Empedodocles, Anaxagoras are few of other Philosophers which Aristotle mentioned who contemplated the origin of the earth and its form. *Metaphysics*, p-696.
- lxxix The Greek *theoria* (θεωρία), from which the English word “theory” (and theatre) is derived, meant “contemplation, speculation, a looking at, things looked at”, from *theorein*(θεωρεῖν) “to consider, speculate, look at”, from *theoros* (θεωρός) “spectator”, from *thea* (θέα) “a view” + *horan* (ὁρᾶν) “to see”. [5] It expressed the state of being a spectator. Both Greek *θεωρία* and Latin *contemplatio* primarily meant looking at things, whether with the eyes or with the mind.[6] Oxford Dictionary of the Christian Church (Oxford University Press 2005 ISBN 978-0-19-280290-3), article *contemplation, contemplative life*. In modern times *theoria* is sometimes treated as distinct from the meaning given to it in Christianity, linking the word not with contemplation but with speculation. Boethius (c. 480–524 or 525) translated the Greek word *theoria* into Latin, not as *contemplatio* but as *speculatio*, and *theoria* is taken to mean speculative philosophy.[27] A distinction is made, more radical than in ancient philosophy, between *theoria* and *praxis*, theory and practice.[28]
- lxxx Strong’s Greek Dictionary 5385, <http://biblehub.com/greek/5385.htm>, “*Home : Oxford English Dictionary*”. *oed.com*. “*Online Etymology Dictionary*”. The definition of philosophy is: “1. orig., love of, or the search for, wisdom or knowledge 2. theory or logical analysis of the principles underlying conduct, thought, knowledge, and the nature of the universe”. *Webster’s New World Dictionary (Second College ed.)*. Anthony Quinton (1995). “The ethics of philosophical practice”. In T. Honderich, ed. *The Oxford Companion to Philosophy*. Oxford University Press.

p. 666. ISBN 978-0-19-866132-0. Philosophy is rationally critical thinking, of a more or less systematic kind about the general nature of the world (metaphysics or theory of existence), the justification of belief (epistemology or theory of knowledge), and the conduct of life (ethics or theory of value). Each of the three elements in this list has a non-philosophical counterpart, from which it is distinguished by its explicitly rational and critical way of proceeding and by its systematic nature. Everyone has some general conception of the nature of the world in which they live and of their place in it. Metaphysics replaces the unargued assumptions embodied in such a conception with a rational and organized body of beliefs about the world as a whole. Everyone has occasion to doubt and question beliefs, their own or those of others, with more or less success and without any theory of what they are doing. Epistemology seeks by argument to make explicit the rules of correct belief formation. Everyone governs their conduct by directing it to desired or valued ends. Ethics, or moral philosophy, in its most inclusive sense, seeks to articulate, in rationally systematic form, the rules or principles involved.

- lxxxix In the Genesis, there is incident where six children of a mother were burnt in oil and yet she refused to eat the pig meat. On adultery the punishment
- lxxxii For detail, see Aristotle Complete Works, *Logic*
- lxxxiii Aristotle, *Metaphysics, Book A {I}*, 980, p-689.
- lxxxiv The four causes which Aristotle highlighted are, Essence, for the 'Why' is reducible finally to the definition and ultimately 'why' is a cause and principle. Second, is the matter or substratum, third is the source of change and fourth is the cause opposed to change. *Metaphysics*, p-693.
- lxxxv Aristotle, *Metaphysics*, p-712.
- lxxxvi Translated by Benjamin Jowett.
- lxxxvii Charondas called them as 'companions of cupboard', family is the association established by nature for the supply of men's everyday wants. *Politica*, p-1128.
- lxxxviii Aristotle has attributed this quotation to Homer, also Plato has also cited the same in his *Laws, Politica*, p-1128.
- lxxxix *Politics*, p-1129.
- xc Aristotle, *Politics*, book 1 chapter 4, p-1132.
- xcii Aristotle, *Politica*, Book, I, Chapter 10., p-1141.
- xciii Plato. *Republic*. Translation Robin Waterfield. New York: Barnes & Noble, 1993. pp.423-462.
- xciv Plato {427-347 BC, born into wealthy family grew up during the Peloponnesian Wars, he was student of Socrates {469-399} who was executed on charges of corrupting the young.
- xcv Plato *Republic chapter VII, Women Children and Warfare*, pp159-173.
- xcvi Donald Kelly. *Faces of History, Historical inquiry from Herodotus to Herder*. {London: Yale university Press, 1998}, pp.8-21.